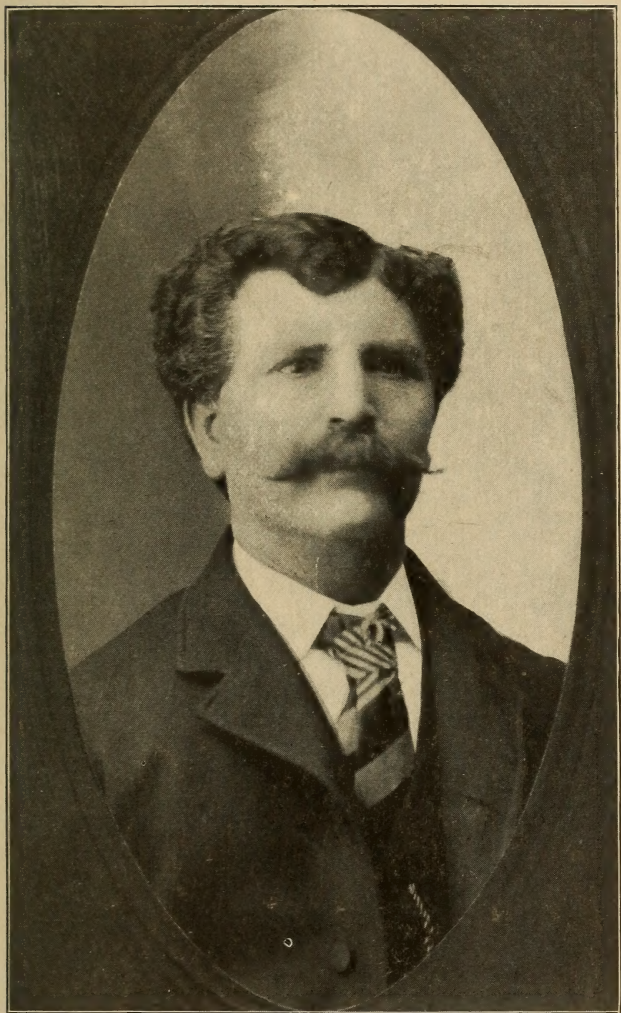


The Earth is enveloped in utter darkness, which corrupts the entire Humanity. It is caused by the terrible Infernal Mystery, which is guided by Brutal Evil. The Human spirits only can remove it and give freedom to Humanity, and lead it to being governed by Order and the highest Human Civilization.



THE AUTHOR

HUMANITY

AND

ITS FOUR VISIONS;
WITH THEIR DEVELOPMENTS

EXTRACTED FROM THE

ARK OF THE SCIENCE OF TRUTH FOR THE ADVANCEMENT OF THE
HUMAN RACE TOWARDS ORDER AND THE MOST PURE

CULTURE

GRAND UNIVERSAL DRAMA OF CIVILIZATION

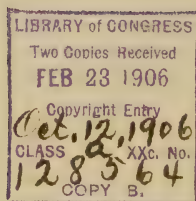
WITH ITS INTERMEZZO

BY

ALBERT G. GUZZARDO

1903

No. 2



Copyright 1905
by
ALBERT C. GUZZARDO

First Edition.

Illustrated by the same Author.

FRANK T. RILEY PUB. CO.
KANSAS CITY, MO.

PREFACE.

Although the time for its accomplishment may be very distant, nevertheless my thought is very near and in touch with the development of human society and its elevation to order and the most pure culture.

In presenting to the people of all classes, without any distinction of race, the *Four Visions of Humanity*, I am certain that they will find them not only interesting but also very instructive reading in the Science of Truth.

The laboring class particularly will never tire of its perusal; on the contrary, they will read and re-read it repeatedly and more carefully and attentively each time, in order the better to understand and to know well its most forcible points.

In their conversations with their companions of labor, who perhaps, unfortunately, do not know how to read or write, they will not fail to make all possible efforts in order to give them to understand the principal parts of the work and its scope.

THE AUTHOR,

ALBERTO C. GUZZARDO.

FIRST VISION.

I was sleeping a very profound sleep, when, as in a vision, I saw the entire sky covered with clouds, which seemed to foretell the advent of a very violent storm making ready to let itself loose upon the face of the earth. Every now and then flashes were lighting up the horizon.

It seemed to me it was day-time, but the earth was so covered with darkness that it looked like night. At a short distance from me, there was something that looked like a very large black blanket, and around it there were a quantity of small yellow globes, each one somewhat different from the other.

Suddenly there appeared a woman carrying in her hand a white banner that was floating in the air. She was stepping lightly and seemed to be cheerful and smiling. But when she arrived near those yellow globes she stopped, and raising her eyes to heaven, she exclaimed: "Oh! my God! What a treason! Woe is me! and all my children!" She had not yet finished uttering the last word, when, just in front of her, there was heard a great noise, like the bursting of a bomb; and, immediately I saw, coming from under the ground, a terrible monster, having a human form. He was tall, black as coal, with a red face; and he had three horns on his head; one in the middle, and the two others, above each ear, one on the right and one on the left. They were coming down to his chin in a kind of a twist.

Placing himself in front of the woman, he said: "Oh! *Humanity* at last you have fallen into my hands."

The woman replied: "Who are you?"

The monster answered: "I am *Brutal Evil*, son of *Fire* and *Ruin*; my wife is *Pride*; my daughter is *Inhuman Justice*." The woman said to him: "You and all of your race, are all infernal spirits who wish my destruction, and that of all my children; but you shall not succeed."

I was all fear, and I understood then that that woman was the *Symbol of Humanity*, and that the monster was one of the infernal spirits.

Brutal Evil then said to the woman: "You can no more escape out of my hands. You shall either give me your intelligence or I will tear your banner to pieces." The woman replied: "You shall not have my intelligence, and less of all shall you tear my banner to pieces."

Brutal Evil continued: "I shall wage war to the utmost against you, until at last, I shall have conquered you."

Humanity: "I do not understand what the word *War* means."

Brutal Evil: "*War* is a word invented at the school of *Tyranny*; and if you do not give me your intelligence, I am sure and certain that, by means of this word, which will be carried among your children, the latter will kill one another, without even giving any heed to it themselves. On the contrary, they will be proud of the honor of dying on the field of battle, and you—you will not be able to be of any help whatsoever to them."

Humanity: "Traitor! You shall not have my intelligence; nor shall you tear my banner to pieces. With it I am to establish *Order* and *Pure Culture* among my children, liberating them thus forever from you. You accursed infernal spirits!"

Brutal Evil: "You speak thus because you have not yet seen that which is before your eyes."



Humanity and its own White Flag.

And showing her, with his right hand, the little yellow globes which were all around, he said: "By means of my infernal science I have been able to go among your children. They have listened very attentively to the counsels I gave them. They considered them good because they thought them to be profitable to themselves, while on the contrary, they all tended to their destruction."

Humanity: "Tell me, pray, what are the counsels you gave them?"

Brutal Evil: "I told them that if they wished to work no longer, first of all, they were to give me their intelligence. If they wished me to reveal to them the secret of what they had to do, this was the only way for them to obtain it. At these words a great many of them went away; but a small portion of them remained and answered to my request by giving me their intelligence. And, although they are few, I am sure that the destruction of your children is most certain. I advised them that, from the minerals they had discovered and with which they had been making instruments and implements for the cultivation of the soil, they should now make arms and compel to work those who had not been willing to give me their intelligence. The product of this labor they should appropriate it to themselves, and let those who labored perish in wretchedness and misery. I have also told them to exterminate your daughter, *Human Justice*; and in exchange I would send them my own daughter, *Inhuman Justice*, who would be of great help to them in the work of appropriating the laborers out of their own. My daughter is to graduate in a short time from the school of *Tyranny*, where she is to receive her grand diploma at the hands of *Professor Cannon*. Consequently you are compelled to give me your intelligence."

And raising his hand he was trying to lay hold of the woman's shoulder. The woman with the aid of her flagstaff, did not let him approach her; but she stepped back until she found herself near to an old stone column. *Brutal Evil* cried out: "*Pride! Pride!* Quickly bring me a rope." Another great noise, again like unto the bursting of a formidable bomb was heard, and lo and behold! there appeared coming out from under the ground, a being in the shape of a woman, but much uglier still than *Brutal Evil*. She, like him, had also three horns, but somewhat shorter. Her face was red, and her dress was dazzling. Her garments were embroidered in such a way that it was difficult to recognize the cloth of which they were made. They were brilliant as if filled all over with diamonds. Her fingers were full of rings. She seemed to be the *Queen of the Infernal Spirits*.

As soon as *Brutal Evil* saw her, he said to her: "*Pride*, help me quickly in tying this woman. If we are victorious over her, we shall take possession of the face of the earth."

"*Pride* said to the monster: "Tell me, *Brutal Evil*, who is that woman?"

Brutal Evil answered: "Don't you see that she has no horns? It is *Humanity*, the most terrible of our enemies. She and her children still worship the *Supreme Being*. But I have already succeeded with one part of her children in making them worship our *Protector, Reptile Serpent*."

Pride ran, carrying a strong rope in her hands, approached the woman, and with the help of *Brutal Evil*, commenced, by holding each one end of the rope and making a thousand efforts to tie the woman to the column.

The woman, with the help of the flagstaff, prevented them from approaching her.

Brutal Evil seeing that it was impossible for him and his wife to fasten the woman to the column, said: "*Pride*, we need more help! Go quickly and call *Tyranny*, *Cruelty* and *Falsehood*. These are the most terrible of the infernal spirits."

Pride let go of the rope and, running, went to the place from whence she came. She beat the ground three times with her right foot, calling: "*Tyranny! Cruelty! Falsehood!*" The bursting noise as of a third bomb was heard, and suddenly there came out from under the ground three terrible infernal spirits.

Pride, no sooner had seen them before her than, without speaking, she made a profound inclination with her head to them. These three spirits in human form did the same thing; and, as soon as they had returned her the salute, *Pride* said to them: "*Brutal Evil* and I have made a thousand efforts to bind *Humanity* to that column, but we have not succeeded in doing so. Forward, then, and show us here your infernal strength; so that *Humanity* may soon be tied to the column." They came forward, all four like as many dogs going to the hunt. *Tyranny* and *Cruelty* took hold each of one end of the rope, while *Brutal Evil*, *Pride* and *Falsehood* were struggling with the woman, in order to make her stand near the column. *Humanity* was making all possible efforts to keep herself free; but *Tyranny* and *Cruelty* were turning around, from a distance, one on one side and the other on the opposite side of the column near to which *Humanity* was compelled to stand by these accursed infernal spirits. *Tyranny* and *Cruelty* were doing their utmost in order to get the rope to pass under the woman's arms. But *Humanity*, with the aid of the flagstaff, prevented them of doing so by

each time causing the rope to go up on one side and down on the other, and so her arms continued to remain free.

Tyranny and *Cruelty*, seeing that all their efforts were in vain, devised some other means. They went back of the column and pulled at the rope in order to get *Humanity* to bring her knees close against the column.

Brutal Evil also ran in the rear of the column and taking the rope from the hands of *Tyranny* and *Cruelty*, he made a knot in it. Then, crying aloud, he said: *Pride*, run down into the abyss and bring a long and heavy chain. *Pride* did as she was bid and a moment later returned carrying a heavy chain. *Tyranny* and *Cruelty* went to meet her and took hold of the chain which *Pride* was carrying. The one took one end of it and the other the other end and went to place themselves in front of *Humanity*, and commenced tying her arms and her body to the column.

Humanity, still having the banner in hand, was beating the chain down to the ground by means of the flagstaff. *Tyranny* and *Cruelty* raising up the chain went running around and so brought it up above *Humanity's* belt. *Brutal Evil* ran behind the column and made a knot in the chain, and so everything being finished, every one of them went immediately to place himself in front of *Humanity*. *Brutal Evil* was the first to speak, and said: "We are here, five of us, who are known by the whole of our race as the most terrible infernal spirits, yet, we have labored very hard in order to succeed in tying and chaining *Humanity* to the column. At last, we did succeed; but, while she is bound and in fetters, we cannot yet say that we have gained a victory; for *Humanity* has still her arms free."

Brutal Evil then came near *Humanity* and said

to her: "*Humanity*, are you convinced now; and are you willing to give me your intelligence?"

"*Humanity* answered calmly: "Go your way, Infernal Spirit, you are the worst demon that inhabits the abyss; neither now nor ever shall you obtain my intelligence."

Brutal Evil: "Well, you are tied and chained to the column; and from this day on shall commence the massacre of your children who will kill each other without pity or mercy; and so your destruction is certain. Now, I will take the intelligence of your children down into the abyss, and the more I shall trample them down, the more these, thy children, who are those intelligences, will become wicked and much worse than myself. They will be like unto the wild animals of the forest, never satiated of human blood, the blood of their own brothers. And, although they are as yet very few, they will be able to submit the hundreds of millions of your children, by means of their diabolical education."

Humanity: "Do not you know that treason always will revert and fall back upon the traitor? When you shall believe yourself triumphant in your infamy, your destruction shall be near at hand. Because you believe only in the accursed *Reptile Serpent*, while I and my children, we believe in the *Supreme God of Heaven*."

At these words *Brutal Evil* turning towards the yellow globes which were all around upon the ground, said: "Come, Intelligences that are mine! Let us go down into the abyss."

All those yellow globes began to move about, and in the twinkling of an eye, disappeared and vanished from the face of the earth into the abyss. One solitary red globe remained upon earth, and *Brutal Evil*, approaching it, said: "And you, why do you not come?" (The answer of that red intelli-

gence I did not hear, but after a while, *Brutal Evil* continued): "You wish to become the god of earth? I promise you that you shall be so; and I say to you that you may take of whatsoever material there may be at hand and give it different forms and make your brothers and sisters believe that these objects are as many gods. And if you and your brothers, whose intelligences are now down in the abyss, will believe in the *Reptile Serpent*, our *Supreme Spirit*, even those also who are living in misery and wretchedness will believe in the false gods; and the God of Heaven shall be excluded from among all of us, Infernal Spirits whom He has chased as rebels; and from among the human race which no longer will believe in Him."

At these last words, uttered by *Brutal Evil*, the woman tied and chained to the column, raising her eyes towards Heaven, cried out, saying: "Oh! Great God of Heaven! Have pity on my poor children." And turning her eyes towards *Brutal Evil*, she said to him: "Infamous, diabolical spirit, is it not enough that, on account of your false doctrines, you have been chased by God, you and all your followers, out of Heaven? Do you want, besides, to spread your doctrines among my children? We are human, and not, like you, inhuman infernal spirits."

While *Humanity* was speaking, *Pride*, *Tyranny*, *Cruelty* and *Falsehood* were laughing.

Brutal Evil and the red intelligence went down into the abyss. Now *Pride*, *Tyranny*, *Cruelty* and *Falsehood* commenced to dance a diabolical dance. It seemed to me they were dancing like bears. The music or sounds to which they were dancing came from under the ground. The tune was entirely different from our music. Noises like of chains were heard and violent beats like upon an immense bass drum, and every now and then a bursting of a huge

bomb. While dancing, each one of them would gyrate in front of *Humanity*, and shout in a very loud voice: "We shall be triumphant."

While this kind of a ball was going on, and getting more and more animated, and wild as their gyrations were increasing, the report of the bursting of a bomb, very much louder than all those that had preceded, was heard, and from under the ground there came another little infernal spirit of a monstrous shape. *Pride* ran up to it, and the others stopped dancing. When *Pride* reached near the little spirit, she made a little inclination with her head and asked the little newly-arrived monster: "Who are you?"

The latter answered, saying: "I am *Quarrel*, son of *Hurricane* and of *Tempest*. I here bring letters from the *School of Tyranny*."

At these words *Tyranny* approached and tapping the little monster on the shoulder, said: "You are a fine little infernal spirit; tell me, how are the students progressing?"

Quarrel answered: "Very well. *Brutal Evil's* daughter, *Inhuman Justice*, has taken the first diploma; and on this very day *Professor Cannon* is giving a grand feast in her honor."

Pride, filled with joy, exclaimed: "Fine girl, good daughter; before long she will be showing the signs that are to be used against the human race."

Quarrel was carrying a red purse, which was hanging from his neck; and seizing it, he took from it two letters, which he gave to *Pride*. These letters were in black envelopes, with the directions written with red ink. *Pride* quickly went towards the spot whence *Brutal Evil* had gone down, and stamped the ground with her right foot. Immediately the bursting of another bomb was heard; and suddenly out came *Brutal Evil*, and addressing his wife, said: "What do you want of me?" *Pride* answered:

“*Quarrel* has brought letters from the *School of Tyranny*. He is bearer of two letters addressed to you, and he says that our daughter, *Inhuman Justice*, has received from *Professor Cannon*, the first diploma. Moreover that the latter is giving this very day a grand feast in her honor.”

Brutal Evil took the two letters and approaching the woman tied and chained to the column, stopped, and calling, said: “*Tyranny, Cruelty, Falsehood, Quarrel*, approach and listen to what is going on in the *School of Tyranny*.”

And seizing one of the two letters, he tore it open and took out of its envelope a sheet of black paper, on which the writing was in red ink, and he read the following:

“Dear Friend:—I have the pleasure to inform you that your daughter, *Inhuman Justice*, has succeeded wonderfully. In all the many centuries that we have been here below no one has ever been able to explain so lucidly as she did the *Infernal Mystery*. In recompense for her great success, I have awarded her the first diploma. This is for us a day of great joy.

Your friend,
Professor Cannon.”

“Good girl, good daughter,” said *Brutal Evil*, “and we, let us, all of us, cry out: ‘Long live the Infernal Spirits! Long live *Inhuman Justice*!’”

Brutal Evil then added: “Wait awhile, *Quarrel*, let me go down into the abyss, and prepare an answer.”

And running to the spot whence he had come up, he went back down into the abyss. A moment later he returned carrying a sheet of black paper, on which there was writing in red ink, and he said: “We have nothing to conceal. *Humanity* is tied and chained to the column, and we may speak aloud.”

He then read the letter he had written, as follows:

“Very Dear Friend:—If you and the infernal spirits with you are celebrating today a feast in honor of my daughter, *Inhuman Justice*, we are here with hearts bursting with joy. With the aid of *Pride*, *Tyranny*, *Cruelty* and *Falsehood*, I have succeeded in tying and chaining *Humanity* to the column, and our triumph is assured.

Your friend,

Brutal Evil.”

He put the letter into an envelope and gave it to *Quarrel*, and said: “Go quickly, that my friend may rejoice on account of our bold behavior.” *Quarrel* took the letter and went off. *Humanity*, so wretchedly tied and chained to the column, said in a low voice: “Do whatever you please, but when your accursed measure shall be filled with your iniquity, the God of Heaven will untie my chains; and woe betide then your accursed infernal spirits and your supreme spirit, *Reptile Serpent*, in whom you believe.” *Brutal Evil*, in the meanwhile, had taken the second letter and tearing it open, he read:

“Dear Papa:—I have obtained the first diploma at the *School of Tyranny*, and they are showering great honors upon me today. This evening, I shall be in your midst, in our family circle.

Your daughter,

Inhuman Justice.”

Brutal Evil then said: “There is no doubt about it, that little girl of ours has made a fine show, and must be one of the best among the infernal spirits. I am going down into the abyss. You wait here, for, perhaps before long, my daughter will arrive. So saying, he left.

While *Brutal Evil* was on the point of going down into the abyss the bursting of a bomb was heard, and immediately there came out of the ground

an ugly and powerful infernal spirit seemingly of the female sex. All went running towards her, *Brutal Evil* with the others. *Pride* was the first one to reach her and they embraced. The others were tapping her on the shoulder for joy. *Brutal Evil* kissed her.

Inhuman Justice, for it was she, was carrying a big roll of paper in her right hand. She was dressed in a garment of several colors. Speaking to her father, she said: "Father, this is the most beautiful thing I could show you."

Brutal Evil took hold of the roll and having unrolled it, he read: "Diploma from the *School of Tyranny*. May it be known by all the infernal spirits that *Inhuman Justice*, daughter of *Brutal Evil*, has completed her studies in the *School of Tyranny*, and that she alone has been able to solve the *Infernal Mystery* concerning all that is required to bring into effect the destruction of the children of *Humanity*. —*Professor Cannon*."

Having read, *Brutal Evil* then said: "Now, here we are, and we will come out triumphant." And all cried out: "Long live the Infernal Spirits!"

Brutal Evil, addressing his daughter, said: "*Inhuman Justice*, you shall have to go upon the face of the earth to destroy the children of *Humanity*. You know, better than I, what is required and what you need to help you in order to accomplish a labor of such magnitude and so important to us, Infernal Spirits."

Inhuman Justice answered: "Father, I cannot go."

Brutal Evil: "Why?"

Inhuman Justice: "*Human Justice* dwells on earth, and I have read in the Seventh Book of the *Infernal Mystery*, at the *School of Tyranny*, where she says: 'I, *Human Justice*, do not punish any of my brothers and sisters, but when *Inhuman Justice*

shall fall into my hands I will have her burned alive, and I will have her parents chained forever. And I will send her ashes to them as a remembrance of their accursed daughter.' "

Brutal Evil then said to her: "But look there, daughter, and you shall convince yourself." And he pointed with his right hand towards *Humanity*.

Inhuman Justice: "Father, I see very well that *Humanity* is tied and chained to the column; but I see also that her arms are free. Who bound her in chains to the column?"

Brutal Evil: *Tyranny* and *Cruelty*, while I, myself, thy mother, *Pride*, assisted by *Falsehood*, were struggling with her."

Inhuman Justice: "You are all terrible spirits, indeed; and if *Tyranny* and *Cruelty* have not succeeded, it is too late for me to tie her arms now. If you had waited for me, I, alone, would have been able to tie her arms at the very first attempt."

Brutal Evil: "Well, tell us now what are the requisites you need in order to succeed in the destruction of the children of *Humanity*!"

Inhuman Justice: "I have told you already that I may not go upon the face of the earth. I dare not venture to run the risk of being burned by *Human Justice*. It is better for me to renounce the *Reptile Serpent* and not be reduced to ashes, inasmuch as mankind has always been good to our race."

Brutal Evil: "I know very well, and you do not know, what they say. They want to take possession of the whole earth and of all the wealth they produce."

Inhuman Justice: "Yes, but they do not say that they wish to chase us away from the face of the earth. We are infernal spirits, they are only human."

Brutal Evil: "Then what is the use of all your studies in the *School of Tyranny*? What is your diploma, or what are the books you have read about the *Infernal Mystery* worth, if you do not put them into practice?"

Inhuman Justice: "I would like to make use of them, but not so long as *Human Justice* is alive."

Brutal Evil: "You need not be any longer afraid of her; for, not long since, I trampled the Intelligences down into the abyss and they told me: Why do you not keep your promise? We need your daughter, *Inhuman Justice*, otherwise our brothers and sisters will not easily let themselves be expropriated of all that they produce. Our sister, *Human Justice*, we have not seen any more since the time you have thrown us down into the abyss; she certainly must have died."

Inhuman Justice: "I shall go very willingly, and I am sure that I will accomplish what is said in Book Thirteenth of the *Infernal Mystery*."

Brutal Evil: "Explain to me all what the Thirteenth Book says."

Inhuman Justice: "The Thirteenth Book says: Remember, Oh female infernal spirits, that in order to take possession of the earth you must first of all, bind and chain to a column *Humanity*; and at the same time as she is being bound and chained to the column, you must find all the implements necessary; and by means of diabolical principles, you must kill all the children of *Humanity*. When the face of the earth shall be entirely rid of them, *Humanity*, which was for a long time bound and chained to the column, shall have died; you will take her body and throw it down into the abyss; and thus shall you see the final end of the Human race, and the face of the earth shall be occupied by yourselves, Oh! Infernal Spirits!"

The lady tied and chained to the column raised up her eyes towards Heaven and exclaimed: "Woe is me! My poor children, they have projected our destruction!"

And crying louder still, she said: "Oh! great and Divine Spirit, God of Heaven, Creator of the Universe, in Thee alone do I believe; and if some of my children have forgotten themselves so far as to set their faith in false gods, and in the accursed *Reptile Serpent*, pardon them through Thy most infinite mercy; give me the strength to break loose from these accursed chains; re-establish my children into Thy only Holy Faith, into Fraternity among themselves under my banner of joy and of Human Civilization."

Inhuman Justice then said to *Brutal Evil*: "Father, I believe indeed that you know what are the implements which I need in this work of killing the children of *Humanity*; go quickly and get them."

Brutal Evil left in haste, went down into the abyss, and, after a few minutes, returned carrying in his arms the implements which his daughter had asked him.

Scarcely had he reached near the spot where his daughter was than *Tyranny* took hold of one of those implements, which was in the form of a chair, and she laid it upon the head of *Inhuman Justice*. *Cruelty* took hold of a little box, and put it on the back of *Inhuman Justice's* shoulders."

Brutal Evil laid all the other implements upon the ground, and taking a wire, he tied the chair to the little box. *Tyranny* then took a gun and gave it into the left hand of *Inhuman Justice*; and *Cruelty*, taking a sword put it in her right hand. *Brutal Evil* seized an iron mallet and laid it on her shoulder. *Cruelty* seized a poinard and hung it at her right side. *Tyranny* took a rope and put it in her mouth. *Brutal Evil* then took a bunch of flags and laid it on

top of the little box; and thus all the different implements that had been laid upon the ground were disposed of and carried by *Inhuman Justice*.

Brutal Evil then said: "*Inhuman Justice*, listen to my advice. Pay attention and be sure and punish all those you find to be innocent and set at liberty all those you find guilty."

Pride told her, I also recommend you to be sure and very careful not to do the contrary of what your father has just told you, if we wish to be triumphant.

Inhuman Justice said: "Father and mother, I shall be obedient to your advice and all that I have studied and learned will by me be put into practice, in order to succeed in as short a time as possible in destroying the children of *Humanity*."

Brutal Evil: "All right; explain to me in what way you are to use all these infernal implements."

Inhuman Justice: "Scarcely shall I have arrived upon the face of the earth, the first thing I will do will be to distribute the flags, which you have given me, to all those whose intelligence is already down into the abyss, having been cast down there by you and by the other infernal spirits. Of those I am sure that I will find some over the whole face of the world."

Brutal Evil: "Well and good! As you have answered me so well in regard to one of the principal labors you are entrusted with, I do not require that you should explain to me the use of the other implements. But I am sure that you, with your brilliant mind, would be kind enough to explain to me the thirteen books of the Infernal Mystery; only I would like to know whether you need any other implement besides what you are already carrying."

Inhuman Justice: "At present nothing; but when I shall have distributed the flags among those who have accepted your counsels, their wives will

wish to have a model to follow to be distinguished from their sisters and prove and make known that they are the wives of those who were the first ones to give you their intelligence."

Brutal Evil: "We cannot find a better model than your mother, because with her diabolical geometry, she has already been able to compel all the spirits to stay at their respective posts; and it was your mother also who gave out all the fashions to the outside world, for which she was greatly admired by all the infernal spirits, on account of the magnificent dresses and garments she wore; so much so, that, from being the ugliest of all, she became the finest among them, and has, therefore, from time immemorial, been called *Pride*, while her true name was *Destruction*."

Inhuman Justice answered: "I am pleased to have my mother among that class of womankind; for, I am certain that she will make them all foolishly extravagant, and that they never will be satisfied with the costly and magnificent garments they will be wearing."

Brutal Evil: "You do not know yet, my daughter, the advice I gave to all those who have given me their intelligence. I have told them that scarcely would my daughter have appeared on the face of the earth, I would send to them with her the infernal banners; they would then divide the earth into a certain number of portions as it seems best to them and pleases them the most. Each division to be governed by one of them and their symbol shall be an infernal banner and under such a symbol they should organize the government which will seem best to reach the aim most easily for despoiling and expropriating their brothers of all they produce. And, should the latter wish to rebel against the former, my daughter, *Inhuman Justice*, will bring you the

models with which to arm all those who will give me their intelligence; that I should always be in their heart, and they will have no pity or mercy whatever in killing their own brothers. I have also said that I would make a god of the earth of the fiercest intelligence; and in fact today, when I ordered the intelligences to go down into the abyss, a red one remained firm, and although she was a human intelligence, she seemed to me to be more of an infernal spirit than myself. I asked her: 'Why do you not come down into the abyss?' She answered: 'Before I go there we must make some new pacts.' I said: 'What do you want?' She replied: 'I want to be the god of the earth.' I said to her: 'In the name of the *Reptile-Serpent*, you shall be god of the earth; so I recommend you to take of whatever material you please and make gods of it. I have thought, my dear daughter, that among that class of children of *Humanity*, that shall associate themselves with that god of the earth, and which will be called ministers of God, it will be necessary to have *Falsehood* dwelling among them under a human mask, to which all of them shall have to swear an oath of allegiance.' "

Inhuman Justice: "Father, all what you have done is all right, but the rulers who will govern the different divisions of the earth, will also need to have *Tyranny* with them under a human mask; so that their hearts may be tyrannical and they will induce their children to be more tyrannical still than they themselves. They will have the ambition to be rulers themselves and will have their fathers or elder brothers killed, and thus you shall see that *Tyranny* will triumph on the face of the earth, before the children of *Humanity* shall be destroyed.

"Also those who in the future shall give you their intelligence will soon seek to associate with the rulers, in order to be protected and to belong to the

class of the expropriators and spoilers, and such a class will also be in need of the help of *Cruelty*; which by being among them will cause their hearts to become cruel and they will become possessors of all the products of the earth and of its abundance—not by their own labor, but all produced by the sweat and labor and toil of their brothers. They will have them rot on the ground, while their brothers will be kept starving with hunger rather than satiated; and naked and bare, rather than to be well dressed; barefooted rather than well shod; because *Cruelty* will be governing them. And I recommend you, that after my being three days among the children of *Humanity* upon the face of the earth, you shall have *Tyranny*, *Cruelty*, *Pride* and *Falsehood* come out and tell them not to be afraid but that *Inhuman Justice* will protect them.”

At these words all shouted in unison: “Hurrah for *Inhuman Justice*.”

Suddenly a noise like unto the bursting of a bomb was heard coming from under the ground, and I saw coming out of the earth a black standard on which was painted a *Reptile-Serpent* all spotted with green, with red cross eyes and red lips, the handle of the flag was surmounted by a red lance. He who was carrying the banner, was a tall and terrible monster; and there commenced to come out infernal spirits of all kinds, small and large, male and female. The males were all dressed in black; the females were wearing marvelously beautiful dresses, richly embroidered with gold coming down to their knees in front, and down to the ground in the back. Finally there came out another one carrying a placard on which were the words: ‘*School of Tyranny* and its students.’”

Brutal Evil went to shake hands with the one

that was carrying the standard, while all the others were inclining their heads as a sign of salutation.

The one who was carrying the flag said to *Brutal Evil*: "Where is *Humanity* tied and chained to the column?"

Brutal Evil showed him with his right hand where *Humanity* was. All went near her, stopping in front of the woman tied and chained to the column.

Brutal Evil, turning towards the one who was carrying the standard, said to him: "*Professor Cannon*, there is the woman whom we have fought for so long a time. I, in the presence of the infernal spirits and of our Supreme Infernal Spirit, am going to ask her a last request; as explained in the first book of our *Infernal Arcanum*."

And having approached near *Humanity*, he said to her: "In the presence of our Diabolical *Reptile-Serpent*, and of the students of the *School of Tyranny*, I ask you for the last time your intelligence."

Humanity, raising her eyes towards Heaven, said: "Oh! great and Supreme Divine Spirit, God of Heaven and of the whole Universe, give me strength to fight with my intelligence against all these accursed infernal spirits who are bent on my destruction, and on the ruin of my children."

Brutal Evil said to her: "*Humanity* be calm, do not hope in the God of Heaven, for he does not and will not come upon this earth, and should he come he would do nothing else but enclose himself within the abyss of his own will. And if you still insist in not giving me your intelligence, it is perhaps because I am not yet through explaining to you how the ruin and destruction of the human race of which you are the symbol shall come to pass. Look and see how my daughter, *Inhuman Justice*, is armed, and you shall be convinced."

Humanity: "I see that she is armed to the teeth, because you, accursed infernal spirits, have done nothing else but invent the most diabolical engines of destruction; having taken it into your heads that my daughter, *Human Justice*, is dead. I do not believe that our Divine Spirit, the God of Heaven, should have permitted such a thing to take place, for He is the Good Spirit, the Spirit of Mercy and of Love, and He enjoys to see us happy and faithful near Him. You are the accursed spirits who wish to see my destruction and the ruin of my children. It is you who have put a thousand obstacles in the way of my children, in order to have them starve with hunger. It is you who want to see my children naked and bare, lost in honor and respect, and cast out into the streets. It is you who wish to see my children thrown into prisons and jails. It is you who wish to see my poor children tortured and tormented by your infamous infernal irons and fetters. It is you who wish to see them killing one another under your infernal banners. It is you who wish my destruction and that of my children. No, no; it is not the God of Heaven. It is all your work, you infernal accursed spirits, who have introduced yourselves among men."

And with a loud cry, she exclaimed: "Daughter! Daughter! *Human Justice*, where are you? Come, come, come quickly; and if you are dead, come out of your tomb and chase away all these accursed infernal spirits from the face of our mother earth, and deliver me from this infamous column to which I am chained."

Brutal Evil: "It is no longer the time to shout and cry; but, indeed, it is time to think. Or you shall give me your intelligence, or I must conclude telling you how the destruction of your self and your children shall be accomplished. Know, then, that scarcely

shall my daughter, *Inhuman Justice*, have made her appearance upon the face of the earth, accompanied by *Tyranny*, *Cruelty*, *Falsehood* and *Pride*, than those of your children, who have already given me their intelligence, will divide the banners and the earth among themselves; and with the minerals they have discovered with which to create instruments for the cultivation of the soil, they will go to work and make arms and engines of destruction after the models and patterns which my daughter, *Inhuman Justice*, will show them. And they will arm themselves as you see that she is armed. And instead of tilling the soil and doing other works for production, they will commence working for destruction. Every one who shall have received a banner from my daughter will be the master of a portion of the earth, and with him will become associated in time all those who in future ages shall give me their intelligence. And this intelligence will be trodden and trampled down by me. And the chief will give to understand to all his brothers and sisters that his person is sacred, having even God under him, as chief of his part of the earth. He will also say that his banner is sacred and that those of his brothers who have sworn fealty to it, must let themselves be killed in its defense and never let it pass into the hands of the enemy. And your children so diabolically organized will be recognized very easily, for being found without any intelligence. From time to time, after the meaning of the word *War*, shall be known among your children, there will be struggles and fights between one portion and another without any motives whatsoever; and in such occasions our infernal banners shall be carried among them; they will kill one another without pity or mercy and the earth will be saturated and overflowed with human blood. And those who shall have the command and be at the head, after having

caused thousands of murders, will return victorious, and will wish to have their triumphs and to be signalized, not as assassins, but as heroes. And your children will erect monuments and statues to them, praising their bravery and their deeds of having had killed so many thousands of their own brothers.

Then all those who shall thus have had their intelligence trampled under feet by me into the abyss will get the foolish idea into their heads of wishing to forget that they ever were human. They will seek and invent words and expressions to have themselves distinguished from their brothers; and we shall send *Quarrel*, a brave infernal spirit, once a day from the god of the earth, carrying a note, which shall have been copied from out of our Infernal Arcanum; and as the god of earth is the greatest Counsellor of the Chiefs of the different portions of the earth, he shall commence to distribute the infernal titles, beginning with the coronation of Emperors, Kings, Princes, Dukes, Counts, Barons and Knights. And another class which shall be the support of the former will be called *Civil*. All these will be the ones who shall work towards the destruction and will take possession of the produce of the labor of all those who will not give me their intelligence, and which will form the formidable number of your children, who will be called by one name only: *Slaves*, or rather, *laborers*; because they have produced all the artificial riches of the earth.

Your laboring children shall see the day when they will come to understand that all the riches and the wealth have been produced by them and by their forerunners; and they will then believe that, naturally, the same belong to them, as it is the real truth. But all those who have it in their possession also think that it belongs to them, and they will be ready to defend their possessions at any cost and to the bit-

ter end, because they will be well armed and have formidable armies at their command, and there will always be some who will believe that they will come out victorious.

Your laboring children, tired of seeing themselves expropriated, will go to work and organize themselves in order to obtain what is theirs, and such organizations will extend over the whole surface of the earth. The spirit of race and nationality will be abolished and the expropriated ones will unite in a common cause in order to get what belongs to them. At such a time all the chiefs of the different portions of the earth will also organize to show and demonstrate their strength and forces; and despoiled and despoilers will be divided into two camps, ready to assail one another.

A false voice will be heard among your children; it will be called *Social Revolution*; while its true name should be *Unsocial Revolution*; because by means of this revolution, the earth shall become disunited, disassociated by the children of *Humanity*, and your symbol shall be thrown into the abyss forever and forever. And we will take possession of the face of the earth. So, then, have you made up your mind to give me your intelligence?"

Humanity: "No; but I would only like to know what would become of me and of my children, if I were to give you my intelligence?"

Brutal Evil: "Everything would be changed. I would burn your banner, and I with my race of infernal spirits would take possession of the face of the earth; and you with your children would remain our slaves forever."

Humanity: "Tell me, when you infernal spirits should be upon the face of the earth, what banner would you raise for yourselves, infernal spirits, and for us, human beings?"

Brutal Evil: "Our banner shall not change; it will always be black, with our infernal *Reptile-Serpent* in the centre. But for you, human beings, who are to be forever our slaves, you do not need any banner. The banner of the Humans is white, but where the infernal spirits inhabit no white banner can float."

Humanity: "Take yourself away, accursed infernal spirit, get from before my eyes. I curse you and your execrable Spirit *Reptile-Serpent*, and the whole of your race."

At these words, uttered by *Humanity*, they all shouted loudly:

"Death to the Human race!
Long live the Infernal Spirits!
Long live our *Reptile-Serpent*
Whom we worship!"

And immediately after this they set to singing the Song of the Departure of *Inhuman Justice* to the Earth. While they were dancing they jeered and mocked the poor woman tied and chained to the column.

The song was as follows:

"SONG OF DEPARTURE OF INHUMAN JUSTICE FOR
THE EARTH.

1. Inhuman Justice! go forth
 Upon the face of the earth;
 To Humanity's sons, war,
 Go thou, quickly to declare.
2. Go, raise the flag on high
 And get your host arrayed,
 Care not for moan or sigh
 But let them all be slayed.

3. With guns, cannons and swords,
Go forth! Make a carnage;
Slay and kill the vile hordes,
Infant, youth or old age.
4. With the fetters and chains,
On your back you carry;
Tie them all, spare no pains;
Go ahead, why tarry?
5. To lock up, use your keys;
And spare no one, I say.
Never be ill at ease,
But pack them all away.
6. In your teeth, there's a rope,
Use it with girl or boy;
With it, you have full scope,
Innocence to destroy.
7. That little box, also,
And that chair on your head;
A wire, a knot and lo!
The electric chair is made.
8. Now, you're able to kill,
Fool and intelligent;
E'en those whose head-strong will,
Otherwise couldn't be bent.
9. To th' abyss let's now hie,
To trample down the minds
And soon we shall come nigh
The aim of our designs.

Ha! Ha! Ha! Long live our Liberty!"

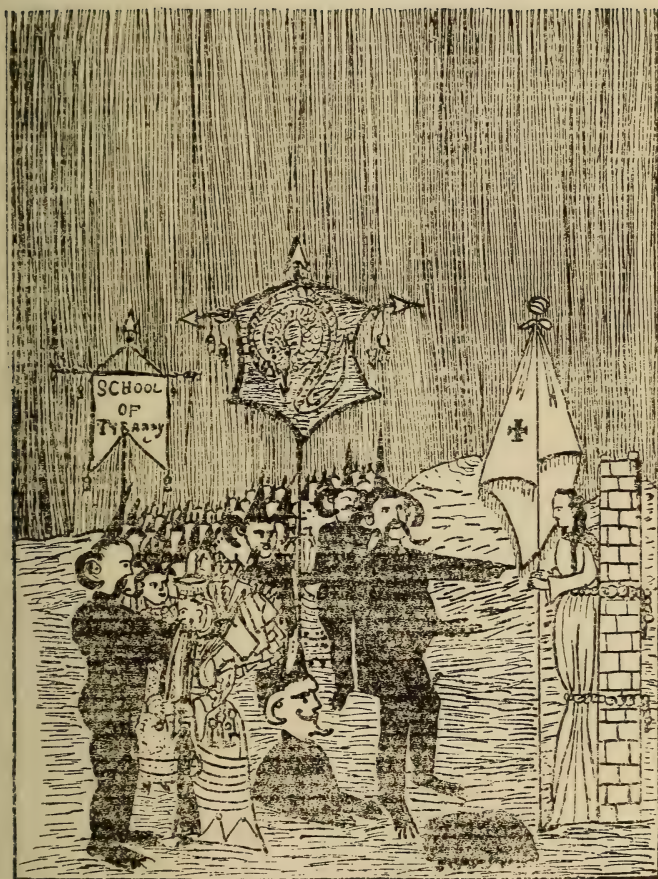
When the infernal spirits have finished singing and dancing, *Inhuman Justice* leaves; and all the other infernal spirits start to go down into the abyss.

Brutal Evil stopping and remaining standing, cries out: "Stop! All of you. I cannot let my daughter, *Inhuman Justice*, go upon the face of the earth if she is not accompanied by *Tyranny*, *Cruelty*, *Falsehood* and *Pride*. Although my daughter has said it was time enough three days after her departure, I am her father, and I think more than she does. And calling them all four, he said: "Go along and join my daughter, and united together go quickly to work destroying the children of *Humanity* in order that we may soon be the only possessors of the earth, and of all the wealth produced by them. (The four infernal spirits leave).

Humanity bound and chained to the column, crying in a loud voice, said: "Oh! you vile infernal spirits, after having spent a life in dancing and singing without ever having produced anything, you have only succeeded in constructing the infamous engines of destruction for the ruin of my children; and now you have the boldness to take possession of the earth, and of all the wealth my children have produced! You, infernal spirits, are heartless! You think of nothing but doing evil; but beware, my daughter, *Human Justice*, will make you pay dearly your mercilessness."

Brutal Evil: (Turning towards her with *Professor Cannon*) said: "Have you understood, my friend, although *Humanity* is chained to the column, she yet has the audacity to reprove and threaten us."

Professor Cannon: "I have understood, but *she* will pay dearly for her reproofs against us, infernal spirits. In a short time I will start for the face of



Infernal Plot to Destroy Humanity.

the earth, in the disguise of a human, and I will exhibit the most terrible discovery that has ever been made against the children of *Humanity*.. I will cause the most terrible destruction with my infernal instruments, the noise of which will be heard at an enormous distance; and will carry my name; when such an instrument shall be heard. And the children of *Humanity* will be killed by the thousands.

“For such a discovery I shall be rewarded by those who are the chiefs of the divisions of the earth; who never will be satisfied, and every year will double the number of these instruments; because by means of them, it will become much easier for them to bring about the expropriation and the dispossession of their brothers, the laborers.”

All the infernal spirits shouted: “Bravo! to *Professor Cannon*! Long live the infernal spirits! Long live *Inhuman Justice*! Death to the human beings!”

Then all went down into the abyss.

The storm had now grown worse and more terrible than ever, and the thunder and lightning were terrifying and ever increasing; and it seemed this infernal phenomenon was bent on the destruction of all the descendants of *Humanity*.

The woman who was chained to the column seemed downcast and dejected; and with a great effort, she cried aloud:

“My daughter, *Human Justice*, wheresoever you may be. Have you forgotten your poor mother? Are you dead, then? Do you not hold out any hope of deliverance to your mother?”

And faintingly letting herself go, she leaned her head upon the column, she was speaking to herself very slowly, but I could not understand what she was saying.

Of a sudden there came in sight a woman dressed in white, with blonde curly hair, hanging loose on all sides, letting only visible her face, which was of an extreme beauty. In her right hand she was carrying a sword, and in her left she was carrying a scale. When she had reached a point at a short distance from the woman tied and chained to the column she started running, and uttering a loud cry on reaching her, she said: "Mother, how much you must have suffered! I will save you from the hands of the accursed infernal spirits and from this infamous column."

And with a stroke of the sword she held in her right hand, she cut the rope and broke the chain, and thus severed the ties that bound the woman to the column. This done she fell on her knees at the feet of her mother.

The liberated woman, inclining, embraced her and kissing her, said: "My daughter, in you only did I hope to be saved; and you must also free your poor brothers who, through the treason of *Brutal Evil*, are under the power of the most malevolent wicked and accursed infernal spirits, that can be found on the face of the earth in the disguise and under the mask of human beings. They have planned my destruction and that of my children, because they thought that you were dead; but I always had hopes in the God of Heaven, and I thought that you still lived, and I was sure that you were to liberate and deliver me. Oh! my daughter, *Human Justice*; how beautiful you are! How many times have I called upon you to liberate me and free me from this accursed chain." And caressing tears flowed from her eyes.

Human Justice said to her: "Mother, do not weep any longer; but rejoice, for I will know how to

defend you and free my brothers and sisters, in order that our brotherhood may be established."

Humanity: "Let us go away, daughter, from this accursed place; for if the infernal spirits should notice that I am freed, they would certainly seek some other diabolical means to make me a slave again and chain me once more to this infamous column."

Human Justice: "Mother, they have been able to do so the first time, because I was little; but in the future I will know how to treat those infernal spirits, by reminding them that *Human Justice* is created for man, and *Inhuman Justice* for the infernal spirits. And I swear to you that if they once fall into my power I will have them burned to the last vestige of them, and I will have their ashes taken to their traitor of a father, who shall be forever chained within the abyss and his infernal Arcanum or Mystery shall be destroyed forever."

Humanity: "Daughter, how intelligent you are. You deserve to be worshipped by your brothers and sisters. The wisest and the most learned have spoken of you; you were born at the side of science."

Human Justice: "Mother, my heart is always serene and calm; only I think of my brothers and sisters. I am not like *Inhuman Justice*, full of villainy and hatred, who kills men as if they were lambs."

When *Human Justice* had uttered the last syllable, another explosion as of a bomb was heard, not far distant from the spot where *Human Justice* and *Humanity* were talking.

Humanity cried out: "They are coming, they are coming, the accursed infernal spirits."

Human Justice seized the sword she held in her hand, and crying out, said: "Come, come, then, ac-

cursed spirits. *Human Justice* shall destroy you to the last vestige of the seed of your infernal race."

Brutal Evil showed his head, but disappeared like lightning.

Human Justice: "Mother, rejoice, do not fear any longer the infernal spirits; for it will be they who shall have to fear us. Man shall have to be respected as a man and not ever any more be treated like a dog."

Humanity and *Human Justice* left.

The storm had gotten nearer, the flashes of lightning, and the thunder strokes were getting all the time more and more frequent.

After a moment, another explosion as if occasioned by a bomb was heard from under ground, and a moment later *Brutal Evil's* head was again seen coming out of the ground and looking all around, in all directions. Then he said: "They are gone."

He now came out entirely and approaching the column whereat *Humanity* had been chained, and looking at the ground, he exclaimed: "My daughter, *Inhuman Justice*, you were right for not wishing to go. The fault is mine. I shall never see you again. Now, you are constrained and forced to fall into the hands of *Human Justice*, and so will *Tyranny* and *Cruelty* and *Falsehood*, and *Pride*; and after you shall all have been unmasked, you will be eternally punished."

He set to thinking for a moment, without speaking, and after a while, he broke out laughing and then said: "No, no, there is still hope to destroy *Humanity* and all her children."

Approaching the black cloak stretched upon the ground, he knelt down and struck the ground three times with both palms of his hands and crying out, said: "Oh! Great Infernal Spirit *Reptile-Serpent*,

our protector, see how *Humanity* has been liberated, by her daughter, *Human Justice*, from the column to which she had been chained by *Tyranny* and *Cruelty*, and by me, *Falsehood* combatted. All our attempts have failed. You only, our sole hope, remain to us."

A voice from under the cover answered and said: "I will accomplish even the impossible, but the intelligences which you have trodden down were too few."

Brutal Evil arose, picked up the cover and threw it at a distance. With his right hand he pointed out the object which had been hidden under that cover; while with his eyes he was looking in the direction of the column and said: "There is the powerful chain which scarcely glanced at by *Human Justice*, will seem to her like a castle of bronze. She will fall down and sleep.

"*Humanity* will marvel at this, look at it, and will not know how to break it; and then we shall be triumphant."

He withdrew to the abyss.

I wished to ascertain what object it was that had been concealed under that black cover and which *Brutal Evil* had said was a terrible chain.

Instead of this I saw a very great treasure, a very large heap of coins of different sizes; large, middle sized, and small; of gold, silver, bronze, and other kinds of metal. I tried to find out of what country they were, but I was not able to read any of the characters engraved on some of them. I thought in my mind that they belonged to all the nations of the world. Suddenly I saw *Human Justice* re-appear, and she was speaking very roughly. It seemed that something had happened to her and I heard her say: "Accursed infernal spirits who think of nothing else but to put obstacles in the way of the human

beings, the way is impassable; and I myself, I do not know which way to take to succeed quickly in re-establishing fraternity among my brothers and sisters."

She approached near to that immense heap of money. Scarcely had she seen it than she uttered a very loud cry of terror, and said: "Oh! God of Heaven, what a terrible treason is this which they have plotted against me and my mother. Oh! my brothers, who still are masters and owners of your intelligences, come, come and break asunder this infamous chain invented by the accursed infernal spirits; otherwise it will bring you to ruin and destruction."

Her legs and arms commenced to tremble, and throwing on the scale and the sword which she was holding in her hands, she fell backward on the ground, and placing her arms and legs in position she closed her eyes and fell asleep.

A moment later I saw re-appear the woman who had been liberated from the column. She seemed very melancholy, but was walking with agility, and speaking, she said: "Daughter, *Human Justice*, where are you? Have you not yet been able to find your way to deliver your brothers and sisters from the hands of the accursed infernal spirits?"

Having arrived near to that huge pile of money, she stopped and commenced to look at it.

She threw on the ground the banner she was holding in her hand.

I raised my eyes to look at the beauty of the woman. She had golden curly hair, which was hanging down for the larger part on the right side of her. Her face was of a decided whiteness and her cheeks were as red as roses. She had large black eyes, and beautiful white hands. She was of a tall stature, dressed in white, with a blue cloak which was hang-

ing down to the ground. I imagined that that big heap of money was hers. Raising her eyes towards heaven, she said: "Oh! God of Heaven, how shall I be able to establish your reign when *Brutal Evil* and the whole of his race have placed between me and my children the most terrible chain, fastened to the ground. I do not feel strong enough to be able to break it. My daughter, *Human Justice*, is asleep, and I and my children will be obliged to remain slaves forever, and your holy religion will be trampled down. I am mistress of my intelligence and I believe in you alone; but my children, who have been deceived by *Brutal Evil*, instead of believing in you, they believe in the accursed *Reptile-Serpent*, and in his infamous idols.

"Have mercy on a poor mother, give me strength that I may fight the accursed *Reptile-Serpent*, in order to re-establish the brotherhood of mankind. One God, one people, and one flag under the protection of Order and Pure Civilization, on the whole face of the earth."

The woman then again looked at the money and instead of rejoicing, the more she looked at it, the paler she got, until I saw her tears roll down.

At this moment, I heard a noise as if it were coming from a million of voices of shouting persons. I tried to understand some of the words, but the shouting was at too great a distance. The noise was coming from all parts and as they were getting nearer the sounds of words changed into weeping.

It was the suffering people. When they arrived near the woman they fell on their knees and wept. There were men and women, small and large.

I then understood that that woman was the symbol of *Humanity*, and tears ran down my cheeks in torrents. My heart was beating heavily on seeing



Humanity in danger of being destroyed by the
Supreme Infernal Spirit while Human Justice
sleeps.

the woman, haggard, pale and in rags, but who seemed to me to be strong and intelligent.

All of a sudden I saw coming out of that pile of money a terrible monster *Reptile-Serpent*. It had a big head which was somewhat flattened, large red cross eyes, a large mouth, red lips and long teeth. Its skin was green and black. It threw itself with force upon the woman, bit her all over her body, and surrounded her. Her left arm alone was yet free, and yet the half of the Serpent was still concealed under that heap of money.

Oh! My God! How scared I was, when I saw that that monster *Reptile-Serpent* opened his mouth wide to seize the woman by the neck.

I was weeping; all the others were weeping also and some of them were uttering loud laments and moans. And in the confusion of moaning and lamenting, a voice was heard coming from Heaven, and it said: "With cries and moans and tears you cannot save the woman. You must use your Human intelligence."

I ceased weeping, as did also all the others, but I do not know how it was. I saw the woman with her left arm seizing a small poniard and piercing through and through the neck of the *Reptile-Serpent*, which fell back on the ground and died, and the woman was saved.

In the moment that the monster *Reptile-Serpent* assaulted the woman, I saw the people raise up to run to the help of the woman, and shouting: "Death to the infamous Serpent, if you wish to save the woman."

I arose, but in doing so, I awoke entirely undone and tired, and my chest swelling and wet with tears and perspiration. I was full of fear, but satisfied at the same time to have seen the woman saved.

I tried to fall asleep again but that was impossible, or rather there were passing in succession before my mind's eye all the scenes that I had just witnessed, that I had been seeing and feeling, in which I had lived.

I heard the clock strike one after midnight, and from among my thousand thoughts there always came back to my mind, the remembrance of a saying which says:

“That morning dreams signify something good.”

Not being sure whether I would remember all this in the morning, I got up, took pen and ink and paper, and wrote down the most important points of all I had seen and felt.

END OF THE FIRST VISION.

SECOND VISION OF HUMANITY.

I went back to bed, but it was impossible for me to find any sleep; my thoughts being absorbed in the terrible scene enacted before me and of which I had been an unbidden witness.

I shut my eyes and tried to force sleep upon me, and indeed, it seemed to me that I was falling asleep in reality, but I caught myself, at the same time, with my eyes wide open as it were.

I saw the same woman. She had her left foot upon the head of the monster *Reptile-Serpent*, and with her left hand she was picking up the flag from the ground, and with her right hand she presented it to the people as a sign of fraternity and brotherhood.

I now wished to observe the particulars of that banner. I noticed that the handle was surmounted by a globe with a blue stripe near the center; and as the banner was white, I conceived in my mind that that was *Humanity's* banner.

I noticed that in the middle there was a sign in the form of a red cross.

I asked the lady what that sign meant, and she answered me: "My son, that sign means that the first of my children who dared to speak and raise his voice against his brethren the usurpers, and against *Tyranny, Cruelty, Falsehood* and *Inhuman Justice*, they have arrested him, kicked him, they spat upon him, they tore him to pieces, they scourged and finally nailed him on the cross, there to die."

I, having picked up courage, because she showed herself so gentle and kind, I said to her: "Who condemned him and killed him on the cross?"

She answered me: "All those who caused them-

selves to be called Ministers of God, while in reality they were nothing else than Ministers of *Brutal Evil*, and they did it with the aid of public force."

I said to her: "The priests in our day are good, yet they say that they represent, and are ministers of Jesus Christ. They absolve the sins committed by people, they teach that a dying person having confessed and communicated, shall immediately after death, find her soul going directly to Paradise. They preach all the time and say:

"Blessed are you, poor ones. If you suffer with patience, for to you is promised the kingdom of Heaven."

The woman was listening to me with the greatest attention, and when I had finished speaking, she said: "My son, these my children who boast of being ministers of Jesus Christ are the most terrible enemies of my poor children, and of the great Divine Spirit, God of Heaven. They have suffered themselves to be seduced by the accursed infernal spirit, *Brutal Evil*, who with his false doctrines had projected my destruction and that of my children. And the accursed infernal spirits are aiding in taking possession of the face of the earth.

"I, with my own eyes, have seen the intelligences of my children, which *Brutal Evil* was leading into the abyss; and all those who call themselves Ministers of Jesus Christ, Ministers of Mahomet or of some other of the so many false religions. They have no longer believed in the God of Heaven but, instead, in the accursed infernal spirit, the *Reptile-Serpent*. But now they will no longer be able to believe in him, for as you see, his head is under my foot. Fraternity and Brotherhood shall become established among my children and we shall be triumphant, having re-established the belief in the only one God, only one people, and one sole ban-

ner, and then Order and the purest Civilization only will govern us until the end of the world, when time shall be no more.

“You, my son, have still your eyes shut, because you have been deprived of all that our mother earth offers us; and do you know why? For having listened to your own brothers, who with their diabolical doctrine, have made you worship false gods; who have been the ruin of our Human Society.

“Look at your brother who, with his false doctrine has been recognized and acknowledged by all of you as the god of the earth, who has always been a friend of *Pride*, of *Tyranny*, of *Falsehood* and of *Cruelty*. He congratulates himself on seeing his brothers killing each other worse than dogs, he rejoices at seeing his brothers and sisters suffer hunger. He is pleased when his sisters are losing their honor and their virtue to appease the pangs of hunger and he feels proud to see himself well-housed in a magnificent palace containing eleven thousand rooms, and filled with immense riches. While everything tends to the ruin of his poor mother; the laborer is forced to live with his wife and seven children in a poor, dingy and dirty room, where there is nothing to be seen but a squalid couch for a bed, three or four old chairs, and the poor mother compelled to let her poor little children spend the night and sleep on the floor. There reigns misery and wretchedness! Oh! traitor son, your heart has become worse than that of *Brutal Evil*; you have forgotten that you belong to the human race, that you must believe only in the one God of Heaven.”

At these last words, she commenced to shout and pointing out with her right hand towards the lady who was placidly and peacefully sleeping on the ground, she exclaimed, crying out: “My daughter, *Human Justice*, awake! Awake! Otherwise we shall

be lost. Are you going to sleep forever? Are you going to allow *Inhuman Justice, Tyranny, Cruelty* and *Falsehood* to destroy my children forever?" And falling upon her knees and raising her eyes and her right hand towards Heaven, she said: "Oh! God of Heaven, Thee alone I recognize and acknowledge that Thou art the Creator of the Universe; awake, my daughter, *Human Justice*, and that we may stop and put an end to the destruction caused by all the accursed infernal spirits and may chase them back into the abyss whence they have come; and Thou shalt see that all my children, the whole human race shall no longer believe in false gods. I for my part, I curse all the gods made of gold, silver, iron, copper, lead, marble, stone, paper, and of whatever material whatsoever they may have been made, for they have caused the misfortunes of the whole of our Human Society."

I remained thinking on hearing those words of the woman, and did not wish to ask her another question. Only, I thought I would look and see whether the *Reptile-Serpent* was dead, or whether he could again make another assault upon the woman.

But instead of this, I saw that the people had gotten nearer to help the woman, and free her from the infamous monster, and when they had approached near and found him half dead on the ground they commenced assailing and beating him with sticks, axes, and picks, and all kinds of utensils and instruments of defense, and they did not leave one spot untouched. As half of the Serpent was concealed under that big heap of money, the people in their rage were dealing terrible strokes to the pile, breaking the coins and smashing them all to pieces. I was thinking to myself—why break the money in such a way that it will no longer be valuable cur-

rency? Would it not be better if it were divided in equal shares among each and every one of those people, and they would be without care for food or clothes for a long time, and without having need to look for any work?

And I thought that if I were asking this of the woman she would have those doings stopped. So I asked her, and she answered me humbly: "My son, do you not see that that accursed money has degenerated into the most terrible monster Serpent to be found upon the face of the earth? Do you not see that the invention of it was all in all an operation of the infernal spirits? Do you not see that it shines and glitters like the accursed skin of the cursed Serpent? It has been that infamous money that has caused millions of my children to be killed. It has been that accursed money that has been the true cause why millions of my children have been deprived of their honor, of their virtue, and have been left abandoned and forsaken on the street to wander at random. Money has been the cause of the division of our Human Society in so many classes. It has been on account of money that my poor children, the laborers, have been expropriated and dispossessed of all that their labor had produced for them. It has been on account of money that a part of my children have renounced the true God of Heaven, have invented hundreds of false religions of different forms, and have put into practice the false doctrines which the *Brutal Evil* taught them, having extracted them from the infernal Arcanum. No, no, my son; I cannot establish the reign of the Supreme God and the belief in Him alone, one people and one banner, Order and pure Civilization as long as the smallest piece of coin is not destroyed.

“My son, the past is the truly natural book which we must study to find out to the very bottom and thoroughly all that has been enjoyable and favorable to our Human Society, and all that has been harmful must be cut off and cast aside. Tell me, my son, for a long time past they have been speaking about the invention of writing and printing and of literature which has carried civilization among men, as Order also has done. But where is Order? Where is civilization? When everywhere we see nothing but disorder and discourtesy and boorishness. I know it and my daughter, *Human Justice* knows it, that we must go through a great deal of fatigue and pains before reaching the last limits of the point where we may make a sign to Order and Pure Civilization to step in and come among us. When that will be reached, then we shall be able to say that the human race is civilized.”

I was listening to her with the greatest attention, and going within my mind over all the things and events that had occurred to me in times past, from the time I had the use of reason, I then understood that the words the woman had spoken to me were indeed the truth. Then I tried to go away so as not to disturb the woman any longer. But at the same time I heard a very loud cry and a voice said: “Here the monster has another head!”

I turned around and noticed that they all were afraid to kill it, and shouting loudly they were creating a very great confusion.

At these cries the woman who was sleeping awoke, and taking hold of the sword with an incredible sprightliness, she was on her feet like the flash of lightning.

Humanity, who was standing with her left foot upon the head of the *Reptile-Serpent*, shouted, saying: “My daughter, *Human Justice*, you ought to

kill that most terrible monster, crush that head, that myself and all my children may be free."

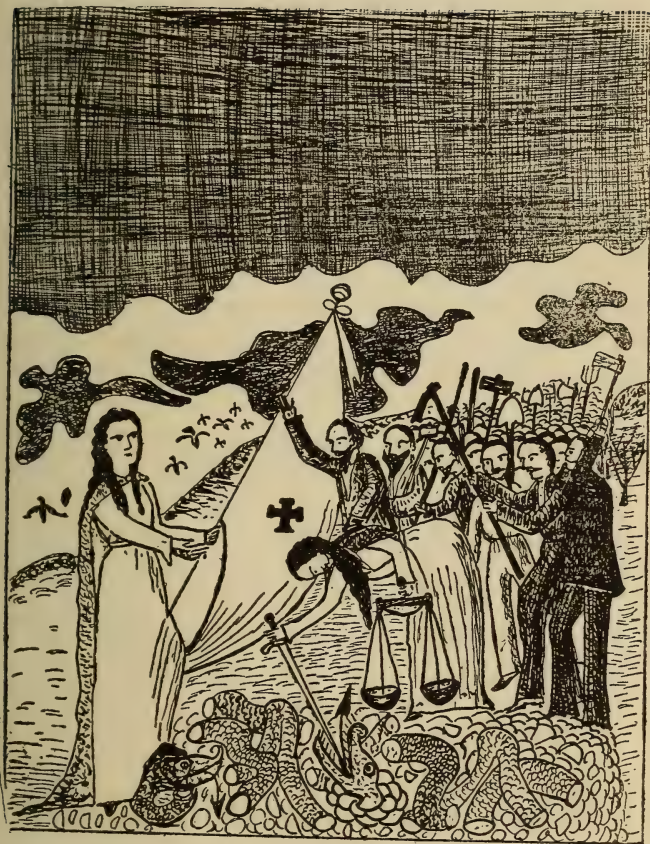
Human Justice went running and at the same time changed the positions of the sword so that she could give a better start in dealing the final stroke upon the second head of the *Reptile-Serpent*, which the people were afraid to kill.

Human Justice had scarcely reached the point where the head of the monster was showing, than she raised her right arm in which she held the sword and wielding it with terrific force she let it fall with all her might upon the head, trying to thus cause the death of the monster beyond all power of resuscitating again.

Having delivered the stroke, her sword broke to pieces near the handle and *Human Justice* shouting aloud, exclaimed, saying: "Impious, venomous Reptile; I thought you had but one head, with which you tried by all means possible to destroy *Humanity*, while the most terrible one you kept it hidden to show to the human race your false morality, carrying among men pestilence and immorality.

"*Human Justice* did not need any sword, because arms should not be used among men, but fraternity and brotherhood instead. If I have made use of the sword, I have done so on your most accursed account. But now you are dead and your unclean carcass will soon be thrown into the abyss, together with the sword with which you have been wounded and killed as you so justly deserved."

And throwing the hilt of the sword, which she was still holding in her hand, upon the *Reptile-Serpent*, she shouted and said: "Brothers, laborers, it is your duty to raise up these accursed and unclean remains, for if we let them stay any longer upon the face of the earth, we shall remain diseased forever."



Human Justice makes an end of the Supreme
Infernal Spirit who has threatened to destroy
Humanity.

Some young men came courageously forward, carrying sticks and poles and ropes in their hands. Having reached the place where the monster *Reptile-Serpent* was lying, *Humanity* said: "My sons, this is the first head, you must tie it very tight, although it be under my foot, for fear it might seek again to revive."

Four of them came near and raising the part near to the neck they passed the rope around it and tied it very tightly, while the others were tying the other parts of the body. When all was ready *Humanity* and *Human Justice* came forward, and marching, they commenced to sing:

"The End of the Reptile-Serpent, Supreme Spirit of the Infernal Spirits," as follows:

1. "At last, your end has come, infernal tyrant;
You have caused many tears and lamentations;
Go down, your reward is: eternal torment,
For your cruel Tyranny o'er all nations.
2. Inhuman Justice has by you been instilled,
The Human race to disunite and annoy;
Falsehood, o'er all other evil spirits skilled,
With pestilence, plague and death, mankind
to destroy."

Those who were carrying the remains of the *Reptile-Serpent* were walking behind *Humanity* and *Human Justice*. in two lines singing the chorus to the song sung by the latter. They were all turning around as if in search of a place to throw their burden—the remains of the monster *Reptile-Serpent*.

Having reached a certain point, they stopped, placed themselves into a circle. Two persons with baskets had swept away the coin even to the last lit-

tle bits and laid them into the baskets, and they also went quickly to place themselves in the circle with the rest.

Humanity said: "My sons, throw into these infernal abysses the accursed remains of the monster *Reptile-Serpent* together with the money he had invented to make the human race his slaves, and submit it entirely to *Tyranny*.

They very quickly threw the remains of the monster into the abyss together with the sword and all the money.

Humanity also said: "Children, remember that with the fall of the monster *Reptile-Serpent* and the abolition of his infernal invention, the accursed money, and the sword, with which I pierced his terrible head, announcing to you his undoing and end, I will now raise the flag with which shall come among us Order and Pure Civilization."

And as she was raising the banner, they all shouted:

"Long live the white banner!
Long live the banner of the World!
Long live Civilization!"

They commenced to walk. *Human Justice* ran to take hold of the scales and then went back and took her place next to her mother, and the two together commenced to sing aloud the following song:

1. Live! God of Heav'n, the Omnipotent!
Long live mankind on this earth so fair!
Death to the knave, the Monster Serpent!
Triumphant wave our banner through air!

As the last words were getting farther away from me, dying away, so to speak, and I could scarcely hear the words any more, being hardly audible, still they reached the ears of my intellect so

that I could understand everything even to the last syllable. I could not see any one any more, and it seemed to me that a thick cloud, a dark veil, complete obscurity was falling over my eyes. So shutting my eyes I fell asleep. A few moments only had passed thus, as it seemed to me, when I again heard the voice of a woman. Her voice was ringing loudly in my ears like the sound of a big bell, and she said to me:

“Brother, brother, awake! This is not the time to sleep.”

I awoke and I saw *Human Justice* stretching out her right hand and holding that of *Humanity* likewise stretched out. Above them there was a kind of an aerial machine, in the form of an artistically worked oval, and on the part which showed in front there were written the words:

“ARK OF HUMANITY.”

And over these words waved the white banner.

The woman who had called me, said to me: “Come brother, and you shall have the good fortune to see the beauty of the future. As soon as I shall have exterminated from off the face of the earth *Tyranny*, *Cruelty*, *Falsehood* and *Inhuman Justice*. Not only will then all our laboring brothers be contented but even all mankind without any distinction of classes.

So I climbed up into the ark and soon we were travelling through the air at a great rate.

The Ark of Humanity was sailing, so to speak, with great speed. And I was wondering, looking at it traveling with such rapidity into space without wings or sails, navigating through and across the several layers of air. I was thinking of how many times I had been reading in the newspapers that the most intelligent and skillful machinist had not yet

succeeded in inventing exactly what might be called aerial navigation or an aerial ship, the direction of which can be regulated.

I wanted to ask the woman, who so many times had called me brother, thinking perhaps that with that word she was securing my confidence in her and establishing hers in me, I wanted to ask her, I say, all about this ark; so very timidly, however, I ventured to question her, saying: "Sister, in what or how does this ark navigate?"

She answered me: "Brother, Nature is a very great book, which contains many and all natural secrets. These are of two kinds: Human Secrets and Infernal Secrets. The Human Secrets are all those that have been, and are, and will be invented by our brothers and sisters who love to see our human society raised up very quickly to Order and the most Pure Civilization. On the contrary, all our brothers and sisters who have made or will make infernal inventions are all those who have given up their intelligence, their human intellect to *Brutal Evil*, and who consequently have their hearts filled with brutal instincts, and their inventions all tend to, or attempt at, the destruction of our human society."

At these last words she commenced to tremble and exclaiming loudly, she said: "Oh! traitor—and treacherous brothers, who do not remember and take to heart that such inventions all tend to our and your destruction; call back to your memory that you are human and do not wait until I must reprove you. For, my reproof will seem to you like unto an avalanche of shame, which will fall from on high over your heads. I swear in the name of *Humanity*, of which we are all children, that if the God of Heaven helps me in my enterprise of establishing the Brotherhood of Man, everything will be changed.

I shall not do, as the impious *Inhuman Justice* did, who honored so much all the brothers and sisters who had invented some new inventions. Man must invent human inventions and if any one from among the human race presents himself with some infernal invention, he will be punished by me very severely and his name shall be published all over the face of the earth, and he shall be looked upon as a traitor to *Humanity*, because after I shall have destroyed *Tyranny, Cruelty, Falsehood, Pride* and *Inhuman Justice*, and exterminated them from off the face of the earth, all infernal inventions shall be abolished. On the contrary all inventions that have been made by our brothers and sisters, for the benefit of mankind and that are useful to our Human Society, will flourish, and those who shall have made them will be renowned forever and their names shall be published all over the world. The day on which a human invention was or will be presented by any one whomsoever of our brothers or sisters will be made a day of celebration everywhere in honor of that brother or sister who shall have made the invention. A book shall be compiled, in which shall be recorded and demonstrated the utility and usefulness of said inventions to our human society. Such a book shall be on file in all our modern schools, in which our little brothers and sisters are and are to be educated, and he or she who shall have the desire to extract some human invention out of the book of Nature, I, as *Human Justice*, shall give him or her, all support, facilities and means necessary in order that the invention may come to a success and be perfected.

I said: "Sister, it seems to me that you had told me that inventions are of two kinds: Human and Infernal Oh! if that is the truth, why, the latest inventions which our brothers and sisters have made towards the end of the nineteenth century have been

none other than infernal; for they have made inventions which deserve to be punished by the hand of the God of Heaven. Having put several millions of our laboring brothers out of employment and out of work; since with the aid of a machine one man produces for one hundred, so ninety-nine must perish, starve in misery, because they cannot find any work or procure employment any more.

Human Justice: "Brother, such inventions as you are mentioning are human inventions, because with little work much production is obtained. I know that our laboring brothers and sisters have cursed a thousand times our inventing brothers and sisters, but on what account? Just because men are governed by *Inhuman Justice*, who was not worthy to come upon the face of the earth. But doubt it not, the time is near at hand when she will fall into my hands and will be punished by me. For so the book of Nature of our Human Arcanum says. The infernal inventions, my dear brother, are the poniard, and the sword, the bayonet, the lance, the revolver, the gun, the cannon, the grape-shot, the plans of war, and all that which is being done with the instinct, the intention, the will to destroy the members belonging to our Human Society.

The inventor, while he reads mentally in the book of Nature, knows very well whether his invention is human or infernal; and if he has a human heart, it is impossible for him to make an infernal invention."

I then said: "Sister, until today, I have believed that the inventions you have named just now as infernal, were useful. I have considered them until now as necessary to our human society; for those brothers and sisters, who in my eyes seem to be intelligent, say that by the means of the same the hu-

man races have been civilized and have maintained among us Order and Civilization."

Human Justice: "But see, brother, how much you have been in error; for suppose you belonged to a society composed of a certain number of members, and that some of them would be found out seeking to arm themselves to give an assault upon the very members of which they are a part, what would you say?"

I answered: "I would say that they deserve to be expelled from the society and not be allowed to remain any longer members of it; and that they should be looked upon as ferocious beasts of the forest who wish to satiate themselves with human blood."

Human Justice: "Well, don't you know what our book of Nature of the Human Arcanum says? No, you don't because you have been educated under the artificial laws dictated by the cruel *Inhuman Justice*. Human means to say, civilized. Civilized means, points out and indicates that the members belonging to our human society, after having reached the age of eighteen years, must know their own duties, moral and material. The moral duties are those prescribed in the first part of our book of Nature of the Human Arcanum, which says: That the members of the human society in order to be allowed to call themselves civilized, first of all must not raise their hands to strike their equals, or organize themselves in whatsoever fraction of members of the human society and arm themselves with infernal, destructive engines, to go to work and kill their brothers. The fraction, small or large, which organizes with such an object in view, loses the title for all its members of human beings, and are called brutes, uncivilized animals; for animals that have been educated by human intelligence,

do not fight among themselves, among the members belonging to the same race, and this will be the first fundamental basis of our modern schools. The second are the material duties. You know, dear brother, that our Human Society is not fed on grass like the animals of the field. Our food comes from the product of labor; because if the members of the human family should, for two or three years, stop the work of producing, you would see its end. The human race was not created to feed like the other animal races, and would prefer death to the feeding on anything that the human palate refuses to taste. The members composing the human family are not satisfied with only the abundance of the articles of food; for we are not created like unto the other animal races; our skin is thin and we cannot resist either the ardent rays of the sun or the inclemencies of the weather, rain, cold, frost, etc. And as we of the human race are endowed with a human intellect, we have succeeded in building magnificent houses. The only defect, however, is that we have not yet succeeded in building them with order; but that is not the fault of our laboring brothers, but of our governing brothers; because they have made artificial laws, which protect our capitalist brothers; and those who have built sumptuous palaces have been forced to live in dingy hovels. In this case, when our governing brothers, as well as our capitalist brothers, have forgotten that they are human; when, without having set one stone upon another, yet have found the means to possess themselves of brilliant and elegant palaces, and instead of having some regard for our poor laborers, have treated them worse than dogs; while our laboring brothers have not only worked at the building of a quantity of houses, but also labored for the production of an abundance of food, clothes, shoes, and all that is nec-

essary to human life. And because our governing brothers have come in contact with ungrateful *In-human Justice*, and our laboring brothers and sisters have been obliged to suffer in uncomfortable houses, with a scarcity of food, half-naked, badly shod and deprived of everything that Human Society can or might offer, rather than let them starve."

I said: "Sister, your heart is human; you speak for the good of all; and if all that you have said were put into practice by the human race, then paradise, for the human race, would be right here on earth."

Human Justice: "Yes, brother, we must thank the God of Heaven for having created mankind, because without the human race, the earth would be like nothing; there would be neither cities nor villages, nor gardens, nor canals; all would be deserts, mountains, forests and seas. Dear brother, if those who compose our human society would think once a day only but seriously on that race of which they are a part, certainly not one would have the impudence to live by imposing upon his brother and enslaving him; but, instead, he would seek all possible means to be useful and to produce that which is necessary to human society. No one would go to work and arm himself to go about and kill individuals who are a part and members of our society; because every one knows that all are working for the production of things beneficial to our society, and not for malevolent destruction."

I then spoke: "Sister, if the priests had preached all that which you have told me; and if teachers had taught it to their pupils; and if books were compiled with sentiments so humane, our human society would have been perfected to the highest grade of civilization; but our brothers, who make a show of being wise, and learned in science, say that

the human races are not yet old enough to be civilized. That is because the date when the first inhabitants of this earth appeared upon it is not known yet precisely. The Christians count their years from the birth of Christ; the Hebrews and other religionists from the time of the creation of Adam, etc. But I, who have now listened to your human doctrine, have civilized myself more in one hour than in all the previous time I have lived upon this earth. Dear sister, whatever I may say to you, now that I have my eyes open, I understand that that little which I have heard at and retained from school, the lessons I have received were all false, all wrong; because they used to tell me that I was to combat for the defense of the fatherland, that my country was composed of all those who spoke my language, and that all other governments and kingdoms were our enemies, and that in case of war, I was to defend that country of mine in order to be considered and called a good citizen, otherwise I was of no account."

Human Justice: "Brother, our country is the earth, and the reason that we are so divided in so many fractions is to be ascribed to *Inhuman Justice*, who is the fault of it, and the origin of all this division. She brought with her from the bottom, from the very depths of the abyss the infernal banners of several colors, with the intention of destroying our human society; and therefore books have been made and schools have been built, and added to them, the infernal inventions have brought out, all with the intent of destroying our human family. All this has been the work of our inhuman brothers and sisters."

I replied: "Sister, you make me think about things concerning inventions. I, also, have had often a mind to make a terrible invention, and for as much as I have been able to understand from what you

have been saying, I think now it would have been a human invention. But according to the actual system, I acknowledge any way that I have done well not to do anything with it."

Human Justice: "Tell me, brother, what would have been this invention, you would have liked to make?"

I replied: "Sister, my invention would have been the producing of the sun at night; but I have thought that it would have been the means of sending millions of poor laborers a-walking; as by my invention, I would have produced the sun's rays without any compensation. But who could make it succeed, since our brothers, the capitalists, have not yet been able to make themselves masters of the light of the sun, otherwise they would have done so, as they have done with the earth and all its natural wealth; because when the light of the sun and when the earth were made by the same Creator; and whether this author of everything or Creator be the Divine Spirit, God of Heaven, or whether Nature made it all, certainly, it is at all events the patrimony of the whole of our human society, and by natural law the earth with all its natural wealth as well as the light of the sun belongs to all and to each and every one of us."

Human Justice: "Oh! my dear brother, I wish that all our brothers and sisters had a human heart like yours. Would to God that this might be the case, then they would all of them be masters of their intelligences, as you are of yours, and then the human race might shout with a loud voice:

'WE ARE CIVILIZED.'

The Ark of Humanity was slackening its speed, while *Humanity* was listening to the conversation between *Human Justice* and myself; and crying

aloud, she said to me: "Yes, yes, our human family is too old for anybody to know anything about its beginning, nor even of its end, for that matter. I only wish that our human family would soon be governed by Order and Pure Civilization," and taking me by the arm with her left hand, and pointing with her right hand towards the earth, she said to me: "Look, my son, what is there in front of us! It is the planet Jupiter; get a good idea of it, so that you may be able to relate what you have seen of it to your brothers and sisters."

I was astonished, for what I saw was a very large modern city. Its buildings were white as snow, and all of the same height. At the same time that I was observing attentively, the Ark of Humanity was describing a circumference—navigating in a circle, as it were—giving me full opportunity to observe the beauties that are reserved for Human Society in the future. There were to be seen a quantity of cupolas all of the same height, and from whichever point you were looking at them, they seemed to be in a straight line. At the top of each cupola was a white banner floating in the air, waving with the wind. It demonstrated that peace and joy were reigning within that city. No smoke could be seen anywhere; the air was exceedingly pure; and there reached to my ears the sound of several instruments of music. Everything announced that the people therein were living in the most tranquil felicity.

At a certain distance from this enchanting city, there were to be seen very large establishments, also very white, in the same style as the buildings of the marvelous city.

Between these establishments and the modern city we could descry also very large highways, flanked with trees, disposed with symmetry in a

straight line, showing that they had been reared by human genius.

The Human Ark having now described the whole circumference of a circle commenced to descend towards the earth. Scarcely had we arrived in the vicinity of that city, than *Humanity* raised a kind of a handle or lever and five wheels came out of the ark; these struck one of the highways and without losing any time we were running at full speed upon the street. I was looking to the right and to the left, and I saw that the land was cultivated with great agricultural science. Large gardens of marvelous beauty, with fruit-bearing trees, laden with fruits of all description. There were birds of beautiful plumage singing in the trees; and the people all wore joyful and smiling faces, and everything announced that this earth was the terrestrial paradise of the human race.

Of a sudden the Ark of Humanity stopped and we found ourselves in front of a very beautiful establishment of tissues and woven-goods of all kinds; and in five minutes we found ourselves in the midst of an immense crowd. Perhaps they were all people who were working in that establishment. They gave us a great welcome and extending their hands to us, they were calling us brothers and sisters.

We alighted and they led us one side of the establishment. I was greatly surprised on observing the architecture of the whole and the mode in which the front had been constructed, where the main door of ingress was placed. It came in a direct line with the city, which seemed to be at three kilometers (two miles distance), and between the one and the other there was a very wide highway, which looked very charming on account of its construction and the symmetry with which it was built. Besides being flanked with magnificent trees, at a short distance

from them there were two hot houses resplendant with verdure, to the height of about two feet, and which seemed to be surmounted with brilliant flowers. We entered into the establishment, and a beautiful youth approached me and extending his right hand to mine he said: "Brother, come with me."

And he led me into a large airy and spacious hall. He started looking at me from head to foot and making a sign to me to sit down. He then said: "Sit down, brother, and in a few minutes I shall return."

In fact, after a few moments he was back, carrying in his arms a little box, and laying it on a table, he opened it, and withdrew from it a suit, and turning towards me he said: "Brother, put on this suit of clothes."

I was very much surprised and I asked him who was paying me that compliment.

He answered me: "Brother, here are not paid any compliments, nor are any alms given, but it is a duty of our civilized family."

I asked him once more and questioned him, saying: "Brother, I would like to know who is the master of this establishment, that has such a humane heart, and whether you are a member of his family?"

He answered me: "Here, we have no masters, for where there are masters there are slaves. Here we are a civilized people and every one attends to his own duties."

I put on the suit and we went out, and scarcely had we reached the court of the establishment than I saw that there was in the center a musical park erected. In there were seated about fifty young ladies, holding resplendant instruments of various form on which they were playing. We stopped, and I wished to ask him a few questions; but as every

other person was so silently listening, I held quiet also. After a moment, I saw that a number of the young ladies who were playing, ceased to do so, and they commenced to sing as follows:

Hurrah for our brotherhood,
For Order, Truth and Peace secure;
Abundance, all that's good,
Civilization most pure.

I asked the young man next to me, and said: "Brother, what does this song mean, which they have just sung?"

He answered me, saying: "Brother, that song is the basis of our Human Religion. For here once reigned *Disorder* and *Misery*; *Tyranny* and *Cruelty*; *Inhuman Justice*, cruel impious *Pride*, and *Falsehood*. Now, on the contrary, everything is changed for now we have:

Wealth and abundance;
Human Justice, good and Holy;
Truth and true science;
Order and purest Civility."

I asked him then, saying: "Brother, is this a feast-day, today?"

He answered me, and said: "Brother, here it is always feast-day, all our days are holidays; because, we all work, but we work little. Our work is perfected; no one works to produce anything that is intended to work destruction to our society; because a people that is civilized, produces everything but only that which is necessary to the sustenance of life."

I then said: "You are right, brother, the misfortune and the disgrace of Human Society on the face of the earth and of which I am a member, is that one part of the laborers produce products of

destruction, as for instance, poniards, revolvers, bayonets, swords, lances, guns, cannons, grape-shot, infernal machines, gunpowder, balls and bullets to destroy Human Society. Millions of its very members are armed and are always and at all times ready to massacre each other, and often times the laborers, because they are asking for better conditions."

He asked me: "What kind of people are those who are so armed?"

I answered him: "I will tell you. Now that the bandage of ignorance has been torn away from before my eyes, I am able to discern the truth. Some of those people are those who wish to live by lording over the others by every possible means; the others, are so armed, because they are ignorant, they either let themselves be armed or arm themselves to go to work and kill their laboring brothers. Oh! brother, one thing only consoles me; the youngest of the two women that you have seen here with me is *Human Justice*. She expresses and shouts without fear that she wishes to burn *Inhuman Justice, Tyranny, Cruelty, Falsehood, Pride and Disorder*. She wants to take hold of them and have them chained into the abysses and she wishes to re-establish Order and Pure Civilization."

In the meanwhile they all commenced to sing:

"We wish the earth oh! soon to be

A paradise of joy to man,

Ruled by Order, as we here see,

Happiness, Culture in the van."

I looked up and saw *Humanity* followed by *Human Justice*, and the people; and when they were near me she made a sign, and I quickly understood that we must leave. I shook hands with the one who had been talking to me and I joined them.

When we arrived near the Ark of Humanity, we stopped, while the others who were following us politely shook hands with us and bid us adieu at our departure. We mounted into the ark and *Humanity*, turning towards those people, said to them:

“Brothers and sisters, farewell!

We, ourselves, congratulate
To find you so fair, so well,
So civilized. Be’t our fate!”

They all answered, shouting and saying: “Oh! *Humanity*, who inhabits the earth, abolish war, if you wish civilization.”

We left through the highway which was going directly to the city. Before arriving the ark went gradually slower and slower. *Humanity* said to me: “My son, look and listen—all what you see and hear. With what great beauty of adornment has not that gate been made? And the city which you shall see!”

I answered and said: “Mother, I am not an architect, neither am I an artist-painter, nor a poet, a musician, a sculptor, nor even a joiner (carpenter). The blame for it has to be laid at the door of the accursed infernal spirit.”

Humanity: “Son, true science is natural, and he who pretends to study it, labors in error. Look at the little child, scarcely able to walk; it believes that everything belongs to everybody; it believes in a community of ownership.”

Having reached within a short distance from the modern city, the ark stopped and I was greatly surprised at seeing in what style that marvelous city was built. The exterior part of it was surrounded by a garden of delight, with trees planted in truly an agricultural intelligence; flowers of all kinds and of all descriptions were sending forth the most odor-

iferant perfumes. A large quantity of iron seats were disposed in a circle where persons were found to be seated, talking politely and in a friendly manner to each other. They seemed to form one single family. Everything seemed to impress upon me the thought that I was beholding the real paradise of terrestrial delights. I then took notice also of the entrance gate and door to this marvelous city. Its width was the same as that of the highway; its height was equal to that of the other edifices, and it was worked artistically. The upper part was enclosed in an immense arch, wherein were graven in large letters the words:

“ORDER AND PURE (REAL) CIVILIZATION.”

Upon the arch there was erected a globe somewhat flattened or compressed at the upper and lower parts. In the centre of the upper part there was fastened a long pole from which there hung unfurled and waving with the breezes a very large white banner.

I noticed that in the middle of the banner there was embroidered or printed the trunk of a tree and a few fibres of strings were hanging therefrom. I commenced to think what might be the reason that white banner bore the sign of the trunk of a tree, while ours were bearing the cross. It was, however, impossible for me to unravel the mystery.

I asked *Human Justice* what this all meant and in answer she said to me: “Brother, that sign means that which happened to Emmanuel, the son of the workman, and which was to happen also on this planet. Emmanuel was born in poverty and misery, but was endowed with natural science. His poor mother, Mary, not having any clothes, was obliged to wrap him up in her apron. The boy, having grown up to man’s estate, understood that his father was working hard, and that with the proceeds

of his labor and in spite of it, he was to continue living in wretchedness and misery, while others without any labor whatsoever, were living in wealth and abundance by abuse of power cast upon the shoulders of our poor brothers. Emmanuel's heart was human, his words penetrated the ears and struck the minds of the poor people, because they had the confidence that they would be liberated by him from the slavery of wretchedness."

Having uttered these last words, she commenced to shout and in a loud voice, said: "Oh! brother, what became of your name? It has become lost on the face of the earth, and your enemies call themselves Christians, because they intend to continue to live by abuse of power. They do not say that you were knocking at the doors of civilization that the human family might enter. Your very name is no longer on the lips of the people because the sect that descended from those who crucified you, call you now the Crucified one, the Nazarene, the King of the Jews, Jesus Christ, the Lamb of Sweetness and Mansuetude. Because you suffered all kinds of inhuman tortures and torments, without daring to raise your voice in protest for your own defense. Oh! sweet brother Emmanuel; yes, you have ended your life nailed upon the hard wood of the cross for the love of our poor human family.

"I, as *Human Justice*, make an appeal to all the members of that human family to unite with me and to combat humanely, in order that poverty may be abolished and cast away from among our human family; that no one may be allowed to live any longer by abuse of power over any one of his fellow men.

"So, dear brother, remember that all those who do not attend to and work at the production of the

things that are necessary to our human family, are inhuman and not worthy to live among us.

“Here on this planet, formerly, the same things occurred, that happened to our brother Emmanuel; because the greatest part of the people were laboring and producing all the blessings of God in abundance, but they were oppressed by the small minority, who were producing nothing at all; and were reducing the laborers to suffering and misery.

“The minority, who were living in idleness, were doing nothing else but all the time inventing some new deviltry.”

INTERMEZZO.

One day a certain Gallonetti, a man much esteemed by all those who knew him, entered the city on horseback, in a run, and stopped at a public square, and commenced to preach; among other untruths, he said that finding himself in the country, in the open fields, he heard a voice calling him and saying:

“Oh! Gallonetti, you are the man I have chosen as the chief and leader of my people.”

His friends, who were like him, living without producing anything, not even a yard of rope to hang themselves with, were the first ones to go and listen to him, and while he was talking, they were applauding loudly and confirming by their gestures and shouts the truth of all that he was telling the people.

Gallonetti said that the voice that had called him was the voice of God and that He had appointed him and all his descendants to govern the people of the planet Jupiter.

Gallonetti's friends understood immediately the game that was to be played to confirm this falsehood. They left the crowd for a while and soon returned with a crown made of grass and some flowers. Having reached near where Gallonetti was standing, the one who was carrying the crown said:

“In the name of God, Supreme Lord of all those here present, Gallonetti is being crowned, and the will of God is being accomplished. He is the man who has always been esteemed by all on account of his honesty, wisdom and religion.”

Gallonetti dismounted and bending his head, received the crown put on it by the man who was carrying it.

Gallonetti mounted his horse once more, and looking all around him said:

"I am your king and you are my subjects and vassals. I have power over you. Be it then known that whosoever does not obey my orders shall be punished; yea, even with death. My person is sacred, as also that of all my descendants; for thus is the will of God, our Supreme Lord."

They all commenced to shout:

"Long live the King; long life to him and his to all his people."

He was accompanied as far as his house, in great pomp, and all gave thanks to God, the Supreme Lord, for having given them their first king.

While the people were withdrawing from this scene, one by one, and each to his own affairs and business, joyful and contented, a young working-man's son, called Orrento, gifted with much natural science, stopped and said in a very loud voice:

"Come here, come here, brothers and sisters, approach and hear and listen to the words of truth, uttered by the son of the laborer."

When the people were in a sufficient number and near enough, so that his words might have effect, Orrento said: "Brothers and sisters, workers and laborers, consider well that all that Gallonetti has said is entirely false and that there is no truth in it, that the voice of the Supreme God should have called him to be our king. This is all an invention of his own malice; he wishes to usurp from us a grade which no one in our whole human society can obtain; because our natural book of the Human Arcanum says: 'Mankind, each and every of its mem-

bers, all are the kings of the animal reign, but a human being cannot be king over mankind.' Now entirely contrary to this, Gallonetti, with his false politics, has made you believe that he was created our chief, king over us, himself and all his posterity. Why? To make us his slaves.

"Brothers and sisters of the working class, we want the proof of this fact, and we want to know by what Supreme God he was called and we want to see what kind of a God it is; because a just God cannot act contrary to our human society; it is impossible for Him to do anything of the kind."

Orrento had scarcely finished speaking when the people, who had listened to him attentively, commenced to shout:

"The proof, we want the proof; otherwise, Gallonetti shall be punished by us."

The following day Orrento set to work gathering the people together and setting themselves on the march they advanced as far as Gallonetti's house and there stopped and cried out:

"The proof, we want the proof; otherwise, you are a liar!"

Hearing these shouts, Gallonetti came out of the house, and seeing that the people was angered against him, he said, slowly:

"Tell me what you want of me; I am not a liar. Do you want the proof? I will give it to you."

The people answered: "Besides the proof, you say you are going to give us, we want also to see the Supreme God, and we want Him among us."

Gallonetti, at these words, felt quite confused; nevertheless he said to them:

"Go on; I promise you that in a few days your wishes will be satisfied."

The people being appeased disbanded once more in full joy, because Gallonetti had promised to bring to them the Supreme God.

Gallonetti called his friends together in a council, and told them that the greatest problem to solve now was to give a God to the people.

After every one had given his counsel and his advice, Galonetti said: "Some months ago, walking on the outskirts of the town and passing near a little wood, I noticed a very large animal near a tree. I stepped near it and looked at it from head to foot, and I said to myself: 'If that beast were taken to the people, I would be able to make them worship it as a God.'"

All the others accepted Gallonetti's advice.

The following day, they set off and having arrived at the spot described by Gallonetti, after three days of searching, they at last found the beast, and they all marvelled at the sight of it.

Gallonetti said: "We must give a good name to the animal."

One said: "The best name I propose to give it would be God *Ele*."

Another said: "God Elefa (Elepha) sounds better."

Gallonetti said: "And I call it God *Elephant*."

They all shouted: "Bravo Gallonetti! Hurrah for Gallonetti!"

"Your peer nowhere is to be found;
Your science and knowledge are immense.
With them we're not to labor bound
And possess wealth by our pretence.

Workingman, do labor and toil;
Of your products we do get hold.
Spend your life in want and turmoil!
We enjoy; you stand heat and cold.

Wait! the toiler is now thinking,
And from darkness bursts out a light;
A bad hour for us is striking,
And yet we must say: he is right!"

Gallonetti said: "You do not need talk too much, the people will be satisfied to have so big, so tall and so large a god as this terrible and ugly beast;" and going towards the animal he commenced to pat and to caress it.

The animal was very intelligent and let Gallonetti get near him, and Gallonetti passing a long rope around the elephant's neck and tying it, making a big, strong knot, he kept a part of the rope within his hand and started walking away. The animal followed him, and Gallonetti said to the others: "If this animal learns two movements, everything will succeed."

He stopped and said to the animal: "Are you the god who has called me that I should be the head of your people?"

The animal, of course, did not understand him, but Gallonetti repeated it so many times, until the elephant bent its head.

Gallonetti said to his friends: "I am going ahead to make all necessary preparations in the city; while you go to work and clean the animal very carefully." He mounted his horse and sped in full gallop to the city, and having the trumpet sounded through the streets, he thus had all the people gathered in a public square, where he himself was waiting, still on horseback. Gallonetti commenced to speak and said: "That the Supreme God was ready to come, and that it was now necessary to make preparations for his solemn entry, and do him all honor and reverence; for it was through him that they all lived."

He immediately gave orders for a large pavilion to be erected, where the Supreme God was to be received and shown to the people; and that all the girls from sixteen to twenty years of age, should all be dressed in red.

The next morning they were to betake themselves to the gate of Leria, through which the Supreme God was to enter.

He also gave orders that all those who could play any musical instrument whatsoever, should also gather at the same place, in order to show that the whole people were obeying the Supreme God and that his, Gallonetti's, orders were also obeyed

After having given orders for everything that was to be done, he went home; and his ladies having worked some embroidered cloth inlaid with gold and prepared several well worked laces and ribbons, he took with him all these several objects and set out.

Gallonetti having arrived at the place where his friends had gathered and where they had been washing and cleaning the elephant to perfection; they commenced to dress and adorn it with all the gold embroidered draperies, and tied them together with the laces and ribbons which Gallonetti had brought along. When they were through dressing and adorning the animal, the elephant seemed to be something supernatural; above all, at first sight, when the people looked at it for the first time, for never had they seen an animal of that species.

As soon as day dawned, Gallonetti gave orders to his friends, that by 9 o'clock in the forenoon, they must be out at the Leria gate with the god-elephant.

Orrento, before even it was daylight, had gone out hastily to the Leria gate and had gone away along on the highroad at about one mile's distance and there hid himself behind a barn, in such a man-

ner that he could not be seen by anyone. After some time he saw Gallonetti pass by, looking attentively towards the Leria gate and laughing to himself.

Orrento said within himself: "If I were not a human being I would certainly make life short for that treacherous, false member of our society; but human beings must not kill their brothers, and his falsehood shall some day, sooner or later, be laid bare."

Later on, Orrento saw Gallonetti's friends pass by leading a very large and tall animal, all decorated and adorned with red and yellow draperies embroidered with gold and one of them was armed with a stick, and was walking behind the animal, continually goading it on; while the latter did not seem willing to walk.

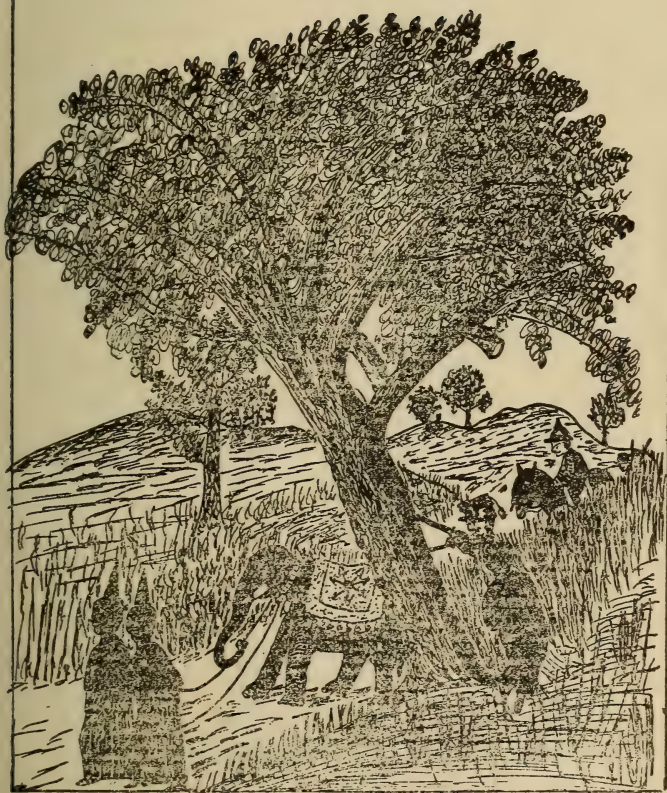
Having arrived at the place where Gallonetti was standing, they all stopped, and Orrento saw that one was talking to the animal and saying:

"Am I the man that you have chosen as the head of your people?"

The animal lowered his head and a moment later raised it up again.

The same person then asked a second time, saying: "Are you the Supreme God of this people?"

The animal made the same movements. They then set on their way again. Orrento was bursting with rage and said to himself: "Oh! you villains, traitors of our human society. Because you do neither wish nor want to work, you have the audacity to make the members of our society worship an irrational and brute animal;" and raising his voice, he said aloud: "Oh! Eternal Father, God of Heaven, our Creator, give me strength and courage, that I may be able to beat down and destroy the falsehood of these rascals."



Orrento says: "At first ill-treated and clubbed;
afterwards worshipped." (Orrento believed only
in the true God, Creator of the Universe.)

When Gallonetti and his suite reached the Leria gate, they found two-thirds of the people gathered there. He gave orders that all those who were to play on the musical instruments should place themselves in ranks at the head and arrange in eight rows; then the girls, dressed in red, were to follow behind the musicians in four rows, two on the right, and two on the left, and between them, in the middle, the Supreme God was to march. He gave also orders to the people to go forward, and that as soon as they should hear the bursting of the bombs, it would be the signal for all to shout: "Hurrah for the Supreme God."

They should continue marching until they arrived in front of the pavillion, where they were to stop. The pavillion was erected and entirely finished, and everything had been arranged and decorated with great care.

When Gallonetti's friends with the god-elephant had arrived at a certain place, Gallonetti gave orders for a horn to blow. This was to announce and herald the coming and arrival of the Supreme God. The people commenced to shout repeatedly:

"Hurrah for the Supreme God!"

And then they set on marching until they arrived in front of the pavillion where they stopped. When all those who were playing the horns and other musical instruments had arrived and taken their places near the pavilion in the shape of half a circle; twenty-four of them were made to ascend up to the pavilion, where they were placed twelve on one side and twelve on the other, while the god-elephant was placed in the middle. All the girls dressed in red, with the exception of twenty-four, were placed in the same way and in front of the musicians. Gallonetti placed himself near the god-ele-

phant, and all his friends took their places behind him.

The horns and other musical instruments were blowing without cease and the people was looking with stupefaction at this wild and savage scene.

Gallonetti made a sign and all the horns and musical instruments suddenly stopped their deafening noise and the greatest silence was reigning supreme over all the people.

Gallonetti then addressed the people and said: "You thought that I was a liar, and you have wished for a proof, and also that the Supreme God should be among us. Now in your presence, I shall ask him so that you may give testimony to the truth; thus you shall then obey my commands, being that you are all my vassals and of all my posterity also."

And turning towards the animal, he said to it:

"Are you the Supreme God of this people?"

The animal lowered its head, giving the affirmative sign of "yes."

And Gallonetti, turning towards that mass of people said:

"Worship him and kneel down as I do, if you wish that this god dwell amongst us."

Gallonetti fell on his knees, and so did the people, with the exception of a small number who remained standing, because they had heard Orrento speak so often.

Gallonetti arose, making a sign to the people to remain kneeling and said:

"You, who do not wish to acknowledge the Supreme God, remain without either god or king or kingdom."

And he asked again of the animal, saying: "Am I the one whom you have chosen to be the leader, the head and the king of your people?"

The elephant again lowered his head, and Gallonetti, turning for the second time towards the people, said to them: "Are you convinced now that I have always told you the truth? I have always loved God and you and I always will do so. I hope that you will be obedient to my orders, specially in these circumstances, for tomorrow morning, we must start the building of the great temple to be erected here, where our Supreme God is to reside and where we are to come and worship him, and ask him for the graces and benefactions of which we are so much in need and which he will be pleased to shower upon us."

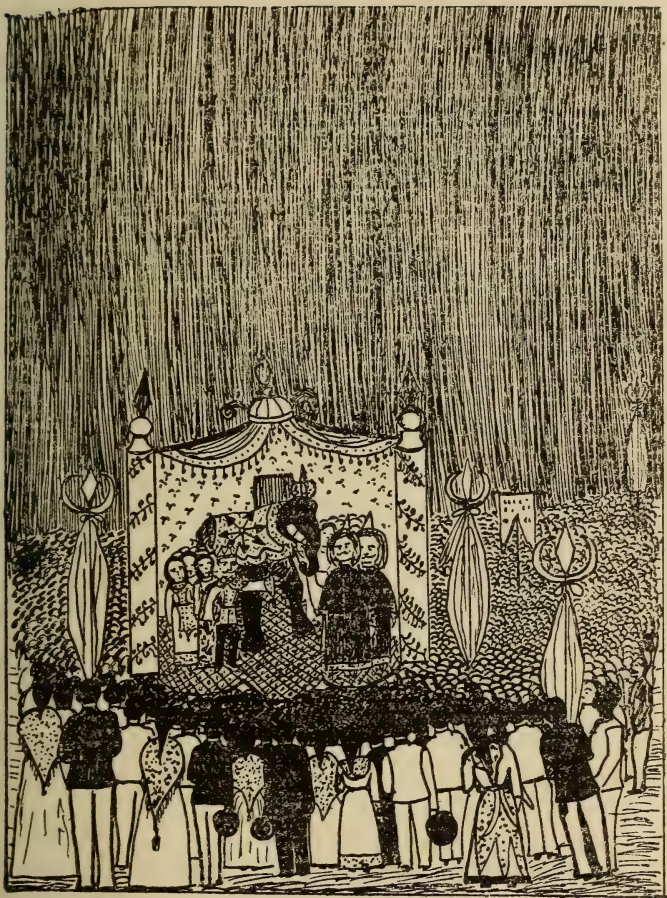
I: "Heartless man, without human heart. So he had the courage to lead the people into the worship of a stupid animal."

Human Justice: "Brother, our human society has been humbugged worse than that by our brothers that are unwilling to set their hands to work. They have been guilty of more crimes than Gallonetti. For the animal at least had eyes and could see, ears and could hear; but the idols which our society has recognized and acknowledged as gods neither see, nor feel, neither do they speak but are made of base metals and other materials."

I: "Yes, that is true, but they say that these represent the image of God."

Human Justice: "Liars they are! The face of the true God has not been seen by any one; and the blame for all these things must be laid upon *Brutal Evil*, whose daughter, *Inhuman Justice*, had not enough power of herself, and who without the aid of these false gods could not have been able to bring so many evils upon, and done so much harm to, our human society."

I: "Sister, go on and tell me further how it



The Humans deceived by Falsehood, embrace the Elephantine Religion, worshipping an animal as a superior god, and all the other idols wrought by human hands; and the true Human Doctrine remains enchained in the abyss; and Brutal Evil is still triumphant.

fared with this god-elephant and how all this business went on."

Human Justice: "Gallonetti then said that so long as the temple was not built and completed the Supreme God must, of course, dwell with him in his house; and although there was not there much room, yet access would be free to all and his door open to those who would come and worship."

He then gave orders to the people to arise, and the horns and other several musical instruments commenced again to blow loudly, while the people were shouting at the top of their voices:

"Hurrah for the Supreme God!"

Gallonetti made a sign to his friends to lead the animal away with the greatest respect, because it was the principal basis on which to keep and maintain the people in misery and wretchedness.

They marched away amidst the shouts and the noise, and thus reached Gallonetti's house, where he had already prepared a magnificent room on the level with the street. In front of this hall, on the public street, Gallonetti had had erected a very large platform, all decorated with draperies of different colors and upon which there was a chair worked and inlaid in Mosaics and diamonds.

The god-elephant was made to enter it and placed with its head facing towards the people. The girls dressed in red, were placed in a demi-circle, in such a way that their centre was the platform or throne, while the two extremities of the sides came in contact with the walls in front. Gallonetti was seen very busily engaged placing his friends in front of the animal, and taking one by the hand, probably one who was a greater liar than himself, he led him in front of the Supreme God and said: "Oh! Supreme God, do you wish that this one should rep-

resent your own person and organize your holy religion?"

The elephant-god lowered his head, and Gallonetti fell on his knees and exclaimed: "Oh! Creppo, you are next after the Supreme God, and I am the third." All the friends of Gallonetti knelt down also. The people seeing that the upper class had fallen on their knees, followed the movement and did the same.

Orrento, who was there also, remained standing and in an undertone, said: "Oh! scoundrels, villains, this is the beginning of the pasquinade. But your god shall die by my hands."

Some who heard him utter these words, said: "Poor fellow, he is crazy. Should he happen to die his soul would go straight to hell." When all were on their knees, a beautiful youth came out carrying a very white basket in his arms. This basket contained some richly worked clothes. Having arrived before Creppo he stopped and some one near him arose hastily and taking with both hands one of the robes from out of the basket, he showed it to the people. It was a red tunic worked and embroidered by hand, and richly covered with gold and silver. He kissed it, thereby showing to the people that it was a holy robe, and he invested Creppo with it.

Orrento burst out laughing, and said: "I must see all this which they have combined, up to the end. I don't know whether this is the intermezzo in the drama, or the drama itself, the beginning of the falsehood."

Creppo remained quiet and serene, but when he turned his face towards his friends, he broke out in laughter at seeing himself dressed in that rich tunic.

The same fellow who had put the tunic on Creppo took from out of the basket another piece of habiliment, and turning it on all sides and in all di-

rections he let down on the ground a long train and showing it to all around he kissed it also, and Creppo turning his back to him he put it on to him. It was a long yellow mantle all embroidered in gold. Creppo turned around, while the other fellow took out of the basket a kind of headgear, an ecclesiastical cap or hat, a berretta. It was about a foot and a half long, all yellow and entirely embroidered in gold like the mantle, and there hung from it two species of thongs, also yellow, and he put it on Creppo's head. The latter was standing there like dumbfounded, with his eyes cast down on the ground.

Orrento looked attentively at all this and thought for himself; two friends having advanced towards him, he said to them: "Brothers, the poor people have their eyes closed and blinded, they do not understand anything of all this that is going on here, of this intermezzo of the falsehood. As for me, I know where all this is going to end."

Creppo was standing like a statue. He seemed to be entirely changed from what he used to be, while the other fellow who had decked him with this mass of treacherous masquerading garments, was now taking out of the basket two ends of golden rods, which he united together thus forming a single long staff. On the upper part of this rod there were two little *Reptile-Serpents*, who seemed to just have been in the act of crawling up and were kissing each other. He extended his arm and handed this rod over to Creppo who took it, and the other one then fell on his knees.

No sooner had Creppo taken the rod in his hand than he turned around and faced the people and raising the rod or staff on high in a vertical line, he turned from the right to the left and then from the left to the right.

Orrento was getting all kinds of colors in his face; he wanted to shout, but suddenly he controlled himself and said in an undertone to his friends:

“Brothers, with those masquerading robes which he has put on and that gold which he has holding in his hand, he is showing to the people that he is the second Supreme God, while I, I hold him to be a shame on our society, because instead of having in view the progress of mankind towards Order and pure and real Civilization, he and Galonetti, with their lies and falsehoods, are pushing and thrusting it backwards in all directions, so that instead of progressing, Order and pure Civilization are retrogressing.”

Creppo then marched towards the platform or throne and having arrived at the foot of it stopped. Twelve girls dressed in red were marching behind him in two lines. Creppo raising his eyes towards the top of the throne, raised his voice and said:

“This is the stairway and the steps which lead me to my divine and high authority,” and ascending the steps and having arrived where the chair was placed, he turned around and sat down. The girls were following him, and when the first two had arrived at the upper step they all sat down on the steps with their faces turned towards the people. The others did the same, and as there were six steps, they sat down two on each, leaving room in the middle between them, for two persons to be able to go up and down the steps.

When everything was in order, Gallonetti was the first one to move, he ascended the steps, and having arrived before Creppo, he knelt down, kissing his hand. Creppo, arising laid his hand upon Gallonetti's head and said to him: “Gallonetti, receive from me the confirmation of your having been appointed and of being the absolute king and mon-

arch over all the people. You shall not have any one superior above you, except myself, who am the second Supreme God and head of the Elephantine religion."

Gallonetti got as cold as ice and in an undertone, he said to Creppo: "Creppo this is not the way to act with me; for I thought I was the head above all, and now you said that you are it." Creppo said to him: "O, Gallonetti, do you not know that I and you, and all our friends, we are all like the different berries of grapes, we are a part of the same bunch. What matters it who is the first or the last, the head or the tail; it is sufficient that we all are enabled to live at our ease without having to work."

Gallonetti arose and Creppo said to him: "Take hold of this rod with your right hand under mine."

Gallonetti obeyed and Creppo turning towards the people said: "Sinners of both sexes, this rod is an indication of the truth.

Abundance is secured to us, the future is smiling at us. What I recommend to you now is to have faith in the Supreme God and in me, and to obey Gallonetti, for he was made king by our Supreme God himself."

Orrento, at these last words, which Creppo uttered, cried out with all the strength he possessed, saying:

"Oh! traitor of our human society, if I succeed in taking that god away from you, the people will be free, and Order and pure Civilization will be established, and you will have to set to work if you wish to live among us."

Some of those who heard his shouts were threatening him and one of Gallonetti's friends coming near said to them that if he again should give any signs of insanity, they should immediately have him tied to the tree of the insane.

Orrento's friends were praising him on seeing him so human and liberal. Gallonetti kissed Creppo's hand and came down the steps. Creppo submitted to this mark of reverence, while his friends in a line arose and marched up to and ascended the steps and having arrived before Creppo, they kissed his hand, like Gallonetti had done, and then came down also. The poor people who did not understand what that all meant (this intermezzo of *Falsehood*), followed the movement and impetus given, and at the example of Gallonetti's friends of the upper class, they all arose and went devoutly to render homage and honor and reverence to Creppo, worshipping him as a second Supreme God.

Orrento remained standing where he was with a few of his friends who were comforting him and being comforted by him, and he said to them: "Do not doubt at all that I repose firmly all my courage on the eradication of this betrayal. I recommend to you always to be humane and to impress upon the minds of your laboring brothers the Human Doctrine, which I will teach you before long."

When the people were through kissing the hand of Creppo, he arose and taking his rod with both hands he raised it on high perpendicularly in front of himself. The people set to shout repeatedly:

"Viva (Hurrah for) the Supreme God!"

"Viva (Hurrah for) Creppo, our Second Supreme God!"

Creppo lowered his rod, and with his left hand he made a sign to the people to be silent and said: "My children, I hope that you quickly set to work on the erection of our temple, and that in a comparatively short time, it shall be terminated and completed and ready for occupation, so that I shall be able to announce to you the whole and full will of our Supreme God. Our holy religion will be spread

and propagated among all and will be accepted by all, and shall bear the name of the Elephantine Religion."

He started coming down the steps, and immediately the horns and other musical instruments commenced again to sound. Gallonetti and his friends went to meet Creppo, and surrounding him so as to place him in the midst of them, they wheeled about and led him in front of the beast.

Creppo knelt down and commenced to sing, as follows:

1. "O, Lord God, King great and Supreme!
We adore and glorify Thee!
Our guilt is great, we humbly deem;
No work for us, mayst Thou thank'd be."

Gallonetti's friends answered:

2. "Oh! may it be so forever!
Yes, we are the few and select!
May we have to work, oh! never!
With wealth and bliss, like the elect."

Orrento and his friends had approached nearer in order better to see the proceedings of the intermezzo, and he answered in a strong and sweet voice:

"Vile traitors! of deceit so full!
The drama you play is well thought;
Your Elephant, the worshipful,
Though now triumphant, shall be caught."

"If my plans, traitors, do succeed,
Your god shall be short-lived, I swear!
Your farce shall end then, do take heed!
And work shall be your toilful share!"

Creppo, Gallonetti, and their friends understood what Orrento was singing, but in order not to cause any scandal among the people they feigned not to understand.

The first part of the intermezzo was over and the second one was now to commence.

The people had been satisfied in getting a god so big and tall. They disbanded all beside themselves and almost crazy for joy, on account of having installed Gallonetti and Creppo. They did not have any idea not even the faintest, of the great deception played upon them. Their eyes were shut and blinded to the reality.

The following morning, Gallonetti arose early and deliberated with his friends about the site of the large temple to be erected. In the middle or centre of the city there was a large plot of ground or commons, which had been left vacant on purpose, and was being used by the people as a resort for walks and gatherings and a point for reunions of all kinds. It was encircled in fine rows of trees, tall and shady and was an ideal spot. They decided that this would be the best place for the new temple, the best adapted to all purposes, and that if it were proposed to the people the idea would have a great success. They, thus, went there, taking with them a certain man, Tropolo Scerro by name. He was the best horn blower to be found anywhere around there. As soon as they reached the place, Tropolo Scerro received orders to blow the horn thus giving the signal to the working people that they were being called there to a meeting, while Gallonetti with his friends, were measuring the grounds, and drafting the plans of the building.

The laborers set to work with great haste, working with a true faith, in order very soon to be able

to see their Supreme God in his own new temple, in the temple erected by their hands.

Orrento and his friends took to the country and repaired to some uninhabited spot. Orrento had with him about sixty of the most intelligent workmen whom he himself had individually converted to the Human Doctrine.

After having thus enjoyed the pure free air of the country for about three months, Orrento gathered his friends together one evening after supper and said to them: "Brothers, we have now been in this place for about three months. We did not take anything with which to appease hunger, and yet we have had abundance of everything. Do you know why? We have all, each and every one, taken our part and furnished our share in the hunt after game, and we have all eaten it together. Suppose, now, I had been your lord and you should have brought the same amount and quantity of game from your hunt, and I should have retained the two-thirds of it for myself and would have given you the remaining one-third, as a compensation for your labor, certainly you would have been oftener fasting than satiated; while I alone would have had abundance. And if I should then have thrown away what I could not use of those two-thirds and have it go to waste, spoil and rot, what would you have said to me? Now, Grandinello, you who are an intelligent youth, speak up and say what you think of it."

Grandinello answered and said: "Should you have acted in such a manner, we would be right in saying that you are inhuman."

Orrento: "Well, Gallonetti, Creppo, and all that fine company, are just doing this very thing. Without working at all they take possession of all what we poor laborers are producing, and then they say that they are good people, and that they love

God. But what god do they love and what god do they worship? If you do not know it, I will tell you. I am the son of a laborer, but I keep my eyes open and I know everything they are combining to demonstrate before our eyes their false science. They lead us like a herd of cattle, and make us acknowledge and accept as God a stupid animal, and Creppo the greatest liar on earth, as a second god.

"Dear brothers, you must know that on this planet there is no god, the only superiority is that of our human society, and in order that we should reach the last and highest degree of civilization, it is necessary that the members of our human society be forced and compelled to embrace the Human Doctrine."

Grandinello: "Yes, but who is to teach it to us? You know that all our brother workmen have been laboring from the time they were little boys, because they were compelled to it by accursed misery and wretchedness; so we have all been made to work, and have thus been deprived of all the advantages of instruction or education."

Orrento: "The Human Doctrine is not like the other false doctrines; it is composed of only a few words, because it is simple and natural; but contains words of the greatest significance, which will lead our human society to be ruled by Order and pure Civilization."

Grandinello: "So you are able to teach Human Doctrine?"

Orrento: "The Human Doctrine must come out of the human heart, while the false doctrines came out of those hearts that were inhuman. Tell me, brother, are you human? Which is your first duty?"

Grandinello: "My first duty is to attend to the production of all that is necessary to our human society."

Orrento: "And then?"

Grandinello: "He who does not attend to that is inhuman, because he wishes to live on the undue appropriation to himself of that which those who do work are producing."

Orrento: "Yes, but when our brothers who do all the work shall have learned the Human Doctrine, is it not true that they will no longer believe in an elephant-god, nor in an elephantine religion, nor in Creppo and all his lies; but they shall believe only in the God of Heaven who does not need our produce."

Grandinello: "Then what will become of Creppo and Gallonetti and the whole privileged class—for, as you say, with the Human Doctrine, they also shall have to set to work?"

Orrento: "Certainly, for he who produces nothing, has no right to eat anything. We can dispense from work, of course, all those who are unable or sick, and all those under working age, and who must still attend school and educational instructions. Are there not in the privileged class young fellows as strong as oxen, and whom we must allow to grow fat on the fruits of our production; and yet, when they see us pass by, all covered with mud and dirt, they are laughing at us and making fun of us, or looking at us with a contemptible, despising look."

Grandinello: "You have said that you were able to teach us the Human Doctrine."

Orrento: "Well, are we not talking it just now. We must love the members of the human society as ourselves, and not do to others what is displeasing to ourselves."

Grandinello: "So it seems to me that we remain as we are, because if we must love Creppo and Gallonetti and the whole privileged class as our-

selves, it seems to me that even with the Human Doctrine, we poor laborers, we will always be the worse off; for they not only suck our very blood out of our veins, but then still after all, we must love them, and that is a thing that cannot enter into my head."

Orrento: "How foolish you are; but all the same you have understood the signification of the first sentence or precept of our Human Doctrine, which says: 'Every member of the Human Society must take part and have a share in the production, otherwise he who wishes to live of vagabondage loses his title of human being and shall be treated accordingly.'

"Also, in the same way, those who produce materials or engines to be used for the destruction of the members of our human society are inhuman and deserving to be expelled from the membership of our human society."

Grandinello: "Orrento, your heart is human, and from your heart has sprung the Human Doctrine, and as far as I am concerned, I renounce all the false doctrines." And turning towards the fifty-nine others, he said to them: "Brothers, you have listened to the purity of the Human Doctrine? Have you understood what a grand significance it has? We must all work, but little; we must produce all that is necessary to our human society; not do to others what is displeasing to ourselves, and love others as ourselves."

Orrento was convinced that his sixty disciples were also convinced about the Human Doctrine, but he was still doubtful whether they would have enough human courage to spread it among the masses of the people, who were suffering in misery, while the earth's productions were announcing abundance for all everywhere.

He arose and raising his eyes towards heaven, he looked attentively. After a while he lowered his eyes and turning towards his friends, he said to them: "Brothers, I have looked towards heaven, and I have prayed in my heart to try and see my Creator, but it was impossible for me to succeed. The affairs of our human society will have to be administered by natural laws and by the members who compose it, and for human reasons it is necessary that the basis be the Human Doctrine, which abolishes all classes, and re-establishes fraternity and the brotherhood of men among us. If any one of you lacks the human courage to spread the Human Doctrine, he is free to go among our unfortunate brothers, the laborers. One thing yet I have to tell you. Either spread the Human Doctrine, or we, the laboring class, will remain slaves forever."

They all shouted:

"Long live Human Doctrine!"

Orrento said to them: "Bravo, well done; but what I now recommend to you is, not only to have it on your lips, but to have it fixed in your hearts."

Continuing to speak, Orrento said to them: "Brothers, I must return to the city because I want to go and see how the intermezzo is getting along; for, the bestiality which Creppo is combining, will be so followed and acted upon that the poor people will believe them all to be the truth, indeed."

And extending his right hand and shaking good bye with every one of them, the one after the other, he again said: "Brothers, in the name of the God of Heaven and of *Humanity* and its Doctrine, I greet and salute you."

Humanity who was standing listening to these words, kissed her and said to her: "Daughter, *Human Justice*, your speaking calls back to my mind the sweet name of Orrento, who suffered so much for the

cause and love of our human society." *Human Justice* continued to speak.

All answered: "Farewell, adieu. Long live *Humanity* and its Doctrine."

Scarcely had Orrento arrived in the city than he found it all over in all parts in feast and holiday attire and spirits; flags of different colors were waving everywhere and in the centre of each there was imprinted an elephant, and at his feet could be read these words:

"Long live the Supreme God and the Elephantine Religion."

Orrento walking through one of the side streets, met one of his friends called Alestro, and the latter was astonished to see Orrento having the skin of his face as white as paper, and his cheeks as red as two roses, and with long and curly hair falling down in locks on his shoulders. Alestro stretched out his hand to him, manifesting at the same time an indelible joy. Orrento understood that something had happened concerning his absence from the city, and asked Alestro, saying: "Tell me, friend, what has been said about me, and about those who have followed me and executed my ideal."

Alestro: "Creppo has always spoken in your favor, even last week, he ordered prayers to be recited to the Supreme God, that He might give back to you your health, and also to all those who have followed you."

Orrento: "Why, have we perhaps been sick?"

Alestro: "No; he said that you were all insane."

Orrento: "In what way are we insane. Certainly, we have not done any harm to any one."

Alestro: "As Creppo has said that you were against him and Gallonetti and the whole Elephantine Religion."

Orrento: "That is true; but we are in favor of the Human Society and its doctrine."

Alestro: "And then who will be the god of that religion? You know that the Elephantine Religion is spread all over."

Orrento: "Yes, but as the god of our religion is better, the Elephantine Religion will soon be abolished. You must know that our Human Society must believe only in the God of Heaven; but the first basis to call ourselves civilized is the Human Doctrine. You do not know what a very great difference there is between the Elephantine Doctrine and the Human Doctrine. With the Elephantine Doctrine the great majority of the members of our Human Society have to work, and of all what they produce, the very minority takes possession, they who do not work! And, although we produce in abundance for all, on account of the fact that the great majority blindly believes in the Elephantine Doctrine, we are living in misery and want. Instead, if the majority should embrace the Human Doctrine, the minority would be compelled to help work, and of all that which would be produced we would possess in common and abundance would be the share of all, and misery, want and wretchedness would be abolished."

Alestro: "So, from what I understand you are not crazy, nor are all those who have followed you, crazy? The proverb is right that says: 'The judge must hear both sides before he can form a right judgment.' He must hear the side of the accused as well as that of the accuser. I understand that the Human Doctrine is the key that unlocks the gates of civilization. It is not contrary to anyone of us of the Human Society, on the contrary it recalls to my mind that it is not only good for all the members of our society, but even for the animals. Some days ago I

have seen Mr. Marengo and his lady pass by here in their carriage drawn by two splendid horses which I deem to be the best of all those I have ever seen. They were finely formed, tall, slick and strong. They would have been able to pull down a mountain. And I said to myself, if they were in my hands they would be unrecognizable in less than one year. They do not work, and the barley and the oats they get it in abundance, while mine are working hard, early and late, and do not get anything but a small measure of poor food each. So, then, the Human Doctrine would put an end to all injustice."

Orrento: "So you are convinced?"

Alestro: "The stones themselves would be convinced also, and you may rely on it that I shall no more detach myself from your side."

Orrento: "Well, take this sheet of paper, and if you are clever enough you will cause it to come into the hands of Creppo. But, tell me, what is the meaning of all these flags; the city seems to be changed entirely from its natural aspect."

Alestro: "Today, at two o'clock p. m., the Supreme God will be led triumphantly into the temple."

Orrento: "Then I have been very sharp in my time calculations and I have arrived just at the time I wished to get here."

Alestro: "Tell me, do you wish to pass for ignorant?"

Orrento: "Why?"

Alestro: "Well, the way you speak you give me to understand that you believe in it; while I have very soon come to the conclusion and understood plainly that it is all a question of feeding on the undue appropriation of other people's productions, of our produce, we the poor laborers."

Orrento: "I must go to see all what they have prepared for the success of the second part of the intermezzo, all of which will be very useful to our modern Human Society."

Alestro: "But I do not wish to detach myself from you."

Orrento: "Well, let us go together."

There was not a living soul to be seen in the streets because the people, men and women, large and small, had gone to see the grand spectacle, the big show. When Orrento and Alestro reached Rontebri street, they were amazed at seeing it in all its length, and width thickly crowded with members of the Human family.

On both sides of the street, from the windows and balconies, there hung thousands and thousands of flags, while in the centre of the street there was left a large spot of about three meters covered with yellow cloth. At spaces about ten meters apart, there were on both sides of the street strong men dressed in red, with a cap of different colors on their head and a long stick in their hands: and every once in a while they were shouting. At a distance from the Holy Way, Orrento said to Alestro:

"What do you think of it? When they brought him here, they were beating him with sticks, because he did not want to walk, and now on account of his intention to live by deceit without working, they place cloth on the ground so as not to dirty his feet."

I: "I beg pardon, sister, for interrupting you in your relation, but tell me: At what time was that, that the poor people were so ignorant?"

Human Justice: "Why; it is probably not more than about two thousand years, that the members of our Human Society have done the same thing? Was not our brother Emmanuel beaten while carrying his cross on his shoulders, and the sect of crooks

have had the boldness to say that he was God, while he was nothing else than a member of the Human Society? God, it seems to me, must always remain an abstract word, for if God came from nothing, it seems to me that nothing makes nothing. So, if God exists eternally why does he not come to adjust the affairs of our Human Society? What father of a family would he be, who could bear to see his children, some of them who taking part in the production of everything are compelled to live in misery; while others, those who do not work at all are living in riches, wealth and abundance?"

My mother could have remained forever tied to the column, and it was not true that the God of Heaven had compassion on her. I liberated her, and thus must I free my brothers and sisters who are laboring and toiling, from the serfdom of misery."

Humanity: "My daughter, I believe in the God of Heaven."

Human Justice: "And I also, because you educated me that way."

I: "Sister are you through telling me how Orrento's affairs terminated?"

Human Justice: "No."

Alestro said to Orrento: "And yet you have not seen the preparations they have made near the Carbolia gate. They have now been nearly three months making immense preparations."

Orrento: "Therefore, it is there I wish to go."

Alestro: "Yes; but look at the crowd."

Orrento: "Follow me, I shall not speak; if any one should speak you will also tell them that I am crazy."

Orrento elbowed and opened his way towards the centre and commenced to walk on the drapery. Alestro followed him.

The guards commenced to shout: "Get out of the Holy Way, excommunicated ones."

Alestro with mild words told them: "Don't you see that he is crazy? I will guide him."

The people were looking at Orrento who was walking with his head raised upon high, looking on the right and on the left; and he heard that once in a while some one would say: "What a pity. That beautiful youth to be insane."

When Orrento had arrived near the Carbolia gate, he saw that everything was in readiness to start the grand triumphal procession. At the head there was the Supreme God all decked and adorned with very rich drapery, and two guides dressed in red were on each side. The guides were of a tall stature, and when Orrento was near them he stopped to recognize them. Their faces were covered, the only thing that could be seen was their eyes.

Orrento said to them: "Are you not ashamed, that because you do not wish to attend to some little labor every day, you are worshipping an animal that has to be guided by you? Your action is inhuman, because human beings should only believe in the God of Heaven, our Creator."

The guides did not answer. At a short distance there was to be seen a large and high triumphal arch, all decorated with flags of several colors, except white, and in front of the arch there were some letters which Orrento read:

"Hurrah (Viva) the Elephantine Religion and its triumph!"

Orrento passed on, and Alestro followed him. When Orrento arrived near the triumphal arch he saw Creppo seated like a statue of plaster on top of an artistic chariot, and lower down all his ministers were seated, dressed in black; and on the pedestal of the chariot there was written:

"Sacred Elephantine Rite."

Orrento started looking fixedly at Creppo, and their eyes met like a ray of light. Creppo grew pale and arising he shouted to Orrento, and said :

“Our farce, by you alone, is known,
For blindfolded are all the rest;
Unveil our secret!—by chirp or moan,
And your life is at our behest.”

Orrento answered and said :

“My life! What for it do I care?
If your false religion does fall,
A page in history shall bear
My name;—my deeds it shall recall.”

Creppo thought that if he continued listening to Orrento the triumphal procession would indeed be disturbed. So taking hold of the bell he rang it.

Trapolo Scerro, the horn blower, was behind the chariot, on horse-back on a fine full blooded steed, and as soon as the bell had been rung, he took his horn and commenced to blow in full blast to announce to the people that the triumphal procession was starting on its march.

Orrento and Alestro went to post themselves on the side of the street in order to see the triumphal march pass by.

The trumpets, horns and other musical instruments commenced to resound very loudly, and the people started shouting at the top of their voices:

“Hurrah for (Viva) the Supreme God!”

Orrento was beside himself with rage, and with his eyes fixed on Creppo, who was looking on the ground, shouting, he said to him:

“All of you who look on the ground,
Are traitors, knaves, rascals arrant!
In war and blood, you have us drowned,
To keep us slaves and ignorant.

“The day shall come, and doubt it not,
When the son of toil, with more light,
Shall destroy all your wealth ill-got;
And at last, make his life more bright.”

Orrento was not yet quite through uttering these last words when he heard some one on his left side tell him:

“Orrento is your name, 'tis true!
But that name causes us no fear.
We triumph now, you own we do!
We care not for your threats so drear.”

Orrento turned around and he saw that the one who was answering him was none other than Gallonetti, who was seated on the top of the second triumphal chariot, dressed all in green. In several spots all over his garments one could see very rich gold embroidery. On his shoulders, they were red. On his head he wore a crown of gold of five different pieces (or stages). In his lap he was carrying a sword. At his side sat his wife, Lacrinta, a young woman of beautiful appearance, habits and customs, superbly dressed; on her neck hung a necklace of very rich jewels, and on her head she wore a crown of gold, in which glittered very rich diamonds.

Lower down sat all the friends of Gallonetti, wearing clothes of several colors, and showing, indeed, that they no longer belonged to the common people, but were now Gallonetti's imps, living in idleness and thinking constantly of the best and quickest way to get rid of the poor people.

Orrento in a loud voice said to Gallonetti:

“You traitor vile! Inhuman wretch!
From you and yours comes all this harm!
From your wicked mind, this you fetch;
Of a cruel tyrant, you wield the arm.

“You think poor people ignorant,
And always will be so; but, no;
The day shall come, you miscreant,
With more light spread, and they shall
know.”

Gallonetti then said:

“What! you dare speak to me, you knave!
What do I care for what you know;
The people now about me rave;
They’re blind and don’t see where they go.

“I’m king:—above you all, I tow’r.
Creppo, god-like, is set over all.
We and our friends have wealth, have pow’r.
Toil’s produce is at our call.”

Orrento shouted towards the people, and said:

“Open your eyes, toiling brothers,
See how your rulers do treat you.
Toil without cease, all for others;
Want, though you work, ’cause they cheat you.

In Heav’n there’s a God full of might,
More potent than the Elephant.
To worship this one ’tis not right,
Down with Elephantine cant.”

Orrento and Alestro detached themselves from the crowd, as fast as they could, and started going down the Aldochina street. An immense crowd followed them. Gallonetti, Creppo and all their friends were shouting after them:

“Let go that poor fellow, he is crazy!”

But hundreds of voices answered: “You are the truly insane ones, you who wish to live on the appropriation of others’ labors.”

Orrento turned around and saw that well nigh onto ten thousand persons were following him. He stopped and said in a loud voice: “Brothers, laborers, the ideal of liberty, of brotherhood and fraternity has penetrated into your hearts. The privileged classes have taken it into their heads, that we, laborers, or rather modern slaves, are ignorant; but they do not think that we are members of the same Human Society to which they belong, and that we are endowed with the same human intellect that they possess.

“Our Human Society has the right to be based upon the Human Doctrine and not upon the Elephantine Doctrine. The Human Doctrine says, that our Human Society, only can dispense from the duty of working and laboring towards the production and distribution of the things produced, all the members that are under age, because these must attend to their educational instruction, must go to school; then all the sick, and all those who unfortunately are unable to work, as well as all those who have reached an advanced age. Such members will nevertheless enjoy the same rights as those who are working.

“All the members who are able-bodied, strong, vigorous and robust, and who through vagabondage and laziness do not wish to take up their share of the work shall be excluded and expelled from our Human Society, on condition that they may re-enter and

be re-admitted whenever they feel disposed to take up their share, being convinced that labor is the basis of our society.

“Labor must be, must exist, in order to procure the things necessary to our Human Society; but not at the will of some member or other, like Gallonetti, Creppo, and all their friends, who have called me crazy, while I can describe to you how and why the true crazy people are they themselves.

“Because they have succeeded in living without having to work, they gather in their meetings and come together in their Council Chambers, and there think of and devise nothing else but how tyrannically and despotically to invent means and ways the best calculated to extort from us and expropriate us out of all what we produce by our labor. Thousands and thousands of our laboring brothers, have been and are working at the manufacturing of weapons, arms and engines of destruction, and do not understand that by so doing they are inhuman and as bad as, if not worse than, the vagabonds and brigands; because we do not need and should not have any use for, their infamous malproductions. Such members, who are thus working to the destruction of their fellow men ought to be shunned. Keep away and flee from them as from the plague. Do not associate with them, but look upon them as the greatest enemies of our Human Society. These are the ones who provide weapons for our despoilers, and if they do not understand that they are inhuman, I can tell you that they are the greatest imbeciles to be found in our society. For Gallonetti, Creppo and all their friends are not even able to manufacture anything as simple as a single nail. If Gallonetti did not find among our laboring class some persons willing and even anxious to manufacture weapons for him, he never would have become the tyrant he now is; and

today, instead of having hundreds of thousands of our brothers under arms, he would not have been able at all to succeed in his inhuman ideal.

“Dear brothers, workmen and laborers, the greatest efforts for us to make is to spread among the masses of the laboring class the Human Doctrine. This not only will purify their intellects which are sick and unclean, being corrupted by the false doctrines they have inhaled, but it will also make known to them that all the members of the Human Society are equal.”

At these last words all those who were listening to him commenced to clap their hands and shouting cries of joy.

Orrento then made a sign that they should start on their way and he commenced to sing as follows:

THE STRENGTH OF THE HUMAN DOCTRINE.

“For us, here, no more false doctrine,
Human Society is our guide,
Down, down, with the Elephantine,
Human Doctrine rules far and wide.

“Human Doctrine, Humanity,
The world over, in all nations;
Based upon true Fraternity,
No more classes—no more stations.

“Work for all, and little of that;
Plenty for all, no want, no wealth;
No weapons, no arms, round or flat,
To hurt or kill—those that have health.

“Then hurrah for Human Doctrine!
Hurrah for Human Society!
Down with every false doctrine!
Above all towers Humanity.”

All those who were following Orrento were singing the Chorus. The singing could be heard at a very long distance. The Aldochina street was in a straight line direct to the large square where the temple was erected. A great number of persons who were taking part in the triumphal procession were already arriving at the square of the temple, and hearing the singing, were listening in order to ascertain whence it came. Some boys were running towards the Aldochina street, others were following them and in a short time the entrance to the street was filled with people and as fast as the people were arriving at the square of the temple, instead of stopping there, just as fast did they run following the others to hear the singing of Orrento and his followers.

The animal was getting tired of the great and long triumphal procession; the two guides who were leading it, and who had received strict orders from Creppo that at any time and every time it should stop they were to kneel down, were also getting tired of such doings. When they had reached near the place where there was a row of tall trees (spoken of before), it stopped again. The two guides had thought not to kneel down this time, but instead, they were pulling at the elephant with all their might and strength. Suddenly the elephant raised his head causing the guides to be thrown to the ground. A branch of a tree had been broken off because it obstructed the street and the elephant knocked his head against the stub. Little by little the people commenced to notice that from under his right eye there was running a stream of blood; the animal was heard uttering plaintive cries and moans; masses of people were making a thousand efforts to get near from all sides and ascertain what had happened.

The moaning and roaring of the animal and the cries and shouts of the populace were increasing, but finally the Supreme God arrived in front of the temple.

The first triumphal chariot on which sat Creppo representing the flower of society, was now entering upon the square. Here the scene was terrible because the tumult and roaring were all the time increasing, so much so that it seemed that the world was nearing its end.

Orrento with his followers were also arriving on the square, still singing the *Strength of the Human Doctrine*; and all those who were already occupying the street and who had formed a part of the triumphal procession joined Orrento because here there was singing, while on the other side there was moaning and weeping.

When Orrento had finished singing his song, he shouted and said:

“Laboring brothers and sisters, this is the greatest lesson you could take or get to find out and acknowledge the very great difference there exists between the Human Doctrine and the Elephantine Doctrine. With the Human Doctrine there shall always be:

“With mirth and song and joyful strains,
Love, sweet content, peace and plenty,
Let us banish cares, want and pains,
Harmonious Fraternity!

“Elephantine Doctrine, away!
It means nothing but abject ruin;
While working always, night and day,
Live in want,—the prey of rapine!

“Accept and take up my ideal,
O Human Society, so great,
More civilized, yes, a great deal,
With Human Doctrine is your fate.”

Orrento's words were penetrating the ears and hearts of the poor people, much better than those of Creppo, because they had a great significance and meaning, and pointed out something good to all concerned. When Orrento ceased to speak, a great many shouted:

“Hurrah for the Human Doctrine!”

Orrento, turning towards Creppo, said to him:

“An oracle of great deceit
Shamelessly here you represent,
And you oppose in your conceit
The progress on which we are bent.

“That cruel religion forswear,
Join us with your intelligence,
Human Doctrine be all your care;
Human Culture in excellence.”

Creppo answered, saying:

“What care I for Human Culture,
If I have wealth, riches and gains.
Without work, like to a vulture,
On my prey, I live—yours the pains!”

At this moment Gallonetti and all his friends were entering, and seeing Creppo debating with Orrento and shouting loud he said to those who were with him in the second triumphal chariot:

“Dear friends, quick, come down, run, arrest
Orrento. His pois’nous speeches
Will spoil our enjoyments.—The best
Cannot resist what he preaches.

“Work and toil will soon be our lot,
If Orrento’s designs succeed;
On equal terms, e’en to a dot,
They will treat us,—beware; take heed.”

Gallonetti’s friends alighted from the chariot and advanced towards Orrento, while Creppo was preparing to speak to the people.

Hundreds of persons were perching upon the trees in order better to hear what Creppo would have to say. Gallonetti’s friends arrived at the spot where Orrento had been and looked around and asked of several persons what had become of him. As if by magic Orrento had disappeared, and after having made all possible researches they brought to Gallonetti the news of Orrento’s disappearance. He reproved them and said:

“Go, and do not come back to me until you have him.”

The triumphal chariot in which Gallonetti was went to take its position on the left side of the front of the temple, while the first chariot had stopped on the right side, and the Supreme God was in the centre, with his head facing the people, who did not stop weeping, on seeing the animal with his face all covered with blood.

Creppo arose and turning towards the people, said:

“Weep brothers and sisters, perhaps your tears will appease the anger of our Supreme God. For Orrento who at first seemed and was thought to be insane has now fully demonstrated and plainly

proven that instead of a crazy man he is a disturber of the peace, an agitator, who is trying to raise up the people in revolt against us and the Supreme God. He is excommunicated, a man without honor and one of the worst enemies of God. With his Human Doctrine he intends to lead us into and compel us to work, while we cannot do so. My hands are sacred, and so are those of all the ministers of the Holy Elephantine Religion, and it would be a terrible sacrilege for us to go to work, as well as for Gallonetti, because his person also is sacred."

At this point he was interrupted by a voice which seemed to come out of the air, and said:

"If it is a sacrilege for you to work, it must be a sacrilege to eat."

It was Orrento's voice which was resounding in Creppo and Gallonetti's ears like the noise of thunder.

Creppo trembled and shook like an aspen leaf, and thought of all he had to say; there was Orrento who understood the meaning of his deceiving words which he (Creppo) used in order to deceive the poor people.

Gallonetti had received a second report from his friends to the effect that Orrento was not to be found anywhere among the people, and he had made a sign to Creppo to speak freely.

Creppo thought that if the people were to have faith in the Supreme God and in him, it was necessary to have the first miracle performed; but the voice of Orrento was being heard, Creppo stopped speaking and looked towards Gallonetti.

Gallonetti arose and shouting said to him:

"Creppo, show now, in its full force,
Of your great science, the magic power,

Propagate *this*, without remorse,
 'Fore Orrento dare not to cower."

Creppo:—

"You know my science is void, and vain,
 And inhuman, spite of our art;
 Human Doctrine, alone humane,
 True science, burst from Orrento's heart."

Gallonetti:—

"Behold the force at my command,
 Brigand-like armed up to the teeth;
 His artifice could not withstand,
 And if caught, he must die the death."

Creppo:—

"Be convinced that you're mistaken
 Orrento's following's legion;
 The population is shaken,
 They down us and our religion.

"You wish us to keep this still on,
 Infernal, though our doctrine be;
 But once our god is kill'd and gone,
 Enlightenment 'mong men you'll see."

Turning towards the people Creppo said:

"My people, *my people*, MY PEOPLE!"

The voice of Orrento was again heard shouting:

"Traitor, traitor, the people have a right to be masters of themselves."

Creppo bold-facedly continued to speak, saying:

"You have wept, the ground is bathed in your tears, because you have seen that our Supreme God has shed much blood from his face. Our Superior

God has wished to prove your hearts, and the faith you have in him and in me. He will show you his power. He will know how to punish and how to reward all those who do not or who do believe in him. You have seen that that which has wounded our Supreme God was the trunk of the tree, and it will be accursed forever."

And turning towards the Elephant, he said:

"Oh! Supreme God, do you curse the tree which has offended you?"

The elephant inclined his head, and Creppo, turning towards the people, said:

"The tree which has offended our Supreme God is cursed; it will not have any more than three days of life."

The door of the temple was opened and Creppo and all the ministers of the Elephantine Religion descended from the triumphal chariot, so did also Gallonetti and his wife, and all his friends, and walking slowly they came near the animal. The two guides took the Supreme God by the muzzle and trunk and started walking, describing half a circle, they entered the temple.

After the Supreme God entered Creppo and all the ministers of the Elephantine Religion, with the *rod of truth* raised aloft.

The two guides having arrived with the animal at the farther end inside of the temple, stopped, and making the animal make a turn about they placed him with his head facing the door, then they knelt before the Supreme God.

Creppo and all the ministers took their positions before the Supreme God with their backs towards him and their faces looking towards the door. Alestro, coming from out of the crowd, wished to enter the temple also, but two guards stopped him, prevented him from entering and ordered him out.

Alestro refused to do so, and said: "If this is the temple of the true God, you have no right whatsoever to stop me."

One of the guards answered him: "Friend, these are the orders we have received, and it is our duty to have them respected and observed. As long as the king and all those forming his suite have not entered, no one belonging to the lower class of the people can enter."

Alestro: "Tell me; you and your companions, do you belong to the high or to the low class of people?"

The guard answered: "I and my companion, we are laborers and working people, and belong to the low class of the people."

Alestro: "And do you not perceive then, that as far as we poor laborers are concerned, this Supreme God whom we have today brought here so triumphantly into this temple, is a false god, and is nothing else than a stupid animal. If he were the true God, Creppo and all his ministers would not stand there with their backs turned toward him. It is our own fault, poor laborers, that we have those iniquitous laws made against us respected, because if ignorance once disappeared from among the laboring class, they would no longer call us the low class, but all united together we would be called a civilized people."

While Alestro was talking with the two guards, Gallonetti and his wife and all their friends were entering the temple and after them the lower class of the people were allowed to enter.

The two guards had noticed that the former had been entering with a very proud and arrogant air, while the latter, the lower class, were entering humbly and religiously. The words spoken by Alestro came back to their minds, and the one who

had spoken with him, approaching his comrade, laid his left hand on his companion's right shoulder, and said to him:

"Tremio, what do you think of it?"

Tremio answered: "Well, have you not noticed with what arrogance Gallonetti and all those high personages entered, giving it to understand that the world is theirs, that the laborers have a right only to do their work, and to receive in compensation for it barely enough to appease the pangs of hunger and to cover their bare limbs. If this Supreme God were just, is it not true that he would not permit them thus to come here in his temple, not as they should to worship him, but rather to show to the poor people their elegant clothes and fine attire. And this Supreme God instead of punishing them, recompenses them and overwhelms them with riches and wealth. I am sorry, dear Friso, that I cannot here demonstrate to you, how the poor people shall one day feel satisfied and happy for having lived in wretchedness, while the rich will be condemned to suffer forever."

Friso: "All right; we may go now wherever you see fit; we have, for the present nothing to do here."

They went out and walked through several streets through which the triumphal procession had been passing; they thus arrived near the cursed tree. Friso hastened forward to go and sit down under that tree, while Tremio, on the contrary, was hastening to get away from it, and calling Friso to him, said that for the Supreme God's sake he should not sit down there, otherwise if he should be noticed doing so, he would be excommunicated by Creppo.

Friso: "It is too late. His excommunication can no longer reach me. But perhaps his infamy may. He may have me arrested by our own ignor-

ant comrades, the laborers. Have you not seen yesterday, while we were keeping watch outside of the door to the dining room, that they had the welfare and comfort of this their god very little at heart, while they were acting with so much lordliness that they barely tasted anything of the many and several dishes that were brought to them; because they were sure that the servants would bring plenty of them successively; and towards the end they were not even able any longer to taste of the last dishes brought, and they allowed them to be taken away untasted and untouched. They were drinking some of the best wines and champagne. As for us we had to be satisfied with a little soup and with drinking water out of a bucket. That poor man was right in reproving us a while ago, when we did not let him enter the temple, before the king and all of the privileged class had entered first, and we made him wait till after the entrance of those high classed people, when the lower class was allowed to enter in their turn. Had not the poorer class a better right to enter first than the rich? Have I not seen myself with my own eyes for the last three months the poor workingmen and laborers and their horses work at the erection of this temple from early morning till late at night, like slaves, and their animals bringing the stones and other materials; and for all this they did not receive any compensation whatever. They were doing it all on account of the great faith they had in the Supreme God."

Tremio: "I don't come because I do not wish to be caught so soon that I am against the holy religion."

Fristo: "Well, I shall come where you think best, because I want to hear in what way the poor people ought to rejoice on account of leading a life of misery here to be happy in the future."

So they went and sat down on the grass at a certain distance away and in front of the tree.

Tremio: "Some days ago Creppo has issued a special invitation to the poor people to go and listen to a very interesting lecture. So, of course, I went also, and I found that the temporary house of our Supreme God was filled to over-flowing. At the very start he said, that the rich should use towards the poor people the Elephantine moral, that of the remainder of their table they should give to the poor old people, or to the poor children who were unable to work, living in wretchedness and deprived of all means of support. And that if they did not do so, at their death they would be cast down into hell and suffer eternally. Now, you know as well as I do, that the rich very often cast away the remainder from their banquets or let them spoil and rot, rather than to give them to appease the pangs of hunger of so many starving wretches. So you see the difference there will be between those who live in riches, wealth and abundance of all things in this world, and those who have to spend their lives in want, misery and wretchedness. When Creppo commenced to speak that way about the poor people my heart leaped for joy. He said that the poor people who knew how to bear patiently with misery and sufferings, are sure one day to go and enjoy the triumph of paradise. And he said also that anything that happens to us here displeasing or disagreeable, we must accept it and say that it is in penance for our sins and thus offer it to our Supreme God."

Fristo: "Tremio, as you know, I can neither read nor write, but I can only tell the truth. Tell me one thing: Suppose we should all live in misery and would offer our sufferings to the Supreme God as

Creppo has said, we would all go to heaven, would we not?"

Tremio: "Certainly."

Fristo: "And if we should all live in riches and wealth, like Creppo and Gallonetti and others of their kind, willing to believe Creppo, we should all go to hell as you say?"

Tremio: "Of course."

Fristo: "Bravo! And if we should all take part and do our share in the work of producing what is necessary, and no one should live any more either in poverty, or in wealth, willing to believe Creppo, we should go neither to heaven nor to hell, would that not be better?"

"You have told the truth."

These words uttered by a third person, resounded into their ears.

They were surprised for having been discovered in their conversation, and looking around, they could not see any one.

Tremio, full of fear, arose and turning towards Fristo, said to him: "Let us go quickly away from here, if we do not wish to be punished."

Fristo: "How fearful you are, do you notice that your mind is paralyzed by the lying words of Creppo. I have heard him speak but once, and I have found out that all his talk, all his speeches and discourses cannot enter into my head. The true hell I have it within my heart. As you know my parents are old, and my father after having labored during his whole long life, expects to have to go a-begging to support his family. He had hopes in me to give him a little relief and help in his efforts. I am not a vagabond. You know me better than anyone else. If I have enlisted as a royal guard, it was because of the scarcity of work. The poor, miserable pittance they give me as pay, I try to economize as much as

I can of it, being careful not to incur any undue expenses, so that I may share my small salary with my father. As often as I saw him reach out his hands for alms, as often did it seem to me that the sky was falling on top of me to annihilate me." (And he started weeping).

Tremio: "You are right; but with whom shall we side? We must offer it to the Supreme God."

Fristo arose quickly, walked a few steps forward, raised his eyes and hands towards heaven and exclaimed in a very loud voice: "Oh! God of Heaven, if you exist, why do you not reveal the secret with which we might solve the problem of our Human Society in general."

Tremio was also looking towards Heaven, and when Fristo was through with his prayer, they heard a voice saying to them: "The problem of the Human Society can only be solved by the Human Doctrine."

Tremio was frightened on hearing such words uttered, believing them to be coming indeed from the very lips of the true God and turning towards Fristo, he said to him: "If you please, let us return to the temple; I feel my mind entirely confused."

Fristo: "Do you not see that the truth is making its way with gigantic strides."

Tremio: "I don't know whom to believe. Creppo seems to me to be a holy man, and you yourself have heard him say that the Human Doctrine is not only contrary to the government, but also against the Holy Religion."

Fristo: "Yes, but he is in favor of the whole of our Human Society of which Creppo and Gallonetti are members just as we are."

Tremio: "Then what will become of Gallonetti's honor and Creppo's dignity?"

Fristo: "They will be looked upon as all other members of our Human Society; not but that a great number of our members look upon them as true leeches and suckers of human blood."

Tremio: "By the Supreme God with all what you do not know, neither knowing how to read or write, you are capable of convincing Creppo and his whole science. Your words would break the heart of the worst tyrant. Where have you learned all these fine discourses?"

Fristo: "I have been one of Orrento's friends."

Tremio: "What! When Creppo has excommunicated him?"

Fristo: "No, Orrento's heart is human."

Orrento was upon the tree, and without making any noise he came down to the ground, walked slowly up to them and approached them unexpectedly. Fristo saw him come and went to meet him. Orrento embraced him with his right arm, while with his left he embraced Tremio, and said to them:

"We are brothers, and I recommend you not to use any weapons any more against the members of our Human Society."

Tremio did not know at all who it was that had embraced him; but when Fristo told him that it was Orrento, he wondered and said what Creppo had said that Orrento was a bad subject, a disturber of the peace, and now said he, I am very, very well persuaded that it is quite the contrary; for if all those who compose the armies would accept this human ideal, certainly universal peace would be established.

Fristo: "I don't feel a heart any more to go back to render such a vile service as to protect those who have reduced the poor people to a state of the most abject misery."

Tremio: "And I am also of your opinion."



Creppo, by means of his Inhuman Science, paralyzes the minds of the poor people.

Orrento: "If you will help the human movement you must return and spread the Human Doctrine among the army."

Tremio: "And if we happen to be found out?"

Orrento: "Oppose then human courage. It is better to die for the defense of *Humanity* than to protect its oppressors."

Tremio: "What would be the best kind of talk to use to convert the members of the army to Human Doctrine?"

Orrento: "Not to do to others what you would find displeasing if done to yourself."

Tremio: "With that sentence only I am sure that they will not understand me."

Orrento: "Well, how would it seem to you to receive a stroke of a lance or of whatever other kind of an infernal engine of war and destruction, in order to be dispatched to the great beyond?"

Tremio: "Certainly that would be very displeasing to me. But we have sworn our oath, to defend our country."

Orrento: "The word country or Fatherland has many meanings. Our country is the earth, because without it our Human Society would not exist. In another way, the word country means bread, that which is our principal article of food. Bread and all the other food produced come to us from the earth; but in order to obtain them it is necessary that the members of the Human Society should cultivate it at the sweat of their brow. Now, as you well know, those who take their share of this labor are only the poor people, and after they have produced abundantly, the small minority have the cowardly courage, the audacity and boldness to keep them down in misery and wretchedness, by means of the armed soldiers, who themselves are none others than the children of that same poor people; and if you

want to stick to your oath, you defend it in order that they should get possession of all that which they have produced, and then you have defended your country, and fulfilled your duty.

"Go, do not lose any more time, and extending his right hand to Tremio, he kissed him and did the same to Fristo, and they set off to repair to the temple."

Tremio, while they were walking on their way, was thinking on all he had heard Orrento say. He pulled out a white handkerchief from his pocket and started wiping his eyes.

Fristo noticed it, and said: "Why do you weep?"

Tremio answered: "Do you think I have the heart of a tiger? Although my folks are well off, and the necessities of life have never been wanting to them, and I have been brought up amidst riches and wealth; yet, Orrento's human words have indeed persuaded me that Human Society is based upon false civilization. Not more than two months have passed since the great tragedy occurred between the governing forces and the poor people who were asking for their rights as members of the Human Society, and instead of *Gallonetti* and his counsel going to work to provide for the improvement and betterment of their conditions, they have determined to disband popular democracy at any and all cost. I have seen the demonstration for liberty in the streets; it was composed of men and women, small and large; they numbered more than the two-thirds of the inhabitants of the city; badly and poorly dressed and with faces as wan and pale as death. They had no weapons; they carried a placard on which could be read:

'WE WANT BREAD AND WORK.'

But remorse has come to my heart. Perhaps it

is mercy of human conscience. I heard the trumpets sound the call for the gathering of the royal guards. I walked faster to be present at the roll call, when of a sudden I saw appear before me, the third corps of the *braves*, commanded by the great captain, Langri on horseback and who seemed to be leading a herd of cattle to the slaughter house. Those who were taking part in this demonstration had now stopped; perhaps, they were waiting for other oppressed ones to join them. I hastened as fast as possible and when I arrived at Leria street, the great captain, Langri, who had both sides of the avenues to the street occupied by his men, was himself in the rear leading with him the son of Paul Scerro, who was carrying a horn hanging from his shoulder. I went to take a position in the yard of the Seven Brothers, from whence I could have a better view of the actions and movements of the demonstrating crowd. When I reached the place of exit, I heard the horn blow, and the soldiers rush forward. I turned around and saw those *braves* rush like wild beasts eager for human blood. They threw themselves upon the poor demonstrating crowd, killing and wounding without pity or mercy. These poor people took to flight because they had no weapons wherewith to defend themselves; the demonstration seemed broken up, and the *braves* thought already they had gained a victory and rejoiced over it. But presently the demonstrating crowd reappeared this time carrying arms. They felt indignant at seeing themselves oppressed by their equals and armed with the weapons of indignation, they commenced to throw stones at the *braves*, who seeing themselves assailed from all parts withdrew towards the place where the big captain, Langri, was posted. I thought that the Royal Guards would also have to take part in the re-establishment of order, and that if I should

not present myself I would be punished. So I started on my way; but I heard immediately the trot of a horse behind me. I turned around and saw the big captain, Langri, spurring on his horse to a galop, making all possible efforts and diligence in order not to be seen or caught by the poor people who were fighting to liberate themselves from their oppressors. And I was saying to myself: How dear he holds his life."

Fristo: "This has happened to you rather recently. As for me, I have understood long ago, and that very well, too, how all these commanders stay at a distance from any massacre. They make the poor devils fight their wars, while they themselves derive all the benefits that may accrue from them; therefore, they always speak of war. But if the poor were to wage war against the rich, then everything would be changed; they would no longer speak of war, because such a word would frighten them."

Orrento said one day: "We must combat with our own intelligence and not with lances. The word war is the most terrible blasphemy Human Society can utter."

We arrived at the temple and when we entered Creppo was speaking about the Elephantine Doctrine and at the end he said: "Our Holy Religion may be fought against but not conquered."

And turning towards Gallonetti, he said to him: "Oh! Gallonetti, who by the will of our Supreme God and by the power of this great nation have become king, it is your duty to protect our Holy Elephantine Religion."

Gallonetti arose and, unsheathing his sword, he walked three steps forward and in a very loud voice said: "I swear in the name of the Supreme God that I will cause his holy religion to be defended as I would my own person, not only by the power of

the press, but if it is necessary with arms, and woe betide whomsoever shall offend it; for, a government cannot exist without religion."

At these last words a cry was heard saying: "Orrento was right in saying that religion and government have been instituted to maintain and keep the poor people in slavery."

He who had shouted this was Alestro, who, in his own way had found the means to go and kneel down between the two guides and had converted them to Human Doctrine.

Creppo and Gallonetti saw themselves unmasked, and their false institutions also, and they had to have recourse to means of violence against those who had their eyes opened, and who were asking for their rights as members of the Human Society.

The feast was now terminated and the people tired of the long procession, retired. The temple was closed, and the Supreme God was left alone with a little lighted lamp.

When Creppo had reached his home he sent an invitation to Gallonetti and his counsel to attend the great Creppolian Counsel.

A large hall splendidly illuminated and decorated with red cloth and a very large portrait of the Supreme God hung in the center of the interior front wall was prepared for the occasion. On the right of the Supreme God's picture, was the picture of Creppo and on the left that of Gallonetti. On the floor near the pictures there was a table of a rectangular form and four chairs artistically worked; two on the front side and one each on both lateral sides. In front of the table there were a great many chairs divided in two sections, and leaving a wide passage in the middle which corresponded with the entrance door. On the right of the entrance door there was a

sign-board bearing the following inscription:

“Sacred Ministry of the Holy Elephantine Religion.”

On the left there was another one on which could be read the following:

“Gallonetti’s High Counsellors.”

In the background of the hall a door opened presently and an old man with long hair, white as snow, entered carrying two large books in his arms, and wearing a large cloak. After having entered he hastened towards the table and in the twinkling of an eye threw everything upon the floor, and quickly came to the door through which he had just entered took a key from his pocket and locked the door with it.

When he had made sure that the door was securely locked, he went back to the place where he had thrown the cloak and the books, picked up the cloak, which was a square piece of cloth like a tablecloth, and he went to spread it upon the table. The cloth hung down to the floor on all four sides. On the front side there was written in very large letters, so that it could be read from a distance:

“Whosoever discloses a single word of the deliberations of this counsel is a traitor.”

As soon as he had finished adjusting the cloth, he bent down to pick up the two books, but as he was doing so, and in the act of stretching out his arms towards the books, he heard a loud knock at the door. He left the books where they were and ran to the door, and asked: “Who is there?”

The person who had knocked answered from outside:

“I am Gallonetti’s confidential guard.”

He who was inside was Arconti, Creppo’s first chamberlain, and he said: “I have received strict orders from Creppo not to let in any one unless he

be provided with an entrance card, signed by Gallonetti, and stamped with Creppo's seal."

Gallonetti's confidential guard replied: "That is why I have been posted here, for I am the one who is to examine the tickets."

Arconti then opened the door and a young man, about twenty-five years of age entered. He was of a tall stature and dressed in a very rich uniform. He wore a green vest, white trousers and black boots which reached up to his knees, a red cap, and a small sword was hanging from his belt on the left side.

When Arconti saw him, he seemed very much surprised, and stretching out his right hand he said to him:

"Excuse me Clavio, for not having opened the door sooner, for I did not recognize your voice."

Clavio: "Well, have you made sure that the entrance door is securely locked?"

Arconti: "No, because the captain of the surveillance guards had told me that all the doors were securely locked."

Clavio: "I don't trust any one and I wish to make sure for myself."

Arconti: "I am coming along."

Just at the moment when they had gotten away from the rear door, there entered through the same a young man, tall and robust, dressed all in white, even to his cap; he walked slowly towards the table and crept under it to hide himself, being fully concealed from view on all sides by the large cloth that hung to the floor.

Clavio, turning towards Arconti, said to him:

"Have you closed the back door?"

Arconti: "No, I have forgotten it; and without saying another word he ran to lock it."

Clavio: "Take care that the chain be well secured."

And he continued walking. Having arrived at the entrance door, he tried to force it, but he found it locked in perfect order. So he returned towards Arconti, who had just picked up the books and placed them upon the table, one on each side of it.

Clavio: "Is everything ready?"

Arconti: "No."

Clavio: "Make haste."

And taking his watch out of his pocket to look at the time he said:

"It is eight o'clock; there is no time to lose."

Arconti opened the back door and went out, and Clavio shut it after him using all his strength to do so.

After a minute or so Clavio heard a knock at the door and asked: "Who is there?"

The person who had knocked answered: "It is I, Arconti."

Clavio: "Are you alone?"

Arconti: "Yes."

Clavio: "Look around you if no one is concealed anywhere about there. I shall not open the door until you have made very sure of this."

Arconti: "There is no one about here. Open the door."

Clavio opened the door and as soon as Arconti had entered he locked it again with haste.

Arconti was carrying two inkstands and pens and he went to lay them down upon the table. He placed them near the books and then turning towards Clavio he said to him:

"By the Supreme God, I don't understand why all this fear is exhibited."

Clavio: "O Arconti, the times are past when one could live tranquilly. The poor people have at

last understood that they also are members of the Human Society, and they are demanding their rights. If it were not for my father I surely would not have enlisted among the Royal Guards, for I am young and I have always been in contact with different kinds of people and I have had the opportunity of noticing that the old people only believe in this Elephantine Religion, but the young people do not want to hear of it any more. I was posted between the first and the second triumphal chariots when Orrento was finishing debating with Gallonetti and commenced to go down through Al-dochina street, and of all those who were following him there was not one old man to be found."

Arconti: "Young people have no sense and are very little interested in religion."

Clavio: "In speaking thus you offend me also. While Gallonetti has sent for me, and has told me that I alone would be trusted, and that I should see to it that the Council be in every sense strictly secret, so that the poor people should not know anything of what has been done or said here, and about the means to be adopted against all those who want to break down the religious and governing constitutions in order to substitute to them the Human Doctrine."

Arconti: "I did not mean you when I spoke; even though you may believe so. I wish to go now and put on my large uniform."

Clavio: "Go and return quickly."

Arconti went to the door on the right side, unlocked it and went out. Clavio very quickly locked the door after him and commenced to walk about in front of the table.

After a moment he heard a knock at the entrance door. He ran quickly to it and when he had reached it, he put his hand to his right ear in the

action of listening attentively and then asked: "Who is there?"

The person that had been knocking answered: "Captain Ariolo, Commander of the first squadron of the Royal Guards."

Clavio: "How many guards have you with you?"

Captain Ariolo: "Eight."

Clavio: "Are you all provided with entrance tickets?"

Captain Ariolo: "Yes, sir."

Clavio: "You are allowed to enter one at a time, and tell your guards not to make any noise at all."

He opened the door, and the captain handed him his entrance card.

Clavio examined it attentively and said: "All right; you can come in."

As soon as the captain had entered, Clavio quickly locked the door again. The captain looked at him in the face and said to him: "Why do you not let the others come in?"

Clavio: "I will not, until you tell me first who and what they are."

Captain: "I have done my duty to the best of my ability. I have selected all those who to the best of my knowledge might have some interest as well in the government as in the religion; they are all rich and sons of worthy and respectable families. Only one among them is poor, but he is devoted to the cause of the government."

Clavio: "So you do not take the responsibility?"

Captain: "No; I can only answer for my own person. Your duty is to let in all those who are provided with and bearers of an entrance ticket."

Clavio: "You are right, Captain. That is, for the present, but not later on."

He opened the door and they entered successively one after the other. Clavio examined their tickets as they were coming in until he was through with the last one of the eight.

At the moment that he was in the action of locking the door, the young man who was hid under the table, threw a sheet of paper upon it.

The captain arranged the guards in a row in the vacant space between the two sections of chairs. He then took out a little pocket note-book from his pocket, and called out, looking at the front page of it:

"Arco Meressi; Trivolo Spargo, come forward and follow me."

The two guards walked up behind the captain, who led them in front of the picture of the Supreme God, and after having saluted it with their lances, he went to place them, one near Creppo's picture and the other near Gallonetti's. Then he returned to the other guards and called out:

"Rumoli Fristo; Giaccola Tremio, come forward and follow me."

And he went to post them one on the right and the other on the left of the table, at the distance of two steps. Then, he returned again to the remaining guards and once more called out:

"Sfero Agolina; Cremonti Solesti, come forward and follow me."

And again he went to post these two, one on the right hand and the other on the left hand of the point where the two sections or rows were ending near the side walls. Then he returned once more to the last two remaining guards and again called out:

"Artelone Carbecco; Savio Perini, come forward and follow me."

And he led them to the entrance door from the square, and placed one on the right and the other on the left of it.

While the captain was posting the guards at their respective places, Clavio keeping very silent, walked up and down near the door, and at every little noise he heard on the outside, he approached nearer to listen whether other persons were coming. The captain had given strict orders to the guards not to speak until after the Council had ended its deliberations. They were all in perfect silence, when there came a knock at the back door.

Clavio asked: "Who is there?"

The one who was knocking answered: "Arconti, first Chamberlain to Creppo."

Clavio unlocked the door, and Arconti entered the large hall, his aspect completely changed. His hair was carefully combed, he wore a vest of yellow silk, which hung down to his feet, and the sleeves narrowing near the shoulders and very wide near the wrists; a three-pointed hat all embroidered with gold. From each point of his hat there hung a small tassel of gold; two on the sides towards the back of his head, and one beating in front against his forehead.

Clavio locked the door quickly as soon as Arconti had come in and looked at him from head to foot with amazement and said: "Arconti, is this your grand uniform?"

Arconti: "Creppo has designed it itself, and he has struck a nice design, in keeping with the position I hold. For if the poor people happen to see me in this costume they will take me for a very holy man and much more so than they will Creppo."

Clavio: "It looks to me like as if you were the magician of the Yellow Coast."

While Clavio and Arconti were thus talking together, Captain Ariolo had come near and was laughing heartily.

Arconti went to take his position behind the two chairs he had prepared for Creppo and Gallonetti, at two steps distance from them.

A knock was heard at the entrance door.

Clavio asked: "Who is there?"

The person who had been knocking, answered: "Luvio Terrelli, Commander of the Guards of Honor of Creppo."

Clavio: "Are you all provided with tickets of admission?"

And the commander answered: "Yes, sir."

Clavio unlocked the door and the commander entered, as also the guards, the one after the other in succession.

The captain, after having handed over the tickets of admittance to Clavio, without saying a word, was walking on with short and quick steps. The guards followed him, walking at the same gait. When they had arrived within a few steps from the table he made them face left and on the file left and after they had marched a few steps, he commanded face right and file on the right. And when they had reached the table, they commenced to describe a demi-circle, and having reached within a short distance from the left of the table, he stopped and commanded: "Halt front, right front!"

Arconti at a few steps distance was surrounded by guards of honor and he commenced to feel as proud as a pea fowl, about the superb uniform he wore and the guard of honor that was surrounding him.

Clavio had approached nearer to the table in order to have a better look at the magnificent uniforms worn by Creppo's guards of honor. He was

very much surprised to find them wearing uniforms of yellow silk, with wide, blue breeches fastened at the knees, black stockings and shoes with silver clasps or buckles, and a red cloak. From their necks there hung a scarf of black velvet, all embroidered in gold, and ending in a point in the middle of the chest and from which there was hanging a large medallion engraved with Creppo's picture. On their head they wore a silver helmet surmounted by a small gilt ball on top of which there was a little bouquet of flowers of various colors. In their right hand they were grasping a lance with a round base, underneath which there was a strip; and between the strip and the lance there was a red cockarde fastened to it, of about fifty centimeters in length.

The commander was dressed the same way as the guards, with this difference, that the guards had a mantle or cloak hanging down to their belt while his hung down to his feet, and his lance was of gold while those of the guards were of silver. After having given his orders, he went to take his post in the centre of the file of guards, which were twelve in number, so that there were six on the right and six on the left.

They heard some knocking at the entrance door. Clavio ran to it, and having arrived there, as usual he exclaimed: "Who is there?"

The answer from outside was: "King Gallonetti and his counsel."

Clavio opened the door, and as the king was entering the large hall, he shouted:

"King Gallonetti and his Counsel!"

The Royal Guards and Creppo's guard of Honor presented arms with their lances, stretching them with both hands, and giving an impulse forward with their arms in such a way that the shaft came vertically in the direction of their forehead.

When King Gallonetti and his Counsel, which was composed of twelve of the most radically inclined men to bend to his will, entered the hall, he brought his right hand to his forehead, touching his crown, thus rendering the salute, and, bringing his hand down, he made a sign to all the guards to return to their former positions of repose.

Arconti left his place to receive the King, and when he was at three paces distance he bent down extending his right hand to him. The King took Arconti's hand and rendered him the salute. Arconti made front right and started walking on the left side of the King. When they arrived near the table, he went forward, took hold of the chair on the left and pulled it back a little and the King sat on it and said: "Thanks."

Arconti made another bow and left, to go and seat the members of the Counsel, who were waiting near the door. Having arrived near to them, he made a bow and, making a sign to the first three, turned around and led them to their seats on the first row of session chairs on the left. When they had taken their seats, he bowed again and went to take three others, acting in the same manner as with the first, and so on until all the members of the Counsel had been seated; then he went back to his post again.

Clavio was still near the door and heard a knock. He called out: "Who is there?"

The one that had knocked answered: "Creppo, the second Supreme God and his sacred ministers."

Clavio unlocked the door, and when he had reconnoitered who was there, he shouted: "Creppo, the second Supreme God and his ministers!"

All those who were inside the hall fell on their knees, except the King, who arose and went to meet Creppo, and Arconti followed him. As soon as the

ministers were all in, Clavio shut and locked the door and Creppo, raising his right hand forward, with the index and middle fingers extended, and the other fingers closed, described a little circle in the air (a magic sign, which was meant to give a blessing to the hearts of the stupid ones, while Tremio and Fristo were laughing in their sleeves). He did this three times and then lowered his hand. The King, as soon as he arrived near and Creppo raised his hand, stopped and fell on his knees and Arconti did the same thing; and after he had seen him lower it, the King arose and went to meet Creppo and when they were facing each other, he bent low and with both hands he took Creppo's hand and kissed it.

(The King being the symbol of the people, his action was meant to be and to signify to be done in the name of the whole people, that is, at least of all those then present in the hall).

Then making about face, he placed himself to the left, while Arconti placed himself on the left of the King, with his face turned towards the place where the King and Creppo were to pass.

When they had arrived near him, Arconti bent low and Creppo having caught sight of him, looked at him and commenced to laugh. When they had passed by Arconti followed them at about three steps distance, and when they were near the table, the King went forward to the right side and taking hold of the first chair he pulled it back and Creppo sat down and said to him: "I thank you."

And the King bowed down. Arconti, when he saw that the King was going forward to present the seat to Creppo, also ran to the left side to take the chair and to keep in readiness to have the King sit down. When Creppo had taken his seat the King went to take his own seat and after having taken it,

turning around towards Arconti and looking at him, he said: "Thanks."

Arconti made a bow and left to go and present the seats to the sacred ministers. When he was near them he told them to come forward, and while they were advancing he went to the third chair in the first row and making a sign to the one who was walking forward, the latter came and took his seat, and so the one after the other, so that in a few minutes they were all seated; and every one on taking his seat was saying to Arconti: "Thank you."

And Arconti answered with an inclination of the head.

Arconti, after having given seats to all with as much promptitude and celerity as the occasion allowed, went to take his own seat at his appointed place.

Clavio had taken his place near the door with his face turned towards Creppo. He took a small spy-glass and looking all around the hall he jumped up and said:

"By the Supreme God, the Creppolian Council will have a magnificent success. We all seem to be persons come from another world, and that have nothing to do with the Human Society. It would be well to have a photographer come and take a photograph of the beautiful disposition of those seated in Council, and of the superb uniforms they wear."

Creppo seated at the right of King Gallonetti, seemed to be a strange thing indeed. He was dressed in very fine robes of white from head to foot. On his head he wore a white clerical cap (a beretta), which just fitted nicely around his head. On both sides it was about ten centimeters in height, and much wider, while in the center it was about thirty-five centimeters in height, terminating in a point and all embroidered in gold. On his shoulders he

wore a little cloak or pelerine, also white, and a thick heavy chain of gold around his neck, which hung down on his chest and ended there with a graven image of the Supreme God.

The sacred ministers were wearing a habit like Creppo, with the only difference that it was red, and on their necks, instead of the chain of gold, they had a kind of yellow silken scarf, which terminated in a point on their chest, at which hung a medallion of the Supreme God. King Gallonetti wore a green doubloon with the collar all embroidered in gold, and the sleeves full of stripes up to the middle of the fore-arm, and he had his whole chest full of medals of gold and of various forms. He wore black trousers with two small red stripes on the sides. On his shoulders he had a long black mantle and on his head he had a crown of gold with five points. His face was nicely painted with rouge, and he had a long mustache.

Gallonetti's Council wore the dress of high officials and six of them were dressed in civilian's clothes. The officials wore the same uniform as the King with the exception of the crown and the mantle. On their heads they wore a Panama hat with wide brims, and the left brim was raised up where a long yellow plume was attached to the hat. The other six wore high hats.

While Clavio was looking through the spy-glass he heard a knock at the door, he ran to it and asked: "Who is there?"

The person who had knocked answered: "We are Creppo's and Gallonetti's recorders."

Clavio: "Have you your entrance cards?"

Answer: "Yes, sir."

Clavio opened the door, and two tall men entered. They were of a gigantic stature and of about fifty years of age. The first who entered wore a

yellow tunic, which reached down to his feet, and a beretta on his head with four points of a yellow color and from each point there hung a small tassel. His face was pale, almost exceedingly white. The other one was dressed the same way, but in black and wore a long flowing white beard.

When Clavio had received their tickets, he closed the door and locked it and went to resume his seat. The two Recorders walked up side by side, and when they had reached near Creppo and Gallonetti, they made a bow and went to sit down, the one in yellow on the right, and the one in black on the left chair. As soon as the two recorders were seated, King Gallonetti arose, and turning towards his recorder or secretary, he said to him:

“Tell me, Ortino, why did you come so late?”

Arising, Ortino answered: “Myself and the illustrious Matanzo would have arrived here among the first ones, but the interest we take in the government as well as in the Holy Religion, has been the cause that we arrived the last ones.”

King: “Perhaps there is something new.”

Ortino: “While myself and the illustrious Matanzo were crossing Leria street we saw a large crowd of people gathered together. We went near to see what the cause of it was, and we found out that a man was talking, demonstrating the great significance of the Human Doctrine. He said: ‘That for the people to liberate themselves from the yoke of the government and from the Elephantine Religion, they must refuse to be armed or to be made to carry arms, because by means of the weapons put in their hands they, themselves, and all of us, we are all reduced to a state of misery and wretchedness.’”

King: “So we have no arms?”

Ortino: “Your Majesty, no.”

The King and Ortino sat down.



Orrento, speaking to the Royal Guards, said:
"If you wish to help the Human Movement, go back
and spread the Human Doctrine among the army."

One of the sacred ministers who was sitting on the right side of the first row arose and went to kneel down in the center of the space at a short distance from the front of the table, with his back turned to the left. He raised his eyes towards the ceiling and with the palms of his hands joined together in the attitude of prayer, he said: "This Council was called together by our Holy Creppo, second Supreme God, in order to raise up the authority of our sacred government, and reinforce faith in our Supreme God; let every one pay attention."

He arose and went back to his seat.

Creppo then arose and turning his eyes to the right and to the left, he said: "The Free Ideal (or Free Thought) menaces today to destroy our sacred government and our holy religion. One part of the people had already embraced the Human Doctrine. You already know that the Human Doctrine means our ruin, because we will have to dismantle ourselves of these rich and magnificent robes and we will have to put on the dress of a human citizen and to attend to the necessary work. But you know that the necessary labor is hard. It is not like that which we now do, which is after all nothing else but cause disturbance among the people. There is a great difference between stirring the people up and act or work. By stirring them up one does not get fatigued, nor does one perspire much. The Human Doctrine cannot work much harm against me, for I am old, and that exempts me from labor; but you, sacred ministers, you, who are yet young, (pointing with his right hand towards the sacred ministers), you, illustrious counsellors (pointing with his left hand toward the King's counselors), you, Royal Guards, and you, Guards of Honor, you would all of you have to go to work. Do not think for a moment that there would be any remedy to it. Yes, there is, though—the author of the Hu-

man Doctrine is Orrento. So, get rid of him and of all those who intend to spread the Human Doctrine, and the government and our Holy Religion will triumph."

Creppo sat down and King Gallonetti arose and said:

"I, sacred ministers and illustrious counsellors, leave to you the faculty of judging. You certainly have the same interests at heart as Creppo and myself. But I only wish to tell you that if we let Orrento continue his propaganda and introduce the Human Doctrine among the masses of the poor people, our fall and the triumph of the Human Doctrine are very certain. The death of Orrento would frighten not only the people, but it would also cool off the ardor of all his followers who might be inclined to spread about the Human Doctrine."

Fristo was on the right side of the table, at a few paces distance and while Creppo had been speaking, he had been now and then looking at him straight in the face; now, when King Gallonetti finished his speech, the sacred ministers and the counsellors arose and all raising up their right hands, they all shouted together, saying: "Death to Orrento!"

Creppo arose and continued this shout by answering: "To the accursed tree!"

The sacred ministers and the counsellors shouted for the second time: "Death to Orrento!"

Creppo turning towards his recorder or secretary said to him: "Matanzo, write down: 'Orrento condemned to death to the accursed tree, by the great Creppolian Council.' "

King Gallonetti, also turning towards his secretary or recorder, said to him:

'Ortino, you also write down.'

The two secretaries took hold of their respective books and commenced to write.

Fristo, when he saw them open the books walked a few steps forward, approaching the table, and turning towards Creppo, said to him in a very loud voice:

“O, man without humanity, vile inciter to homicide; beware, for Orrento is the symbol of humanity.”

The King when he heard Fristo speak, shouted: “Captain Ariolo!”

The captain came running and when in front of the King bowed down and answered: “Command, Your Majesty.”

King: “Have you given orders to your guards not to speak during this council?”

Captain Ariolo: “Yes, Your Majesty.”

King: “Well, disarm him, and let him be led into prison for having disobeyed his orders.”

The captain shouted: “Royal Guards, come forward!”

Fristo: “You have caused the disturbance, inhuman rabble; for, if you had not spoken neither would I have said anything.”

(He took his lance and sword and threw them down on the ground).

“I am human, and I have embraced the Human Doctrine.”

The Royal Guards were all six of them near Fristo, in the act of laying their hands on him.

Tremio was on the left side of the table, and when he saw the Royal Guards ready to arrest Fristo, he shouted: “Stop, brothers, for if we would continue to listen to inhuman counsels, nothing else would be done than dig graves for us rich young people.”



Creppolian Secret Council.

The sacred ministers and the counsellors drawing out their poniards and other weapons, came forward, but immediately they saw through the windows the reflection of many white lights outside. It was the people in a human demonstration singing "The Strength of the Human Doctrine."

The King shouted:

"Silence, lower the lights."

They all ran to the windows. The King asked his secretary, Ortino, "Do you know whether the forces are outside?"

Ortino: "I had given orders that the first corps of braves were to occupy the four corners of the street by nine o'clock in order that the Council might be ended by that time."

The people in Human demonstration were coming nearer. At their front some one was carrying a sign of circular form, transparent and red with white letters saying:

"Whoever is a member of the Human Society, let him join us."

When they arrived at the four corners of the street called Scialbina, they were singing the last part of the song: The Strength of the Human Doctrine!

The first corps of the braves were listening to the singing.

The commander shouted: "Forward, break up the demonstration."

The braves remained standing still, because they saw a whole people before them. The demonstration stood still, and a table was immediately brought in the middle of the street where they were stopping. A young man jumped upon that table, and speaking in a loud voice, said: "Brothers, our Human Society has not done anything until today, but ascending the ladder of barbarity. The hus-

band is killing his own wife, to whom he had sworn to be her comfort. The son kills his own parents, because he wants to get possession of their little wealth. The mother poisons and kills her own little children and poisons herself, because she is tired of living a life of wretchedness and misery. The children of the poor people, who compose our armies, on account of their ignorance are assassinating, killing, murdering their own brothers who dare to demand their rights. Oh! You brave soldiers, do you be aware that you have put on the habit of assassins, that you are always ready to massacre one another. Think, that your parents and your brothers and sisters are perishing in misery by your fault. Because you are protecting all those who have reduced them to the most inhuman slavery. So, then, for Human Society's sake, we need Human Doctrine."

When he ceased speaking, the people shouted as with one voice:

"Long live the Human Doctrine!"

"Down with the arms and weapons!"

"Long live brotherhood of man and fraternity!"

"Long live universal peace!"

And they started marching down the Aldochina street.

Creppo had remained at the table, and having noticed the sheet of paper, opened it and read its contents, and with arrogance and contempt he threw it back upon the table, and exclaimed, saying: "What a fine secret council."

When the people in demonstration had passed by, the King shouted: "To your places!"

And he went to resume his seat, putting his right hand to his forehead. All the others went to resume the seats they had already occupied. Creppo asked the King, saying: "What are you thinking of? This is the time to act and not to think."

The King, looking at him, in his face, answered

him: "You have remained here and you have neither seen nor heard anything. We have condemned Orrento alone to death, while there are thousands of Orrentos."

Creppo, arising, said to him: "As many Orrentos as there are so many must be condemned to death."

The King arose and answered him: "If I act in such a manner the people will say that I am a tyrant."

Creppo: "No man can be a king who is not a tyrant."

King: "Speaking in that manner you offend my honor."

Creppo: "I am telling the truth, as far as that is concerned. The same way as no one can occupy my position if he be not a false hypocrite. It is your duty to act the part you have assumed (that which you are), and it is mine to do and act that which I am."

King: "But how can we combat against the Human Doctrine which is the true basis of Human Society. It teaches that no one should take up arms against the members of the Human Society. As for me, I do not feel the courage to kill a man, neither have I ever committed any homicide, and I could not call myself a tyrant, but a human being."

Fristo, while the King was speaking, was looking at him very attentively, and when he was through with his little speech, he shouted: "A fine human being you are. After having had massacred forty-eight thousands from among the flower of the youth of our people."

King: "Silence. Don't you see that you do not understand anything of this. They knew that they were going in order to massacre or to be massacred."

Fristo: "You are right, Your Majesty. The stupid ones have been those who composed your armies."

Creppo sat down and the King also and the former said to the King: "Tell me, Gallonetti, you know that when the Creppolian Council is called together and is assembled, it must be secret, do you not?"

King: "Well, how are the people going to know the least word of what we are doing or saying here?"

Creppo: "Everything; everything."

King: "Whose fault is it?"

Creppo: "Yours. You did not know how to choose the persons who had knowledge."

King: "You are mistaken, Creppo. The persons to whom I have entrusted the Council are very intelligent, and devoted to the government and to our Holy Religion."

Creppo took the sheet of paper which was laying upon the table and reaching it out to the King, said: "Read this sheet and you shall see."

The sacred ministers and the counsellors, when the King, after the demonstration had passed by, had shouted, "To your seats," had gone to resume their places. The King took the sheet of paper and commenced to read it to himself.

The sacred ministers and the counsellors shouted: "We want to hear!"

The King arose and read in a loud voice as follows: "The roses of one plant or rosebush do not all bud, burst open and bloom all in one single day, but rather with ample maturity of time. Now, if when the first one buds somebody would say to the plant: Stop, I want the other embryo-roses not to bud. Certainly that person would be nothing else 'but a fool,' because he would want to go against

nature. Should he indeed wish the other roses not to reach their budding and blooming period, he ought to cut down the whole bush. Thus, Human Society, which is all the human intellects, cannot develop themselves all at the same time; but if you think, O men of false science, that Human Society must remain forever as it was in the beginning of the twentieth century, you are badly mistaken. It will stop when it shall have succeeded to become governed by Order and Pure Civilization. And if you will not have it so, then you must destroy it entirely.

(Signed) ORRENTO."

As soon as the King was through reading, he shouted: "Clavio!"

Clavio very quickly presented himself, bowing low, and answered: "Command, Your Majesty."

King: "Whence came this sheet of paper thus written?"

Clavio: "Arconti brought it."

The King threw the sheet before Creppo, and looking at him, said: "Why do you accuse me?"

Creppo turning his head to the left, called: "Arconti!"

Arconti came running from the right side, presented himself before Creppo, answering his call by: "Command, Your Holiness."

Creppo: "Whence came this sheet?"

Arconti: "After having gone to put on my great uniform and having returned here to the hall, I found it upon the table."

Creppo: "Who was here inside?"

Arconti: "Clavio and Captain Ariolo and all the Royal Guards."

Creppo: "Stay there."

He takes the sheet and throws it before the King saying to him: "Arconti is a great man and deserves to be believed."

King: "Captain Ariolo."

The captain hastily presented himself, and answered: "Command, Your Majesty."

King: "Have you seen any one of the guards throw this sheet of paper upon the table?"

Captain Ariolo: "When I started placing thy guards in their different posts, the first two whom I placed were Arco Marise and Trivolo Spargo at the background of the hall, and passing near the table, I have seen that the sheet was on the right side of it."

Arconti looks towards the right and it is seen that he was on the left of the Captain and of Clavio, being with his face turned towards Creppo and the King, and making bout face turning his back to Creppo.

The King questioned Clavio, saying to him: "Clavio, is all what the Captain has said true?"

Clavio: "Yes, Your Majesty. For before he had arrived near the table I had already seen the sheet."

King: "It is not the fault of the government."

He takes the sheet and throws it upon the table before Creppo.

Creppo: "Arconti."

Arconti (bending low): "I am innocent."

Creppo: "Why did you turn your back?"

Arconti: "Because, Your Holiness had told me that during this Council, all those who made part of the Sacred Rite must always place themselves on the right."

Creppo: "I have not made a mistake in designing your great uniform."

Arconti: "And yours also you have rightly designed."

Creppo: "They are all innocent. But then whence did this sheet of paper come? (He takes the sheet and beats it upon the table). Neither the angels nor the devils could have brought it here, for there are not any. He who brought it is a member of the Human Society, contrary to our Holy Religion."

(He takes the sheet with both hands, as if in the act of tearing it).

King: "Stop, Creppo; do you not understand that that sheet contains the greatest human ideal?"

(He snatches the sheet from Creppo's hands and puts it inside his coat).

Creppo looking at him in the face and with disdain, said to him: "And you, also, would embrace the Human Doctrine?"

King: "If the army throw down their weapons I am compelled to embrace it. I cannot do more than my duty, and I will endure any mortification, in order that the Council succeeds in secret."

And turning to the front he said: "I am the King, and I have the power to punish or to pardon. Any disturbance that has happened this evening during this council must be forgotten."

And turning towards Arconti and the Captain and Clavio, he said to them:

"Go to your places."

And turning towards Fristo, he said:

"Fristo, you have been one of the Royal Guards, you have always done your duty, and I hope that you shall continue to do so. So, then, take up your weapons again; for this evening no one shall be punished."

Fristo: "Your Majesty, I am ready to die, but not to take back my arms, either now or ever."

King (calling): "Arconti!"

Arconti presenting himself, answered: "Command, Your Majesty."

King: "Pick up these weapons and take them to the religious armory."

Arconti picks up the arms from off the floor, and goes away with them.

Tremio: "Stop, Arconti, take also mine with you."

(He takes off his sword and together with his lance he lays them in Arconti's arms).

The other Royal Guards approached then Arconti, also taking off their swords and together with their lances, they laid them down and shouted, all of them:

"Take also ours away!"

Creppo and the King were looking like two statues of marble. After a few minutes Arconti returned, and presenting himself before Creppo, he bowed down.

The Guard of Honor on the right now approached Arconti and said to him:

"Take also mine away."

And taking off his sword with his lance, he was going to hand them over to him.

Arconti (turning towards Creppo) asked:

"Must I also take these away?"

Creppo: "No."

The other Guards of Honor, breaking the ranks and taking off their swords together with their lances, now approached in their turn. The first guard laid his weapons on the ground, all the others followed his example.

The King shouted:

"Here one must act as a tyrant, not as a human being!"

And then much louder still, he cried out:

“Captain Ariolo!”

The Captain came in all haste and presented himself, saying: “Command, Your Majesty.”

King: “Go quickly to the commander of the first corps of the braves and tell him to come here with a company of one hundred of the strongest men he has in his corps. Be quick. Then I shall send these rebels to the Isle of the Dead, whence no one returns.”

The Captain went off.

Clavio went towards the door.

A knock was heard at the door from the outside and repeated. Clavio asked: “Who is there?”

The one who had knocked answered: “The commander of the first corps of the braves, Count Roschelli.”

King: “Let him come in.”

Clavio opened the door. The commander entered and looked quite disturbed and troubled; but on seeing all the guards unarmed and the arms thrown on the floor before the table, he picked up courage and bowing low he presented himself before the King.

King: “Is there anything new?”

Count Roschelli: “The most terrible news the history of the nations could register. The braves have, one and all, thrown down their weapons and I have not been able to find means to make them take them up again and to send them to the armory, because there is a large crowd of people who keep up shouting:

“He who touches them is inhuman.”

King: “Well, I hope that the Royal Guards and the Guards of Honor will be kind enough to help us carry them to the religious armory.”

And turning towards the guards, he said to them: “Valorous young men, I thought I had the

nicest rich young men as a basis for our government; instead of that, you have been the first ones to throw down your weapons. What shame would it not be for you, when the people, in the morning will see the arms all trodden under foot and broken to pieces all over the streets. Render me this last service and I will be satisfied.'

Tremio: "We are no longer in your service, but we are now our own masters and we wish to go away from here."

When Commander Roschelli said that the braves had all thrown down their weapons, then Creppo commenced to tremble for very rage, and when he heard that the guards refused to go and pick the weapons up, he uttered a loud cry, saying:

"O, accursed fate! Our ruin has come!"

And falling down upon a chair, he remained silent.

The King looking at Creppo, came near, and laying one hand upon his heart, he raised his other hand and in a commanding posture and looking at every one, he said: "You are free, but before you go away, I wish you to swear not to reveal anything of what has been going on here in this Council."

Tremio: "We swear in the name of Humanity and no longer in the name of the Supreme God."

King: "Swear as you please, for I now understand that the Human Doctrine carries with it the human oath."

Tremio: "He who carries arms has no right to take part in the swearing of the Human Oath."

The commander, Count Roschelli, took off his sword and took it to the table and laid it down.

King: "You wish no longer to be commander?"

Count Roschelli: "Your Majesty, being left without soldiers, there is nothing else left for me to

do than to be commander of my own person, and therefore I do not need any weapons."

Clavio approached the table, also took off his sword, and like the others threw it down on the floor on top of the other arms.

The King, looking at him, said: "And you, too? You are a rebel?"

Clavio: "He who throws down his weapons is not a rebel, but rather shows that he is human."

Luvio Terrelli, commander of the Guards of Honor, hastily took off his sword and together with his lance, went to throw them both on top of the other arms, and said: "There is no better opportunity than the present to embrace the Human Doctrine."

Captain Ariolo, presenting himself, with his weapons in his hands, made a bow before the King and said to him: "Pardon me, Your Majesty, with arms I am your servant, without them, I am one of your brothers." And he threw his weapons on top of the others.

The King was looking like a statue of marble and almost unable to speak, while Creppo seemed to be dead in his chair.

Tremio, turning towards the King, said: "Brother Gallonetti, are you not convinced yet and ready to take part in the taking of the Human Oath?"

King: "As long as I can find men who will take up arms I shall not be convinced."

Tremio: "Very dear brother, we swear not to again take up any arms against any human being, and we swear also to embrace the Human Doctrine. We swear, moreover, not to reveal anything of what has been done in this Council. Only we may say to the people that we have embraced the Human Doctrine."

They all raised up their right hand and shouted:
“I swear it. Long live the Human Doctrine!”

And without saying another word, they directed their steps towards the main door and one by one they filed out.

Although the hour was already quite late, there was a large number of persons yet grouped at all of the four corners of the Scialbina street, and when they heard the shout of “Long live the Human Doctrine!” coming from the Council Hall, they all came near the door of exit which looked into the Al-dochina street, and as the people from the Council were coming out, the people in the street commenced to shake hands with them in a brotherly manner, and as soon as they had all gotten out, they all united together in a loud cry:

“Long live the Human Doctrine!”

Some who knew how to sing “The Strength of the Human Doctrine” by heart, commenced to sing it, and then they all left together.

In the large hall, Creppo, the King and Arconti alone had remained there, and when all those who had taken the Human Oath had left, Arconti went to lock the door. The King commenced to shake Creppo in order to awake him and after a while he seemed to wake up as if out of a stupor and looking all around the hall, said:

“Where have they gone?”

King: “After having taken the Human Oath they were free as human citizens.”

Creppo: “And the sacred ministers?”

King: “They also.”

Creppo: “And your counsellors, also?”

King: “All except myself and Arconti.”

Creppo (calling): “Arconti, come near me.”

Arconti approached. Creppo embraced him and

kissed him and said: "I have always said that you were my most devoted one."

Arconti: "I fulfill my duty."

While Creppo was speaking with Arconti, they heard pass by all those who had been with them in the hall and the other crowds, all singing "The Strength of the Human Doctrine."

Creppo, turning towards the window, said: "You are singing but your song shall vanish like the wind. Arconti take that book on the left and sit down at my right and fill the office of Ortino."

Arconti took the book and sat down at the right of Creppo and quickly commenced to write. Creppo turning towards the King said to him: "Oh! Gallonetti, if you listen to my advice, neither the government nor the religion shall fall."

King: "I am ready to listen to you, and will make any sacrifice in order to put your counsels into practice."

Creppo: "You will have to give orders that all the soldiers who compose your army, all those who know how to read and write, must be dismissed and you must replace them by strong young men that are entirely illiterate. In order to remodel and reform the army you shall send a manifesto everywhere throughout the country and as early as tomorrow, and you shall say that this change is made in order to have the young people learn something and to give them instruction and an education. To each company you shall appoint a professor, who must only know the figures; and the soldiers shall have to learn to know nothing else than the figures and how to count."

King: "The idea pleases me, but who shall be the captains?"

Creppo: "The first ones that shall have learned the names by memory."

King: "Who shall write the letters to give some of their news to their families and friends?"

Creppo: "It is better to send them off on a short furlow, so that they may spend just one day and no more among their people, so that they will not have any opportunity to learn the Human Doctrine."

King: "That is an exceeding bright idea. But yet, it only displeases me some, because it will be said that I have an army entirely composed of ignorant soldiers."

Creppo: "What has happened here in this Council is perhaps not enough of an example and an experience for you? If your whole army were composed of nothing but all intelligent people, before tomorrow's sun would appear in the eastern horizon, they would all have thrown down their weapons, and then you would see yourself compelled whether you wish it or not, to embrace the Human Doctrine."

King: "Oh, I understand very well, dear Creppo, all you have said and I will do everything accordingly."

Creppo: "Arconti, have you written all what I have told you?"

Arconti: "Yes, Your Holiness."

Creppo: "Arconti, I recommend you to take the books to my library and to lock them up in my secret archives. See to it that no one ever sees them for, as you know, they contain the records of our secret councils."

Arconti: "Do not doubt but I shall do my duty."

Creppo (turning towards the King), said: "Let us go, the hour is late. They left the place through the main entrance door. Arconti accompanied them. After they were out he locked the door behind them and then he went to the table and took the first

book and laid it on his left arm and then the second book he laid on top of the first. He then took the inkstands and the pens and put them on top of the second book. The books were large and heavy, and his arm commenced to feel tired and to tremble, so he said to himself:

It is better that I make two trips, otherwise I may let the books fall and soil them. He put back everything upon the table and took up again the two inkstands and the pens and left in the direction of the back door.

As soon as Arconti had gotten away from the table, the young man who had been all this time hidden under it, during the session of the Council, came out of his concealment, took both books with a very quick movement and without making any noise and went again to hide himself under the table once more.

Arconti having arrived at the door put the inkstands on the floor and opened the door and said to himself: It will be better to carry the books away first.

So he turned around and walked up towards the table and having gotten near it, he stopped. He looked at the table, and very much frightened, he turned around it, looking at the floor, and when he got at the front side, he walked a few steps towards the entrance door and stopped, uttering a loud cry, saying: "Oh! Creppo, the books have disappeared—the books which contain all the records of the secret councils!"

Arconti was scarcely through shouting, when a loud and terrible voice behind him thundered at his ears, saying: "Keep silent, you inhuman wretch."

Arconti, quite beside himself with fright and terror, turned around and ventured to say: "Tell me, who are you?"

The same voice answered: "I am the Human Spirit."

The table commenced to tremble, and Arconti shouted: "Angels of Heaven, help me!"

Then he ran towards the entrance door, crazed with fright. The youth in white, who was hid under the table, came out of his hiding place, carrying the books on his left arm, and commenced to run after Arconti, shouting at him: "Stop and swear to embrace the Human Doctrine; otherwise you will be considered a traitor to *Humanity*."

Arconti reached the entrance door and opened it, but he became aware that the Human Spirit was near him, and he commenced to run like a desperate man through the hall, crossing the section of chairs to the left and having arrived at the back door he ran outside.

The Human Spirit returned and finding the entrance door opened, he went out, shutting the door with all his might.

Who was the Human Spirit?

It was none other than Alestro, who without any fear as to consequences, volunteered to fulfill the commission received from Orrento.

Alestro on coming outside, went down the Al-dochina street, and having arrived before the temple, he took the street through which the triumphal procession had passed. Orrento was still upon the tree, and seeing Alestro pass by he recognized him and coming down upon the ground he called him. Alestro stopped and turned around, and saw that the one who had called him was Orrento. He went to meet him and Orrento embraced him and asked him: "What have you done?"

Alestro: "I have accomplished the mission you gave me."

Orrento: "So then, you got the sheet of paper into the hands of Creppo?"

Alestro: "Yes, he has read it, and the King also."

Orrento: "Well, let us go."

They went their way, not meeting with a single soul on the streets.

Alestro: "We have to go to my house, because I wish to change clothes."

Orrento: "Tell me, when they read the letter, were there any other persons present?"

Alestro: "When the ceremonies or services were through at the temple, I went and took a walk towards the quarters of the Royal Guards to see once more two of the guards to whom I had spoken at the entrance door of the temple, and whom I had almost converted to the Human Doctrine. And, indeed, after about half an hour's time, they came out. I wanted to take them along with me but they told me they had to go, that they were on duty, having to be on guard at the large hall where the Creppolian Council was to be held. I asked them their names and one said his name was Rumoli Tristo, and the other Giaccola Tremio."

Orrento: "I had spoken to them also, and I am sure that they are better converts than we."

Alestro: "These two deserve the best record in the pages of the modern history of our Human Society. They have known how to break up the root of cruelty and of the infamous weapons. Tristo was the first to reprove Creppo about his inhuman science. He, the first, threw his weapons upon the floor and swore never to take them up again any more. Tremio followed his example and the Council ended with the taking of the Human Oath."

Orrento: "Did the sacred ministers and the illustrious counsellors also take part in the Human Oath?"

Alestro: "Yes, there only remained Creppo, King Gallonetti and Arconti, Creppo's first chamberlain."

Orrento: "Whose are those two books?"

Alestro: "These are the books of Hell, which contain all the records, reports and minutes of all the secret Creppolian Councils. All the inhuman ideas which they have been putting into practice against the poor people are written in these books, even down to your condemnation to death, for you will have to suffer the death penalty upon the accursed tree."

Orrento: "But they do not contain the false miracles said to have been performed by divine virtue and power of the Supreme God, while they themselves, who are studying all the diabolical arts, to show to the poor ignorant people that the Supreme God is an assassin or rather a father of mercy, while he is neither the one nor the other. Creppo has already preached that the tree against which the Supreme God broke his face, he has cursed it with his sacred power, and they now already commence to call it the accursed tree. I have been perched upon the tree to see in what way the tree would receive the stroke or blow of being put to death. Towards nine o'clock last night there arrived a regiment of the third corps of the braves, and formed a circle to the right and to the left of me; and until midnight they were acting like dogs around their prey, but it was impossible for them to get on my track. They gathered together on the Square of the temple and then went away. Later on there arrived four individuals of whom I recognized two, for being people who could be guilty of any misdemeanor and could

commit any crime, provided they are not sent to work. They bored the tree from the trunk up and down in order to make a hole in it and went deep into the interior of the tree and then they filled that hole with some liquid which they had brought with them in a large vessel. The tree, of course, will dry up and Creppo will preach in order to impress upon the minds of the poor ignorant people that this has occurred by the will of the Supreme God."

They, thus talking together, arrived at Alestro's house, where the latter knocked at the door. After a while the door was opened and they entered. Alestro was living with his mother who was already much advanced in age, and when they had entered the house the old woman was looking at Orrento from head to foot. Alestro approached his mother, took her right hand and kissed it, and Orrento did the same. Alestro was living in a very poor house on the west side of the city. He was working for his own account at agriculture; but the land he was cultivating was the property of the Baron Varcani, a very rich man; and the house wherein he was living was owned by the same man. Alestro was paying him for the land a certain percentage of the worth of the produce and for the house a stated rent.

Alestro's father had cultivated the same land and lived in the same house, and had died at the age of fifty-two years, leaving a large indebtedness towards the proprietor of the land. Alestro, at the death of his father was just twenty-two years of age, and thinking that his father after having labored and toiled all his life, day and night, left nothing behind but debts, he went to the proprietor or landowner and told him that he wished to leave the place.

The landowner answered him: "If you pay your father's debt you can do as you please."

Alestro: "But if my father worked all his life without taking any rest, and you took all he could produce for the use of the land and rent of the house, and having scarcely finished the harvest was every year compelled to come to you to ask you for help to work farther, what can I do?"

Landowner: "Your father was a good man, but it seems to me that your head and mind are spoiled; and certainly your father supported his family and was looked upon by all his fellowmen as an upright and honest man."

Alestro: "Of course, for me to be good, I must work like a slave; but at least the slaves do not leave any debts behind them as my father did. You tell me the whole story upside down; you are not telling me that my father compelled me to work even from the very tender age of seven years, and that my mother worked even more than a man, and we have worked all of us, father, mother, children and horses for no other purpose than to increase your wealth."

Landowner: "You laborers have only the right to work and to live honestly. As to us proprietors, landowners and landlords, our duty is to live off the produce of the land in such a way that there be always an abundance in store in granaries and other storage, so that if some year there should be by misfortune a bad or insufficient harvest, famine might at any rate be avoided among us. It seems to me that you have come several times yourself to my house and you have seen how many granaries I have full of wheat, the creamery is filled with cheese and the wine-cellars well filled with wine. Of course, myself and family, we could not consume even in a hundred years, all the provisions stored away in this manner. So who consumes them then, but the people. Have you understood me? We rich

people are nothing else but the managers and providers for the poor people."

Alestro: "That is true, but if the rich could or would manage this store of products in a right, just and meet distribution, no one among the poor would find fault or have a word to say. Orrento was right in telling me that the rich are guilty of a great crime in having the poor laboring class work and toil worse than animals; and I can confirm this by saying that last year, in the month of April, together with many others, I have worked for about three weeks in your granaries, cleaning up things, and there were there thousands upon thousands of bushels of wheat all spoiled by overheating and sprouting, and it was found necessary to use it as manure; while my father was giving me bread at small rations, because three persons had to live for two months on one hectoliter of wheat."

Landowner: "If you keep on listening to the talk of that fool of Orrento, I am sure that you and your mother will at the end starve. The laborers ought to be grateful to the rich, because we give you an opportunity to work for your living. The land is ours, and it produces all that is necessary to your sustenance. Now, if we were tyrants, as it is claimed, would we not let all of you starve?"

Alestro: "Let us leave off all these questions. It is all of no avail. The life my father has lived has been a good lesson to me and I want to shake off the fetters which have kept us chained so long to your will. I want to go to work as a day laborer, and I do not want to have my mind burdened all the time with these despairing thoughts which tend only to make my condition even worse than it is."

Landowner: "I was very much attached to your father's good soul, and although he is dead I still respect him. And in respect to his memory and for

his sake, I now grant you a rebate of the half of his indebtedness towards me, and I agree to give you work for you and your horses and to pay you by the month, on condition that at your pleasure, you shall pay me the amount of the other half."

Alestro was satisfied with this arrangement and continued to work on the same piece of land and, of course, with less after-thought than formerly, but his condition did not improve at all.

Orrento knew Alestro's whole history, and when he saw that Alestro was through with changing his clothes, he asked him, saying: "Alestro, it seems to me that since you have been working on wages, you have improved your condition, have you not?"

Alestro: "Go away! I have now been working for nearly seven years for that man without human conscience, for a point of honor, and I have been most economical in order to save money to pay him the debt my father left after him. I thought I had settled over and above for the whole, but it was not so. Last Sunday I went to him to settle our accounts, and, to my great astonishment, the debt had increased rather than diminished. That rapacious wretch wanted me to pay interest on the capital due at the rate of ten per cent."

Orrento: "The laboring class shall never be free from such masters until they, these masters, be abolished; for, as they do not work themselves, and do not want to, they are all the time studying means and ways how best to despoil us of all that we are able to produce by any kind of work whatsoever."

Alestro: "But how can we, the laboring class, get out of this terrible oppression and inquisition into our affairs? When the rich say that we must be thankful to them because they give us an opportunity to work on their land to get our scanty living?"

Orrento: "Who said that the land was theirs?"

Alestro: "They themselves first, secondly the law, and then all the ministers of the Supreme God."

Orrento: "Liars, they are; no one of all the members of the Human Family has the right to take possession of one foot of land on this earth. Tell me who made the earth?"

Alestro: "They say God made it."

Orrento: "Well, let us admit that He has made it. But that God, whose God is He? The god of the rich, or the god of the poor?"

Alestro: "I could not answer you on this score, I must plead ignorance."

Orrento: "Listen to me, brother, and you will see that all what I shall tell you is the truth. In order for the earth to be property of all those who have appropriated it to themselves, there ought to be two gods, a poor one and a rich one. The first one worked six days and created the whole universe. The second without working at all took possession of it. We, working people, are the children of the laboring god, who through his ignorance suffered himself to be dispossessed of the universe by the Supreme vagabond god. The rich are the children of the knowing and learned god, and they have dispossessed us of the inheritance of the earth, of the land and of all what we have produced, do, can and will produce through our ignorance. So, dear brother, you who are a laborer as well as myself, we have the right to claim that which by right belongs to us. Our God has made the earth, the artificial riches and the products of the land we, laborers, have made, and are making them by our labor, and we have a full right to claim all what belongs to us."

Alestro: "Your talk is logical, but I have not heard from any one yet that there are two gods, but only one, who is a pure, divine spirit, Master of

Heaven and of earth and of the whole universe, and that we, of the human race, we are his children. And thus it is written in all the sacred bibles."

Orrento: "The sacred bibles have been written by members of our human family, without our true God having verified them. For the members of the Human family, down to this day, have never been able yet to put themselves in communication with Him.

"Dear brother, it is time to think to remedy all the oppressions to which we have been and are subjected, we of the laboring class. You know better than I, Uncle Alsenzio Gorfelli; he has been all his life a strong and robust man; he worked up to the age of sixty-five years as a mason and now after a long life of labor, all what is expecting him is just to go a-begging alms from those who never in their life worked a lick, and to sleep on a little bundle of straw upon the ground, worse than a dog. So, then, let us leave the gods aside, they do not interest themselves with us and let us think about readjusting our miserable conditions. As for me I am ready to die for the sake and the love of *Humanity* and Human Society, but as long as I live I shall not cease to spread its Doctrine."

While Orrento was speaking, Alestro and his mother were listening attentively. The good old woman had her eyes bathed in tears, and when Orrento was through talking, she said to him: "You are right, brother, he who works lives in poverty; he who does not work lives in riches, wealth and abundance."

Orrento: "Do not doubt, good lady, the times are near when the laborers will be through and shall throw down all arms and all weapons which they have been using to defend our oppressors. Human victory shall indeed be the conqueror, and the rich shall be compelled to work. Brotherhood and Fraternity and

the purest Civilization shall be established amongst us."

— And turning towards Alestro he said to him:

"Brother, you remain with your mother, and attend to your work. I must go to meet our brothers."

Alestro: "I will not remain away from you nor from those who are able to forward our cause. I want to help the Human Movement."

He went to take a large sheet or piece of very white cloth and stretched it out upon the table and taking both books he enveloped them in it.

Orrento, approaching Alestro, said to him: "What are you doing, brother? I would carry the books bare and uncovered, because our movement has come out of the free ideal, and it is not started in order to harm our Human Society, but rather to make her reach more quickly to the highest degree of Civilization. These books are not worthy to be enveloped in that symbolic cloth of our Human Society, but instead of that, they should be wrapped in flames, which would herald and announce to us and all our followers the end of tyrannical times and ages, and the new birth, the *renaissance* of the era of Order and pure Civilization and culture, under the banner of universal peace."

He took the books from the table and placed them upon a chair and taking the sheet of cloth by two corners with both hands he stretched out his arms and although Orrento was of a high stature, the cloth reached down to the floor; and turning towards Alestro's mother, he said to her: "Good lady, whence have you this piece of cloth?"

The lady answered: "Eleven years ago my sainted husband had sown some flax, and after having harvested it he brought it to me and I set to work to spin it. Then I wove it and bleached it with my own hands."

Orrento: "This will be the banner of the laborers. All those who shall labor shall be protected by it, and those who do not wish to work will have to starve of hunger."

The lady: "That would be a just law."

Orrento: "There will be no laws but duties, and every one must fulfill them. So you make a present and a compliment of this to the Human Society?"

The lady: "Yes, and I am only sorry that it is not of silk."

Orrento: "We do not want any banners of silk."

He took the cloth, folded it carefully, and kissing it, he put it in his bosom; and taking the hand of the lady he kissed it and went to take the books. Alestro went to kiss his mother's hands and approaching Orrento he said to him: "If you please, I wish to carry the books myself."

Orrento: "For what reason?"

Alestro: "Because it is my duty."

Orrento: "If I were sick, all right; but I feel strong enough."

It was now three o'clock in the morning. Orrento and Alestro left the house and the old woman closed the door.

Towards eleven o'clock Orrento and Alestro were noticing from a distance the Human Committee members busily engaged roasting game.

Grandinello knew how to read and write, and on that morning he had made a sign of grass between two trunks or stumps of trees; the letters in grass read:

"Here reigns and rules Order and Human Brotherhood and Fraternity."

When Orrento and Alestro had arrived within a short distance from the group of committee mem-

bers, one of the members noticed their presence and arose quickly and shouted:

“Long live Orrento and his Doctrine!”

The others arising also and repeating the same cry, went to meet Orrento.

Orrento raised his right hand in sign of begging for silence, and then commenced to introduce Alestro to every one of the members of the Human Committee, saying: “Brothers, I introduce you to our brother, Alestro, he who has accomplished one of the greatest human labors. With his human energy, he has succeeded in snatching from the hands of those who are opposed to the Human Doctrine the books of Hell.”

All of the members of the Human Committee, one after the other, came to shake hands of brotherhood and fraternity with Alestro, and then with Orrento. When they were through shaking hands, Orrento said to them: “Brothers, when you wish to shout anything, do not shout ‘Long live Orrento and his Doctrine,’ but ‘Long live Human Society and its Doctrine.’ In that way you will be shouting for yourselves and for all.”

Then they walked in the direction of the fire, and when they were near it, Orrento laid the book he was carrying down upon the ground and Alestro put the other book, which he was carrying, on top of the first, while the others commenced to make all preparations for dinner.

Orrento commenced to walk around like one who is hunting for something.

Grandinello asked him: “What are you looking for?”

Orrento: “I need a pole or a long stick for a flag handle.”

Grandinello: “I saw just the thing a little while ago; wait till I go and find it.” He went away and a

moment later he returned carrying a very fine flag pole.

Orrento went to meet him and when he had the pole in his hands he kissed it and thanked him. Grandinello was very much surprised to see Orrento do this, and he asked him why he did so, in the following manner: "Excuse me, brother, but tell me, what is the meaning of this kissing the flag pole?"

Orrento: "Later on you shall know it."

They had now arrived near the fire, and one of the committeemen shouted that dinner was ready. Orrento looking at the sun, answered: "Come, brothers, let us throw wood upon the fire, for the hour is near."

Alestro ran first, the others followed, and they began throwing wood on the fire.

Orrento then took one of the books and called out: "Grandinello, read the last page written in this infernal book."

They all stopped throwing wood and listened to Grandinello, who read as follows: "Orrento condemned to death on the accursed tree by the Grand Creppolian Council."

They all shouted: "Oh! the inhuman traitors! What evil, what harm has he done?"

Orrento answered: "Those who have condemned me have sworn the human oath."

Grandinello continued reading: "The Council of Creppo accepted by King Gallonetti.

The army is to be remodeled; whosoever knows how to read and write will be given leave of absence forever. In their places will be placed all robust and strong young men who will be able to fight like wild animals and will not be afraid of death. You shall send the manifesto throughout all the parts of these

states, expressing that you wish all the illiterate young men under arms.

(Signed).

ARCONTI."

Orrento took hold of the pole and taking from his bosom the white flag, he commenced to fasten and tie it to the pole at one end with strings.

The flame of the fire had now risen high. Orrento shouted: "The Books of Hell shall find their last end in the fire and thus will be a signal to us of the end and fall of tyrannical times and the awakening and resurrection of the Human Government."

And calling, he said: "Grandinello, quickly take the books and throw them into the fire!"

Grandinello went to get the other book and out of both of them he tore the last written page; and without letting it be seen by any one he hid those pages in his pocket and threw the books into the fire.

Orrento raised up the white flag and fell on his knees.

The members of the Human Committee, seeing Orrento fall on his knees, knelt down also. Orrento, pointing with his right hand towards the white banner, said:

"Brothers, this is the flag of our Human Society; all other banners have not any right to waive upon the face of our globe. And the false so-called learned ones knew it and know it very well. But they knew also that if this sacred banner should wave, they could no longer suck the blood of their poor victims and nobody could any longer commit so much injury against our Human Society. They knew also that this flag indicates peace; but they do not wish for peace, but rather war. This flag indicates fraternity, brotherhood; but they do not wish to hear anything about the brotherhood of man; rather than this they want all those who are producing all artificial riches and wealth to be treated like slaves; with-

out thinking that we, laborers, have been the ones who have built their magnificent palaces, that have woven the superb clothes they are wearing, the shoes on their feet have been made by us; the rich and costly viands they eat have been cultivated, produced and prepared by us. The rich have all this in abundance, but we poor laborers we have dearth and want and lack of everything on account of our ignorance. It is we who have furnished arms and destroying weapons to our oppressors, with which they arm us or our own children to destroy ourselves; it is we who have taken those weapons in our hands in their defense and to our own detriment. We are the guilty ones. It is neither the King nor Creppo, nor the Capitalists, but we ourselves who have been stupid, ignorant and imbecile. But now, we shall see the light of truth penetrate into your minds. Human Revolution is at hand, the brave soldiers will throw down their weapons and our Human Victory shall be complete.

“Human history demonstrates that all inhuman revolutions have failed, and that the poor people have always gotten the worst of it, consequently it is necessary to change tactics. Human Revolution only can make Human Society free, and then we may be able to shout:

Long live Human Doctrine!

Long live Order and Pure Civilization!

Long live the white flag!”

Now they all arose. Orrento planted the flag into the ground, and said:

“Our Human Government is established. Let us proceed to have dinner.”

They sat down upon the grass in two rows fronting each other. When they were through eating, Alestro arose and said: “Brothers, Liberty is the paradise of the world. Oppression is Hell. The op-

pressors are the demons and devils. It is better to live like children of nature than as slaves under a false civilization. The false learned ones call civilized people those where there is a small minority keeping the large majority in slavery; and where this does not exist, where this does not obtain, the people are called savages. Where the produce of the land and the products of labor are in the greatest abundance, misery and wretchedness reign supreme, because the slaves are despoiled of the produce of their work and are compelled to starve. Where religious propaganda is the most infused into the people, there are the most ignorant laborers to be found. Where the laboring class is the most ignorant, there the governments are the most tyrannical. Where the governments are the most tyrannical, there the oftener occur massacres between laborers and soldiers on account of the ones being more stupid than the others. Where the white flag waves, fraternity exists."

All the others present, when they had heard the words, "White Flag," arose and shouted in unison:

"Long live the white flag!

Long live universal peace!"

Orrento coming near Alestro, shook hands with him, taking his right hand and said to him: "Bravo, brother, we must continue thus and show our courage as members of the Human Society, not only here among ourselves, but even in presence of whatever number of people, whatever be their opinions of us. Reprove all the false learning, because science must mean to lead and conduct Human Society to be governed by Order and Pure Civilization. Whenever any one of the members of our Human Society, with its science, seeks to make Human Society retrocede this is no longer science, but an unscientific act.

“Some members of our Human Society who until now have been considered as the greatest scientists, because they have described how the laboring class shall only be able to emancipate itself by Social Revolution, have made a great mistake. Groups have been organized everywhere adopting as a symbol of liberty the red flag, which indicates vengeance and blood, in other words the destruction of our Human Society.

“Oh, men of free thought, make your examination of conscience and see in what error you are. On one part you say that you wish for universal peace. on the other you raise and make the infernal flag wave in the wind; on one side you are against armies, and on the other you advise the laboring class to provide themselves with and take up arms, to be ready and unite with, join the great army of laborers, to give the great assault for a social vindication. Years have passed since your doctrines have been spread among the poor people and without any effect, because your banner frightens them. If the movement be human, it is necessary that it be organized under the human symbol. Any member who wishes to belong to our Human Society must swear the Human Oath, as we ourselves now must swear it.

FORM OF THE HUMAN OATH.

“I swear to attend to the labor necessary to and wanted by our Human Society; to flee from weapons which tend to our destruction; and not to do to other members that which might be displeasing to us if done by others.

“Whoever shall not be willing to swear or shall not observe this oath after having sworn it, shall be treated as inhuman.”

The members of the Human Committee were listening attentively while Orrento was speaking, and when he ceased and raising his right hand approached

the flag and with his left hand seized the pole and shouted: "Do you swear?"

The members of the Human Committee all raised their right hands and answered: "We swear it."

Orrento: "Now we may say that we have formed the true basis of the human movement." And calling Alestro he said:

"Brother, go back to the city, and I beg of you to keep yourself well informed about everything and anything that our inhuman brothers are doing."

Alestro extended his right hand to everyone, the one after the other, and after a brotherly hand shake, he took leave of them and went away.

Arconti full of fear over the Human Spirit he had seen, entered running into Creppo's Palace. The Guard of Honor who was on watch duty, asked him what was the matter, but he did not get any answer. Arconti was so frightened that he was unable to utter a word and running through the rooms he went to hide himself under Creppo's bed.

Creppo and the King were in the dining room, feeling very much fatigued after the session of the great Creppolian Council.

The hour was late and the King, rising, said to Creppo:

"Good-bye till to-morrow afternoon."

Creppo arose and taking a little hammer he beat four times upon a bell, which was near the entrance door to the dining hall.

Four Guards of Honor presented themselves immediately, kneeling before him, and he said to them: "Go, and accompany the King home."

The guards arose, and the King grasping Creppo's right hand, kissed it, and bowing down said to him: "I wish you good rest."

Creppo: "The same to you."

The King, accompanied by the guards, went out and Creppo retired.

The next day, towards midday, Creppo arose, and ringing the bell, the second chamberlain presented himself.

After having dressed himself, Creppo asked him: "Randomio, have you seen Arconti?"

Randomio: "No, Your Holiness."

Creppo: "Poor fellow, he is right to take a good rest and to sleep the whole day."

Randomio: "What was the matter last night? The streets are all covered with broken weapons."

Creppo: "The demons have taken possession of the minds of the brave ones and they have thrown down their arms."

Randomio: "On the contrary, I think it was the angels. For when the Human Demonstration passed by, if the soldiers had obeyed the orders and commands of their superiors they would have made a great massacre of the mass of the people and no one would have remained alive of the whole crowd. So, it is better that the weapons be lost than the souls."

Creppo: "And you also are against us?"

He took a stick and raised it with fury so as to give a heavy blow on Randomio's head, who very much frightened ran downstairs and out of the house looking backward as he fled, believing that Creppo was after him. Some people in the street asked Randomio what was the matter, and he tremblingly answered: "His Holiness has gone crazy. He takes what is bad for good and vice versa he calls good that which is bad. As for me, I don't believe him any more."

Dinner was ready and the first servant rang the bell.

Creppo with the stick in his hand, all troubled, entered the dining room. The first servant went to meet him and said:

“What is the matter with Your Holiness, you are so pale in the face?”

Creppo: “That knave of Randomio had the audacity to reprove me. He told me that the braves had done well to throw down their weapons, because it is better that the weapons be lost than the souls. He is too ignorant, he does not understand anything. Speak, Tassonte, what is your opinion about this?”

Tassonte: “Randomio is a big fool, and does not think of all that shall happen if all those composing the armies are going to throw down their arms. Now we are living the life of princes, then we would have to live like laborers.”

Creppo: “Bravo Tassonte, well and good. You understand what is our true religion.”

He went to sit down at the table and commenced to eat.

Tassonte in the kitchen also commenced to prepare to eat his dinner.

Creppo: “Come here to eat at my table, you are one of my most devoted ones.”

Tassonte obeyed, and bringing everything he had prepared for himself into the dining room, he sat down in front of Creppo and said to him: “Thank you, Your Holiness, for the honor you do me.”

Creppo: “You are an angel to me, and you deserve to be respected.”

Upon the table there were half a dozen of bottles filled with wine, two roasted chickens and many other exquisite viands and dishes. After having eaten a little Creppo made a sign to drink. Tassonte filled two large glasses with wine.

Creppo: “Let us drink to the health of the laboring class, for they produce the wine, and we drink of the best.”

They took hold of their glasses and emptied them.

Tassonte re-filled the glasses and ate another mouthful.

Creppo: "Let us drink to the health of those composing the armies, for they fight in our defense, while we fight with eating and drinking."

And they emptied the second glass. Tassonte again filled the glasses and they continued to eat of the chickens and of the other good things with which the table was loaded, and of which at least ten persons might have partaken to their appetite's content.

Creppo: "Let us drink to the health of the poor ignorant people who give alms to the Supreme God while we are using those very alms in living in high style."

They had drunk the whole contents of the half dozen bottles, but the two-thirds of the victuals were yet left.

Creppo arising from the table said to Tassonte: "Clear the table, I am going into the library."

Tassonte went into the kitchen, took a big basket and returned to the dining room and commenced throwing into the basket all that had remained on the table of the several dishes. When he was through clearing everything off, he rang a bell, and a young man, pale in the face and wan entered the room and Tassonte said to him: "Take this basket and go and throw all its contents on the dung-hill."

The young man looked with greedy eyes in the basket and seeing the two chickens almost untouched, took one by the leg and looking at Tassonte, said:

"Mr. Tassonte, can I take these to my poor parents; it is a long time since they have tasted chicken?"

Tassonte: "No, because I have received orders from His Holiness that the remnants of the table must be thrown on the dung-hill, and not to give them to the poor. Hurry up!"

And he went into the kitchen.

The young man on seeing Tassonte going away into the kitchen, bit in the chicken and quickly put the basket on his shoulder and went his way.

When he got through eating his bite, he said: "Oh! what an inhuman class of people! So many poor people would like to get these leavings, and the hearts of those wretches have no pity; while the poor people think them to be holy persons they are indeed terrestrial demons."

When Creppo had entered the religious library, he opened his secret archives and commenced to seek for the two books containing all the records of the Creppolian Councils, but it was impossible for him to find them. He went with haste to the reception room, rang the bell and went to sit down at the writing-table. The lieutenant presented himself immediately. His name was Alintroni, commander of the Guards of Honor. On entering he bowed deeply and said: "Command, Your Holiness."

Creppo: "Have your people look for Arconti, everywhere, and bring him here in my presence."

The commander, making a profound bow, left and calling the whole body of Guards of Honor, he asked them which one of them had seen Arconti.

The guard who was on duty as sentinel when Arconti entered, said: "It was one o'clock, after midnight, when I saw him come in running all affrightened. I asked him, 'what was the matter,' but he was unable to answer me."

The commander asked the others who had been on watch and all answered they had not seen him.

"Well," said Alintroni, "Arconti must certainly be hid in some room. Go and search in all the rooms."

They went on their search, and commenced with the east side of the palace, going through every room, one after the other, but all their researches were futile, and without any results. Arconti was not to be found.

The lieutenant presented himself much ashamed, before Creppo, and bending very low, he said: "Arconti cannot be found."

Creppo: "Have you looked well, everywhere?"

Alintroni: "Yes, Your Holiness, only we have not gone through your own sleeping room."

Creppo: "Go there, also, and do not return without Arconti."

Alintroni went out again and calling the guards they went to Creppo's sleeping room, entered it and commenced their search; and, behold! they found Arconti hid under the bed.

They summoned him to come from under there. Arconti answered, shouting: "I will not come out as long as the Human Spirit has not gone out."

Alintroni: "Come out of there, otherwise I will have you taken out by force."

Arconti: "You can carry me out dead, but not alive. My head is harder than Creppo's."

Alintroni, turning towards the guards, said: "Come on. Take him by the arms and pull him out from under there."

The sentinel at the entrance door of Aldochina street, just then shouted: "To arms!" (An infernal word which the inhuman rulers make their sentinels shout, as the greatest act of respect).

It was the King who was coming to pay a visit of homage to His Holiness.

Two Guards of Honor went out immediately, and when they had reached near the sentinel, they placed themselves at the right side of the entrance, and stood like two statues of wood.

The King entered; the sentinel rendered him the honors, as did also the two Guards of Honor; presenting arms, and after the King had passed, they made rest arms. The two guards doing the same thing as the sentinel.

A fine youth, at a distance, was following in the steps of King Gallonetti, and approaching the sentinel, he said: "Could you tell me who it was that entered here a while ago?"

Sentinel: "His Majesty, King Gallonetti."

The youth questioned him again: "Have you seen how many horns he had on his head?"

Sentinel: "He had no horns, but a crown."

Youth: "Then it was not a king; for a man to be a king must wear a natural crown, that is be born with his head surrounded by horns, with horns all around his head; nor should the Human accept him because he is inhuman. We are Human, and no one among the Human is superior or inferior to the other."

Creppo had somewhat recovered from his trouble. The King entered, took Creppo's right hand and kissed it, and sat down at his left side, and the two guards remained near the door, one at the right and the other at the left, on the outside of the room.

Soon Lieutenant Alintroni entered the room. He was followed by four Guards of Honor, carrying Arconti who seemed to be dead.

When Arconti saw Creppo, he commenced to shout: "Leave me alone! for here we are in security, because we are all inhuman."

The four guards let go of Arconti, and Creppo made a sign to the guards to retire. The guards and the lieutenant, bowing deeply, withdrew without turning their backs.

Arconti remained quiet, and Creppo asked him: "Where are the books containing the records of all the Creppolian Councils?"

Arconti looked at the floor and answered: "The Human Spirit has taken them."

Creppo: "What does that mean, the Human Spirit?"

Arconti: "That is what he told me was his name. Perhaps they are modern spirits, who are against the government and our Holy Religion."

Creppo: "What form or shape had he?"

Arconti: "Of a man dressed in white."

Creppo: "Where did he come from when he took the books?"

Arconti: "I don't know; the doors were locked. I was going to take away the inkstands and the pens, but suddenly I thought of taking the books away first. I had not yet gone out of the large hall and I went back to the table to take the books which had lain on it, but I did not find them there any more. My hair stood on ends on my head, my mind was all confused, and I looked all around me but I could not see them anywhere. I stood looking towards the entrance door, when behold, suddenly I heard a very loud noise near the table. I looked around and it seemed to me that the large hall was going through the air. I shouted "Who is there?" and I heard a voice answering me: 'The Human Spirit.' Oh! how frightened I was, when I saw him come on. He shouted to me to stop or to embrace the Human Doctrine or be looked upon as a traitor of *Humanity*. I ran away at full speed, and arrived at the entrance door, and I opened it hastily, but I noticed the Human Spirit who was near me, and ready to fall upon me. However, I was not so ignorant as to let myself be caught. I ran again all around inside the great hall, and escaped through the back door. I looked into the hall and saw that the Human Spirit was going out through the entrance door carrying with him the books I had no longer been able to find.

I was thinking, quite frightened, where I could find a safe place and I went to hide myself under the bed of Your Holiness, who is against the Human race."

Creppo: "All right. Go now and attend to your work."

Arconti: "I cannot, because I am forced to embrace the Human Doctrine."

Creppo: "But don't you think that you will have to go to work?"

Arconti: "It is better to work than to live all the time in fear and fright."

Creppo: "But of whom are you afraid?"

Arconti: "Of the Human Spirits, which are not like the false angels that I have not seen; while the Human Spirit, I have seen it with my own eyes."

Creppo: "You also are incredulous."

Arconti: "I am telling the truth. For no sooner had I seen the Human Spirit than I shouted: 'Angels of Heaven help me!' But it was impossible for them to come, probably they are all dead; for if they were alive, certainly they would have come to my help. If not on account of me, at least as a mark of respect to you, who still wish to make believe that you are the second Superior God."

Creppo: "You are too ignorant and worse than Randomio, who had the audacity to reprove me. Go away from me, nor dare to recognize me at all any more. It was for me you put on that beautiful uniform."

Arconti: "Fine rags, indeed! When I was passing through the streets everybody took me for a clown."

He went out of the room and after a moment returned dressed as a Human citizen in civil clothes, and carrying in his arms the different pieces of the great apparel he had worn and having arrived in the hall, he threw these clothes with all his might on the

ground. And turning towards Creppo, he said to him: "Here you have your inhuman uniform. You can terminate yourself the final end of your false comedy."

And, with fury, he left through the entrance door.

While Arconti was making all these declarations to Creppo, the King had been listening attentively. When he saw Arconti leaving, turning towards Creppo, he said to him: "And that is your most faithful friend?"

Creppo struck with the flat of his hand upon the table and commenced to shake his head up and down repeatedly, saying:

"By God! At the present time there are persons among the laboring class who are greater rascals than we."

The King: "We cannot any longer be sure of anything. If I insist in arming young men I do not know how all this is going to end, because the modern ideal has influenced youth more than old age."

Creppo: "If you follow my counsels they cannot but succeed, because while you employ them I shall know how to keep them in ignorance. Every day you must send a body of braves to the temple to attend religious service, for I am sure that the Human citizens will no longer come to attend them, they have already understood well enough that religion is a false thing."

King: "I have already given orders for the remodeling of the army, but I do not think that we can keep on going this way forever, because Orrento does not know either how to read or write, but at the same time his propaganda has had a great success indeed."

Creppo: "There is no other remedy than our last false stand. It must now be to have an armed army composed of ignorant soldiers."

King: "Well, I will do all I possibly can; but I cannot play the tyrant so very much because the people have their eyes open, and consequently we must be a little more moderate."

He arose and stretching out his right hand to Creppo, he said to him: "Good-bye."

Creppo: "Wait till I give you an escort to accompany you."

He went to ring a little bell. Immediately four Guards of Honor presented themselves.

Creppo: "Go and accompany His Majesty, the King, to his palace."

The King, in order to show the guards how much he honored Creppo, knelt down and kissed his right hand and left.

When the King, accompanied by the guards, were leaving through the entrance door, the sentinel remained standing quiet and without paying the prescribed honors to the King.

The King looked at him with a threatening look, while the sentinel turning his back to him acted as if he did not see him.

Half an hour later the four guards who had accompanied King Gallonetti to his palace returned and one of them approached the sentinel and said: "Why did you not salute the King when we left?"

Sentinel: "I have done my duty. It was he who ought to have saluted me, for after all, he is only a man like ourselves, and if he wanted to be saluted, I was waiting for him to salute me."

Guard of Honor: "Do not our rules prescribe that the inferior must first salute the superior?"

Sentinel: "Dear brother, the rules are not ours, for they are only made to the advantage of superiors. If they had been written right, you would not speak that way. I have saluted the King first when he came in, and if he wanted to do his duty he had to

salute me first on going out. After all, the greater part of the people call us, as much we as our superiors, by the only name of 'the class of parasites,' because we live without producing anything. What profit is our work to the people? To clean weapons, to go to drill at the target and at maneuvers, gymnastic exercises, forced marches, etc. Because they did not understand it the people have tolerated all this; but now that the Human movement is spreading so fast, we are going to be looked upon as assassins and inhuman beings. And as far as I am concerned, it would be acting like a traitor for me to remain any longer under arms."

He went inside and taking off all his weapons, he threw them alongside the wall, and turning towards the others, he said to them: "Good-bye, if you wish you can go and make your report."

The others kept silent and did not utter a word, but after a while, the guard who had been speaking with the self-disarmed sentinel, disarmed also and said to the remaining ones: "I stay with you no longer, I will keep him company."

And the guard and the sentinel went out together.

The youth who had spoken to the sentinel and who had given him to understand that the King was nothing more than a common man, neither more nor less, neither superior nor inferior to any other man, was Tremio. The two guards who had thrown their weapons down were walking away in a quick step in order to get far away from Creppo's palace in the shortest possible time. Tremio recognized them from a distance and knew that one of the two guards was he who had spoken to him not long before.

He went to meet them and as he was coming up to them, smiling, he stretched out his hand to the unknown one and then to the one he had converted, and

he asked them: "Why do you walk with so much speed?"

Sentinel: "We have thrown down our weapons and we wish to get as far away as possible because we fear being arrested."

Tremio: "You are masters of your own will, when you do not do any harm to any body."

The two guards who had remained standing at the entrance door went up the steps and knocked at the door of Lieutenant Alintroni's office.

The lieutenant called: "Come in."

The first guard on entering said to him: "Notice that the sentinel and another guard have both thrown down arms and gone away."

The lieutenant went out to ring the bell at the large reception hall.

The door was opened to him and the first servant appeared asking: "What do you wish?"

Alintroni: "I want to speak to His Holiness."

Tassante (the servant): "I cannot disturb him now; tell me what it is, it is all the same."

Alintroni: "I cannot. Have him come here quickly. It is for very pressing and important business."

Tassante went away and a moment later he returned and Creppo was along with him.

The latter came near the door and said: "What do you want of me, Mr. Alintroni?"

Alintroni: "The sentinel and another guard have thrown down arms and have gone away. What must I do?"

Creppo: "Leave a sentinel, and all the other guards armed, and take them along with you and don't you return here until you have had the run-aways arrested. Then I shall punish them with ninety days prison, on bread and water, and sleeping on a hard board."

Alintroni left and calling together all the Guards of Honor, he made sure that each and every one of them was well provided with all the necessities, in case of any kind of an emergency that might happen.

The lieutenant at the head of the Guards of Honor, said in a low voice: "Forward, march!"

He went down the steps and having arrived at the entrance door he shouted: "Guards, halt!"

He placed the sentinel and looking to the right he saw at a certain distance the two guards. He stopped on the sidewalk, then walked inside and divided the guards into two divisions and called: "Dorico Nastro, come here!"

Dorico came forward: "At your command, Mr. Lieutenant."

Alintroni: "You remain here and command the second division. The two guards are going firmly on the sidewalk on the east side of the street of Aldochina. I am going with the first division and you, twenty minutes later, you will leave and thus I am sure that we will surprise them unawares."

The lieutenant left with the first division, took the left side of the Aldochina street, turning at the Van Doom street, and went down Leria street, and soon reached again Aldochina street. Dorico, commanding the second division looked very cautiously and when he saw Lieutenant Alintroni with his division, he shouted: "Forward, March!"

The two guards noticed Lieutenant Alintroni coming with the guards, and they were turning around to take to flight.

Tremio caught them by the vest and shouted: "Stand still. Don't be afraid."

The guards then noticed the other division coming and grew discouraged. The lieutenant with his division arrived near the place where the runaway guards stood and told them to return with him.

Tremio, turning towards the lieutenant Alintroni, said to him: "Calm yourself, brother."

The other division arrived also and they surrounded Tremio and the two guards on all sides.

Lieutenant Alintroni shouted to Tremio: "I am not your brother, but Lieutenant Alintroni, in the service of His Holiness."

Tremio (calmly): "You are right, you are not my brother, because you wear an inhuman habit, and you are armed like an assassin thirsting for human blood."

The people who were passing by stopped, and after a while the street became crowded with members of the Human Society.

Lieutenant: "I am not an assassin but I have to do my duty."

Tremio: "Bravo! be calm then, and if you have any human reason, listen to me;" and turning towards all the people, he said: "Brothers, members of the Human Society, we are endowed with Human will. This Human will is the sweetest, the dearest thing to any member of our Human Society, and if any member should want to take possession of the will of another, he would be nothing else than a common thief, and an inhuman wretch.

"These two guards have been in the service of His Holiness, perhaps of their own free will, or perhaps they may have been forced to do so. Now they have spontaneously, of their own accord, thrown down their weapons; they have at last understood that their service was useless and inhuman, to watch over the property robbed from the poor people to the sole benefit of Creppo, who during his whole life, has not produced anything necessary or useful to our Human Society.

"Lieutenant Alintroni comes now with a tremendous authority, by orders of Creppo, and wants

to arrest these two guards, without these having committed any crime or harm whatsoever, only having made use of their Human will."

(And turning towards the Lieutenant): "Oh! Lieutenant Alintroni, don't you see that Creppo with his infernal science has taken possession of your will and of that of these young guards; if you have your Human will, why should you act by that of His Holiness? If Creppo has an infernal will, let him act for himself and do not you allow him to handle fire with somebody else's hands."

Lieutenant Alintroni coming near Tremio, extended him his right hand and after a warm shake, said to him: "Pardon me, brother, you are right."

Tremio, stepping back, said: "He who carries arms cannot be a friend of *Humanity*."

Lieutenant Alintroni took his sword in his hand and threw it upon the ground without uttering a word. Tremio jumped up to him, embraced and kissed him.

The people shouted:

"Long live the Human Society!

Down with arms!"

All the guards also threw down the arms upon the ground.

The sidewalk where Tremio had spoken and the spot where the crowd had congregated around the guards happened to be just in front of a very large clothing establishment. Tremio shouted: "He who wants to put on civilians clothes, the clothes of a Human citizen, let him follow me."

He entered the merchant's establishment, and Lieutenant Alintroni and all the guards followed him. After a while they all came out except Tremio, who was settling with the merchants for the clothes they all had put on. The bill being made, Tremio wrote a note and handing it over to the merchant, said: "I

am a son of family. It is my father's duty to pay all the debts I incur."

Scarcely had Tremio come out than all the people commenced to shout: "Long live Human Society!"

And they all went down the Aldochina street.

The sentinel who was at the door at the entrance of Creppo's palace looking towards the direction from which he heard the people shout and not seeing either the lieutenant or the guards, cried out: "To arms."

Tassonte who was in the reception room talking with Creppo and who heard the shout of the sentinel, turned towards Creppo and said: "Holiness, the sentinel is shouting 'To arms!' "

Creppo: "Go quickly and see what is the matter."

Tassonte left and having come to the sentinel, asked him: "What is this? Why do you shout 'to arms?' "

Sentinel: "Lieutenant Alintroni had divided the Guards of Honor into two divisions; the two guards who had thrown down their weapons were at a short distance from here. He left first with his division, leaving the other here in command of Corporal Dorico. The latter after about a quarter of an hour also went out with his men. I looked attentively in the direction they all went, and I saw that both divisions had surrounded the two deserting guards. The people who were passing by were all stopping until the whole street was filled with spectators. I don't know what incident followed, but I heard the people commence to shout although I have not been able to distinguish the words they were shouting. Soon afterwards I saw the lieutenant and all the guards enter the large clothing establishment of Messrs. Bassenti & Son, and I did not notice them

come out of it. In the meanwhile the people kept on shouting and soon they were setting on the march all the time shouting and now they are coming down Al-dochina street."

Tassonte went out in haste and ran towards the place where the guards had thrown down their weapons. Having reached there, he looked on all sides, on the right and on the left, and then at that heap of weapons. Then he commenced to pick up the arms and placing them on his left arm, and having thus gathered a goodly number and being loaded like an ass, both arms full, he went to the door of the large clothing establishment and called: "Mr. Bassenti!"

The merchant, a tall and robust man, came to the front and said: "What do you wish?"

Tassonte: "Could you tell me where the lieutenant with the other guards have gone?"

Bassenti: "They went away with the people."

Tassonte: "Would you do me the favor to take these arms inside your establishment, that I may go and make a report to Creppo?"

Bassenti: "I do not want that infernal stuff inside my house. And here we have the uniforms of the guards also, you either take them away or I shall throw them out."

He entered the store and commenced throwing the uniforms out.

Tassonte: "Is this the respect you show for His Holiness? I thought that you were a religious man, while now I see very well that you are an infidel."

Bassenti: "Not like Creppo. For, if all the rich were as obstinate as he is, Social Revolution would certainly occur very soon."

Tassonte, with the weapons in his arms, set on walking all disturbed and troubled, and the people who passed him by were all shouting at him: "Trai-

tor! Nothing is produced with weapons. You must set yourself to work!"

He reached the entrance door, his face all bathed with perspiration, and he said to the sentinel: "Some people say that we are not working, and yet here I am tired like a beast. And you are a beast also, for you do not yet understand the human ideal."

Tassonte went up the steps and the sentinel shouted to the one that had answered Tassonte's call and said: "Tell me what does Human ideal mean?"

The other fellow answered him: "The Human ideal means that any member of the Human Society, before starting any kind of work must think whether that work will be useful to mankind; and if he comes to the conclusion that it may be dangerous and harmful and not productive of any good, he must not do it, for he would be looked upon as worse than a beast."

Having said so, he left him. The sentinel commenced to think, and after a moment he entered the palace and throwing down his weapons he went out and wending his steps towards the square, he said to himself: I am young, and I did not know what signification the Human ideal had; but you old tyrant, who have made us believe that you were a man of great science, and like unto a second god, you are nothing else but a disturber of the peace.

Tassonte had arrived at the large reception hall, he rang the bell, throwing down the arms before the door.

Creppo opened and when he saw Tassonte so tired and all covered with perspiration, and the weapons on the floor, he threw his hands on high and pulling his hair, he exclaimed: "Oh! accursed fate! Why abandon us so?"

And turning towards Tassonte, he said: "What has happened?"

Tassonte: "Lieutenant Alintroni and all the Guards of Honor have thrown down their weapons, and after having put on Human citizen's clothes at the clothing establishment of Messrs. Bassenti & Son, they went away with the people."

I had no sooner arrived at the place where they had thrown down the arms than a great compassion and pity for Your Holiness came to my mind and heart, at the thought that remaining without any Guard of Honor, your worthy and dignified authority has fallen."

Creppo: "And what? Do you also believe that we cannot find some more ignorant ones who will grasp the arms in our defense?"

Tassonte: "Your Holiness, the times of ignorance have gone by. Your magnetic force, your curses and anathemas, your excommunications, are to the people now nothing more than a thing to laugh at, because the people have at last understood that it was not Your Holiness who suppressed by virtue of the power of your religious authority the smallest little Human demonstration, but that it was the stupid sons of the poor people composing the armed hosts."

Creppo: "I am convinced that the poor people, after so much experience, have at last found the true key to their emancipation, because by educating themselves among themselves, not to take up arms again against the members of the Human Society, our fall is most certain, because we, of the privileged class, cannot alone defend ourselves. Seeing that we are only one per cent of the population, and even should we organize with the best weapons, according to the Human movement, we would be declared inhuman. And we do not know in what way to solve

the problem. Therefore we need arms and ammunition."

Tassonte: "Then I'll go and get the rest;" and he left.

Having arrived at the front door he saw the gun and sheath and bayonet which the sentinel had thrown upon the ground, and looking outside, he saw that the sentinel was no longer there. He picked up the arms and went back into the house. Creppo had not yet sat down. Seeing Tassonte coming back so soon, he went toward the door to meet him, and asked him; "Why have you returned so soon?"

Tassonte: "The sentinel has thrown down the arms and has gone away."

Creppo in a fit of despair, said: "Cursed be all weapons."

Tassonte: "I am going to get the others."

Creppo: "What are we to do with them, if we have no men to carry them? Let it go. May they go to perdition."

Tassonte: "What? Must I not go and get all the uniforms and all the arms that were left behind by the guards?"

Creppo: "No; but pick up these and take them to the religious armory."

Tremio was at the head of the people, who did not cease to shout: "Down with arms!"

And profiting of the opportunity, because he saw that from all parts, people of all classes, men and women, large and small, rich and poor, were joining the crowd, he went and placed himself in front of the temple.

Fristo had gone in search of Alestro, in order to learn something about Orrento, and tell him how the Creppolian Council had ended.

He found him at home talking with his mother. Alestro no sooner had seen Fristo than he went to

meet him and shake hands with him, and said: "Come in, brother."

Fristo, taking off his hat, greeted the good old woman, and said: "In the name of *Humanity*, I greet you, sister, and he shook hands with her."

The woman: "Welcome to my Human brother."

Fristo: "Please tell me your name."

Woman: "Rosa Bianca (Rose White)."

Fristo turning to Alestro said to him: "Brother do you wish to know how the Creppolian Council ended?"

Alestro: "I know it very well, better than you."

Fristo: "Who told it to you, Tremio?"

Alestro: "I have seen it with my own eyes. I would have wished to have you present at the last part, when the Human Spirit took hold of the infernal books containing the minutes of the Creppolian Council and carried them away with him."

Fristo: "What do you say?"

Alestro: "The truth. You know that Humans dare not, must not lie."

Fristo: "I feel all disturbed! To tell the truth, and in a few words. I hardly comprehend. The Human Spirit! Whence did it come to take the books? Which ones remained there, after we left, but the most inhuman of mortals, Creppo, Gallonetti and Arconti. Where did the Human Spirit come from? There was nobody else left there but those three."

Alestro: "Of course, you all thought so. But I was under the table, hid from all looks. Orrento had commissioned me to fulfill a Human labor and duty, which, in fact, you have noticed, I have done, when Creppo found a note upon his table. And instead of fulfilling one duty I fulfilled two, for at the very last I succeeded in carrying off and away the books."

Fristo: "By *Humanity!* How do you do that?"

Alestro: "When Arconti had remained the last one and was alone in the large hall I caused him a terrible fear and made him run like a rat pursued by a cat."

Fristo: "So that the books are no longer in Creppo's possession?"

Alestro: "No, indeed; but they have become the prey of the flames."

Fristo: "And why did you not preserve them, so that in the future you might know how to reprove them for the crimes they have committed?"

Alestro: "When the Human government shall be established, nobody will ever again be reprovved or chastised for anything done in the past. But instead of this, we will love each other like brothers and sisters, belonging to one and the same family."

Fristo: "Well, brother, will you accompany me? I have heard shouts from towards Aldochina street. I think that Tremio will have found some means of organizing some Human demonstration."

Alestro: "Let us go! Let us beat the iron while it is hot and make hay while the sun shines. Our propaganda must not suffer any truce nor take any rest, so that the inhuman governments and the false religions may fall."

They went out, and when they had arrived within a short distance from the temple, they heard the shouts of the people. They hastened their steps and when they had arrived near, they wondered at the great mass of people congregated on the square of the temple. They looked around on all sides to see whether they could find or see Tremio somewhere, but it was impossible. However, from the piazza fronting the Aldochina street, they heard Tremio's voice, saying: "Brothers and

sisters, perhaps my words will have no effect upon the laboring class, because I am a child of the privileged class, and to the latter alone I am now addressing myself.

“We have arrived at the beginning of the twentieth century, which signalizes a false theory about the origin of our Human Society. Modern science, which has been originated by free thought, by Human reason, makes known the errors, which the old inhuman science committed, since the very time when the first basis was laid towards the foundation of civilization among our Human Society.

“The first learned men had a sublime ideal in describing the origin of our Human Society. They founded a magnificent basis, by saying: ‘That God, after having accomplished the creation of the whole universe, came down upon this earth, took some mud and formed a human body to his own image and blew into it the breath of life, and so man had life and a soul, and this first man was called Adam.’

“But such a basis cannot serve for the foundation of modern science which develops its knowledge not corresponding at all with the existing organization of our Human Society. Let us look into the truth about this:

GOD A DIVINE ARTIST.

“Certainly if God has created Adam to his image, all his science, all his genius and all his divine art must have been employed in the accomplishment of that sublime work; and he ceased his labors when he had made sure that his work was just like unto himself. Then he blew the spirit of life into that body and instantly the body was endowed with life, arising before his Creator.

SIGNIFICATION.

“Let us suppose that at this great mystery of the Creation of Man, a third person was looking on

all the proceedings, and that the latter could see a divine spirit coming down from heaven in the form of a man, and having reached the earth, that divine spirit set to work making a body out of mud, and fashioning it to his own similitude. And when by divine virtue and power that third person saw that new body get up, endowed with life, he must have been very much astonished, indeed, because there could not be any visible difference at all between the two, between the creator and the creature.

“Now, if this third person should have happened to turn around or to look some other way for a single moment, and at the same time the Creator should have put himself in the place of the created one, and vice versa, in other words, if the Creator and the creature had exchanged their positions or places, when this third person would have again cast his looks upon them, he would not have been able to tell which of the two was the creature or the Creator, or rather he would have believed, knowing nothing of the change of places, that the creature was the Creator and the Creator was the creature, because both were of the same image and pattern, were equal in every respect, were equal beings. And if this third person should have seen one of the two ascend to heaven by divine power, he would have had to recognize that one as the divine spirit Creator of a second terrestrial God.

“This second terrestrial God, beholding himself all alone, was haunted by the desire of getting a female companion, and now, at the second descent of the divine spirit, he asked him for one. And the God of Heaven, by his divine power, had him fall into a profound sleep, took one of his ribs, with which he fashioned the terrestrial goddess, and awakening him, he said: ‘Behold, Adam, here is

your companion, which I created from part of your own body.'

"In this case if he wished to believe in the first ideal choice of the first scientists, our Society would have no right whatever to call itself Human Society, but divine, instead. And our civilization was to be based upon such an ideal!

DIVINE CIVILIZATION.

"According to the first ideal, Adam was a god and Eve a goddess, because natural human science does nothing else but reason truth. It is certain that if one sows wheat he cannot reap barley. So they, if Adam and Eve were really created by God, to his own image, they must be divine, if not celestial at least terrestrial and divine, and our Society being based upon such an ideal, the line of civilization was found on which our Society was to be educated. If you kill a man or a woman, you kill a god or a goddess. If you ill-treat a man or a woman, you ill-treat a god or a goddess, and so on; all offenses done to or against others were done to God. But how can our Society be called divine, if we cannot do anything for divinity. For, if God, by one single word created the sun, the moon and all other celestial bodies which shine in the firmament of heaven, we must create mansions, gardens, palaces, castles, cities and all other things necessary to us.

"But behold, everything is entirely contrary to this; for the smallest little thing needed by our *Humanity*, our Human Society, is the result or the product of labor; and if the privileged class wishes to participate in these products of labor, they must go to work also.

"Perhaps some one of the privileged class might tell me: 'The riches we possess have been given to us by God, or we have accumulated it by our economy.' But it seems to me, insomuch as I have

been able to demonstrate to you, our Human Society has nothing in common with God; and if you are not yet convinced, I can give you other proofs, because natural Human science means nothing but the truth. Well, tell me, brothers of the privileged class, why have you not sent your sons to work when they had reached the age of eighteen years?

“Of course, you’ll answer me: ‘Because we have wealth, and we are able to keep them in idleness. Now, if God is the father of our Human Society and by his divine virtue and power he created the universe in six days, it seems to me that in so many thousands of years, he might have changed this earth into a paradise of delights. So, then, if God gives nothing, then it is labor which produces.

ECONOMY.

“Brothers composing the privileged class, I am twenty-four years old, and I take for my example and pattern my father who is rich. He does not work with his bones and muscles, but, indeed, with his mind; and for nearly twenty-seven years he has had the appointment or position or office of furnisher to the government. He has always employed five persons; a manager, a secretary and three office clerks. I do not know what have been his gains or profits, only I can tell you that inside of three years he has built himself a palace which has cost him one million and a half dollars. The palace is four stories high and contains one hundred and twenty-six rooms and eight store-rooms. Well, what do you think? A few days ago, while returning home I saw some persons standing and looking at the palace, and I heard one of them say: ‘Mr. Alsenzio has built a fine house.’ Now, judge for yourselves whether such language was anything else but the product of the false inhuman science. For if my father wished to build that house by himself, he

would not have succeeded in his whole life in digging out the excavations for the foundations. My father, while the laborers and workmen were working at the construction of the palace was not doing anything else but looking on for a moment each day.

“And it seems to me that even stupidity itself can understand that by looking on nothing is produced or done, and consequently it is labor only that produces.

“My father has not been an economical man, for he was fond of gambling, of going to the theatre, and other places of amusement. In our house there has always been abundance of everything; liquors of all kinds have never been wanting; and my father is very proud. He has gone into a tremendous amount of expenses to furnish the house. He loves paintings, and he has filled a hall to such an extent that it is truly a gallery of fine arts, containing the masterpieces of all the great masters. He loves music, and he has given to my sister Ramona, a splendid musical education by the most celebrated professors, and he has spent money without end for that purpose. It has often seemed to me that he must have at his disposal and command a purse without bottom. All the work he has had to do has been at the end of each month to look over the books of the secretary, go to the military commander and get his voucher, from there to the financial treasurer to exchange or cash it; then to return home accompanied by eight soldiers, two to carry the money, and six armed ones to act as guards. So, then, brothers of the privileged class, if I were to ask whence came that money which my father had those soldiers carry to our house, perhaps you would answer me from the government. While I dare to tell you whose money it was. It belonged to the poor ignorant laborers and workingmen at all trades, who

after having received in compensation for their hard labor a very small pay, hardly sufficient to buy all the things they needed, were moreover imposed with taxes by the government."

From the midst of the crowd there rose a voice reproving him and shouting:

"It is we, the rich, who are paying the taxes to the government, and not the laboring class!"

Tremio turning in the direction whence that voice came and answering the person that had spoken, said: "The rich have never paid any taxes to the government; but, it has always been the laboring class; and if you are not convinced, I can give you a very plain illustration of this.

"Suppose that the government should have imposed taxes on all men skilful in some kind of work, not in the way of money, but in the way of produce; so that each man would have paid a bushel of wheat or any other produce having an equivalent worth, on condition that such a produce be the product of his own labor. In this case, yes, indeed, they should have paid the taxes; but as they are paying their taxes in money and not in kind, even should they have ten thousand dollars a piece, each capitalist, to the government they have not paid anything. For, if the government taxes a rich man, say for ten thousand dollars, it must know that he is going to rob one hundred thousand dollars from the laboring class. As a rule the government has never managed any industry, except the military machine, the object of which has been to protect all those who were robbing the laboring class."

And turning towards that person who had interrupted him, he said: "Have you understood, brother, with your high hat?"

The latter was Mr. Crimesi, owner of three coal and two silver mines, and he answered: "Well, have I not attended to my business and to my affairs?"

Tremio: "Come nearer, brother, so it will not be necessary to shout so loud."

Mr. Crimesi came nearer and stopped at about three paces away from Tremio.

Tremio: "So you said that you tended to your business and your affairs, while I can prove you that not even the shoes you wear are yours."

Mr. Crimesi: "And I can answer you that you and all those who profess the Human Doctrine are crazy fools."

Tremio: "Be calm, brother, it seems to me that you have studied law but did not become a lawyer, because you did not need to; I want to ask you a question."

Mr. Crimesi: "Speak away, I am listening."

Tremio: "My mother was telling me once that there was once upon a time a father who had seven sons, and he owned a fine field, at a short distance from the city. The father fell seriously ill, and the oldest son went furtively to have a testamentary copy of a will made, in which it was stated that the father, after his death, left the whole field to him (the oldest son). The father died and the seven brothers continued to cultivate the land together, but just before the harvest, the oldest brother said to the others that the field was his. The brothers commenced to curse their father for the villainous action (they supposed) he had done. One day, while the oldest son was amusing himself in the city, the others made a plot against him, that at the first opportunity they would make him burn the copy of the will; at first they would try this in the quiet, but if he should not agree in doing so and make restitution to them of the stolen patrimony they would see them-

selves obliged to act with more forcible means. In fact, one evening they were all sitting at home talking of one thing and another, when one of the brothers turning to the oldest one said to him: 'Where have you the copy of the will which our father left with you, and which secures the land to you?'

'The eldest brother answered:

'Why, do you want to see it?'

'Yes, said the youngest brother.'

'The eldest brother arising went into a back room and soon reappeared with the copy of the will in his hand and showed it to the brothers and said: 'Here is the copy of the will and testament which our father made and by which he states that the land is mine.'

The youngest brother answered: 'If our father on account of his old age has left to you alone the possession of the whole field, he has made a mistake, and we cannot reprove him for it, because he is no longer among us. But you knew and know that we are your brothers and it is your duty to burn that will.'

"The eldest brother, with a resolute tone of voice, said to him: 'No, our father left the field to me and I am the master of it.'

"The other brothers, arising, shouted to him: 'Either you shall burn it or we will send you to our father, and there you can tell him that on his account, we took your life.'

"The eldest brother seeing all of his brothers in such anger against him, weakened and cried out: 'I am the guilty one, not our father. I am the cruel one, not he. He loved us all alike.'

"And now in the presence of them all he burned the will, asking their pardon.

"Now tell me, Mr. Crimesi, you who are a member of the privileged class like myself, if the eldest brother had opposed to the will of his brothers and if the latter had sent him to the land of beyond, whose fault would it have been?"

Mr. Crimesi: "The eldest brother."

Tremio: "Bravo! Well and good! Well, then, is not the laboring class asking for its rights in the name of *Humanity*? All they wish for is the rights as members of the Human Society. And this is what is denied them by those of the privileged class.

"The acts which secure to us the ownership of private property are illegal, because the earth belongs to man, that is, to the whole Human Society, and no one ever had the right to appropriate to himself any part of it.

"We have not produced anything and even to the very shoes we are wearing, they by Human right, belong to our brothers of the laboring class who are crying loudly and incessantly that they wish that the privileged class would embrace the Human Doctrine."

And turning towards the laborers and workingmen around him, he said to them: "Brothers of the laboring class, reason is in your favor, keep on crying and claiming until you shall have obtained your Human rights."

The workingmen commenced to shout:

"Long live the Human Doctrine!"

"Down with arms and weapons!"

"Long live brotherhood and fraternity!"

"Long live universal peace!"

No sooner had Tremio ceased to speak, and the shouts of the people were dying away, than Alestro came up to shake hands with Tremio and praised him loudly for the fine Human discourse he had just delivered.

Then followed Fristo and many others from among the crowd who had taken the Human Oath; they all came up to shake hands with Tremio and to give him their share of applause and praise.

Count Roselli, who had been commander of the first corps of braves, presented himself to Tremio, and after having shaken hands with him said that he wanted to make a little speech to the laboring class.

Tremio introduced him to the workingmen, saying: "Brothers of the laboring class, I have the honor and the pleasure to introduce to you now Count Roselli, who has been the commander of the first corps of the braves, and who recently has taken the Human Oath, having embraced the Human Doctrine."

Count Roselli, looking on the right and on the left, said: "Brothers, workingmen, I am sure that in your hearts there still exists some hatred against me, because I have for a long time been at the head of a body of assassins which was composed of sons of the laboring class. I knew it very well that all the young people who composed my corps of braves, all of them, as long as they were wearing the clothes of Human citizens were all good and kind; but as soon as they were clothing themselves with the inhuman uniforms and were following our diabolical instructions, they became changed into wild beasts, thirsty and greedy for human blood.

"I am not to blame at all for that for it was my father who, when seeing that I was quite a promising student, sent me to the Military Academy, because he was ambitious to see me covered with an uniform which perhaps he thought would bring honor to his family and name. While now, today, I understand I have done nothing else but dishonoring them.

“The Military Academy is nothing else but a course of infernal studies. There one studies how to massacre the members of the Human family, and how to educate the youth in becoming assassins. These academies are to be found all over the face of the globe peopled by the Human family or Society.

“The war, which a few years ago, we have waged against the Croini, has demonstrated that on both sides they were well educated in the infernal art, for it ended by leaving forty-eight thousand dead upon the battle field on our side, and fully as many or more who fell on the other side.

“The guilt of war lies with the laboring class, for while many cannot find work, the few who do work, do it with the aid of machines, which produce more than is necessary, so much so that store-rooms and magazines are stacked full with products in reserve.

“The capitalists made a report to the government and wanted to find another place to sell the accumulated products. The government made a demand on the government of Croi, but this demand was rejected because the Croinian capitalists opposed to it, and our government was obliged by our brother capitalists to declare war, a conflict which terminated without any good results; because when the treaty of peace commenced to be framed, it was stipulated by mutual consent on both sides to form an act of commercial reciprocity, and from what I have been able to understand, wars are nothing but a hunt to death on the laboring class.

“So then, brothers of the laboring class, ask the modern press how many capitalists or sons of capitalists died upon the battle fields. They will tell you, if they tell the truth at all, not one, not one.

"I had only two sons of rich parents in my whole corps, and their fathers, even before the war had commenced, wrote to me to take good care of their sons, otherwise, in case they ran any danger my life would not any longer be sure after my return."

And turning to the right where there was a group of students, he said to them: "Oh! you sons of the privileged class, do not obey your parents if they wish to send you to the Military Academy. For there nothing else is done than to study how to kill our own brothers, composing the laboring class. But if you understand that you are also members of the Human Society, take the Human Oath, for that only will open to us the doors to our modern civilization."

The whole crowd set to clap hands and shout: "Bravo!"

At the same time Tremio, Fristo and some other persons who had understood the importance of this speech, shook hands with Count Roselli and praised him very much for the Human ideas and sentiments he had expressed in his discourse.

Alestro, dressed in workingmen's clothes, presented himself to the public, and said: "Brother workingmen, have you understood what weapons are and for what they are used. It seems to me that our brother Roselli explained it very well.

"The government has not ordered arms to be manufactured with the intention of having the privileged class massacred, but indeed, on the contrary, to murder the laboring class at wholesale.

"We, of the laboring class, represent ninety-nine per cent of the population or members of the Human Society, and if our number should become reduced to seventy-nine per cent or less the privileged class might then live in luxury and complete idleness, each individual having twenty slaves at his command.

"The government is furnished with the most formidable engines of destruction, its magazines are filled with ammunitions, and it thinks that it is ready to destroy the laboring class. If the government has the weapons, it seems to me that by itself it cannot do very much damage with them to the laboring class.

"The privileged class has the courage of rats, who at the slightest rumor scamper away. Up to this time, weapons have been taken up by the laboring class, and they have been using them against themselves. Well, brother workingmen, what do you say? Are you still going to continue this imbecility of not understanding the things which are to your enjoyment and those that are to your harm? Not one of you should again become a soldier, and you should look upon weapons as you would upon the most venomous serpent which is always ready to attack you. The government does not keep an armed host to fight and destroy the bears and the wolves of the forests, or any other kind of dangerous and destructive animals that might cause harm or damage to the members of our Human family; no, it is only in order to destroy the laboring class, whose members they employ to do this cruel work.

"Oh! fathers and mothers of family, educate your sons, not to take up arms against the members of the Human Society."

At a little distance from Alestro there stood a fine looking young man, with his right arm cut off, and calling up to him Alestro said: "Come nearer, brother."

The youth came nearer and when he was at a few paces away from Alestro, he stopped.

Alestro: "Tell me, brother, where is your other arm?"

The youth answered him: "I have lost it in the war against Croini, and I have also lost my left leg; and raising his limb, he showed the artificial leg."

Alestro: "Come up here."

The youth went and placed himself near him. Alestro went to meet him, shook hands with him, and said: "Pardon me, brother, for shaking your left hand, in the absence of your right one."

And turning towards the people he said to them: "Brothers and sisters, behold what weapons have occasioned."

And turning towards the young man, he said to him: "Tell me, brother, before going to the war, at what trade were you working?"

The youth answered: "At the shoemaker's trade. But after the invention of machines the employer sent me away with many others to go and look for work somewhere else. It was impossible to find any, and while walking through the streets in search of something to do, I came across a bill posted on the bill boards, I read it, and found out that the government was recruiting young men as volunteers for the army, as the war was at hand. We united, six of us, all desperate on account of the want of work, and the lack of means, being without money or resources, and we enlisted. I was the only one who yet had fifty cents in his pocket. From the six I was the only one to return alive, but short of some limbs. The other five lost their life on the battle field. Oh! Had I heard your speech before enlisting, I would have preferred to starve rather than become a soldier."

Alestro, turning toward the people, said: "Have you understood what happened to the young people who enlist in the army of volunteers to go to war? They leave their lives on the battle field or they come back with broken arms and legs."

And, turning towards the youth, he said: "Tell me, how do you make your living?"

The youth answered: "The government pays me a pension of fifteen dollars a month."

Alestro: "Well, it is not so very bad then; you can live decently without working, and you ought to be satisfied with the pension the government gives you."

The Soldier: "A curse upon all pensions! My life is useless; it would have been better had I died, and not have to look at myself in this wretched and pitiable condition."

Alestro, turning towards the people, said: "See there, what those inhuman governments are doing. They have given the example of their most inhuman science, because instead of providing for the welfare of the whole people, they do nothing but continually provide to the making and manufacturing of those infernal engines of destruction which all tend to our and their destruction.

"Human science tends quite to the contrary, it commences by forming the right basis of the Universal Government, acknowledging one God, one people, one flag.

"The Universal Human government shall be guided and directed only by Order and Pure Civilization. The Human Government will abolish all the earthly religions, and instead of these it will establish the Human Oath, which will have a greater signification concerning the welfare of the entire Human Society.

"The Human Oath means that men shall no longer take up arms against the members of the Human Society.

"The Universal Human government shall have for its basis the Human Doctrine, which will be the true source of our modern civilization."

Before Alestro there stood a group of young men, and among them a certain one called Alas. The latter asked Alestro, saying: "Brother, you have said that no one should go and become a soldier, but the government with its tremendous authority will oblige us to become soldiers, and we are obliged to obey the law."

Alestro: "The representatives of the government did not go to arrest a young man who did not want to become a soldier by entering the military service. They have only made the laws. And those who have been employed to have these laws respected, have been the sons of the laboring class. And if the latter still insist in their ignorance, go you also; but when they wish to give you the arms, refuse to accept them and tell them that you have taken the Human Oath."

Alas: "And if we are brought before a council of war or court martial, they certainly will punish us according to martial law."

Alestro: "They cannot punish you, because in their codes they will not be able to find a single article, stating how to punish a youth that has taken the Human Oath."

Alas: "They are inhuman and will punish all the same."

Alestro: "Well, in that case, ask of the inhuman judge and tell him: "Your Honor, Mr. Judge, what must I do with the gun, sword, bayonet and cartridges?"

He will answer you: "You must use them to defend your country."

You, showing him your Human courage, tell him: "Why do you not go to get massacred, and experience what effects balls and bullets have upon the Human body?"

Turning then towards the people, he said: "Brothers and sisters, three months ago, I went to the hospital to pay a visit to a friend of mine, who had been wounded in the last strike of the coal miners. I found him in a condition to move the hardest of men to pity on seeing him. He had received two shots, one in the right shoulder and the other in the lower part of his chest, and he was uttering heart-rendling moans and cries. With him there were seven others, also very badly wounded. As soon as he saw me he commenced to weep, and then told me that he was, indeed, very sick at heart because he could no longer see his wife nor his little children, because the doctor had forbidden it, on account of his weakness, strong emotions would make him take a turn for the worse. I took the liberty to encourage him to keep quiet and that soon he would be strong enough to be allowed to see his people. I shook hands with him and kissed him, and so with the others and I left. After a few steps I came to another ward filled with sick people. I entered to find out who they were, and I found out that they were the soldiers who had fought against the strikers. Near the first bed there was a sister of charity, who was feeding the soldier. He had been wounded in both arms and could not use them to feed himself.

"I asked the sister whether there was in that room any son of landlord or rich parents, that I wished to speak to him. The sister went from bed to bed asking for the information. Finally, after having gone the whole round, she came back to tell me that they were all poor.

"So then, brothers and sisters of the laboring class, arms only harm ourselves, for if they had harmed the privileged class, they would have been abolished long ago. Consequently it is with ourselves that the Human movement must start, because

they of the privileged class, when they see us killed through our fights among ourselves, laborers and poor people against laborers and poor people, they laugh in their sleeves at our imbecility."

A voice from amidst the crowd cried out: "We want the revindication of social order otherwise than by the Human Oath. Blood is paid with blood. Our brothers have been butchered by the fault of the privileged class and the latter must pay for it."

Alestro: "The fault has been that of all those who have been massacred, because if, before reaching the slaughter, they had thrown down the arms the representatives of the government could not have said anything else than: 'The laboring class have gotten so far as to be civilized; and at this time they would be us and of ours.'"

And turning to the side from which he had heard the shout coming, he said: "Tell me, brother, you who are wishing for social revindication. If all the sons of the laboring class, who compose our armed hosts, were to throw down their weapons, what would remain of our governments?"

The person addressed answered: "Well, of course it would be all up and done with them."

Alestro: "Consequently there is need of a formidable propaganda against arms in order that they may be reduced to the state of steps and stairs at the entrance of and in our houses, so that we ourselves and the future generations may continually tread them under foot.

"I, myself, dear brothers and sisters of all classes without any distinction of race, I wish to give you an illustration of social revindication. Suppose that from all those who are here present, one per cent were members of the privileged class, and that these by means of their politics and money should succeed in employing, that is in giving em-

ployment to thirty per cent of the laboring class, and that united together these would be all of them armed to the teeth with the most modern patterns of weapons, arms and all kinds of engines of war, and that the others should be provided with popular arms and they would be led the ones against the others, how would it all end? By the terrible massacre of every one of them on both sides?

"Oh! no, my heart is Human and I call your attention, of you all who shall believe who are members of the Human Society, and every single one who is convinced, to unite all and every one of you to my ideal by raising your right hand and taking the Human Oath."

All those present raised their hands.

Alestro: "Shout brothers and sisters:

Long live the Human Doctrine!

Down with arms!

Long live brotherhood and fraternity!

Long live universal peace!"

When the people were through shouting, Alestro together with all those interested in the propaganda, commenced to sing "The Strength of the Human Doctrine" and they set on marching towards Aldochina street.

After each verse of "The Strength of the Human Doctrine," the people shouted as before and when they had reached in front of Creppo's palace, they stopped, still keeping on singing and shouting.

Tassonte went running to open a window and was astonished on seeing the whole street filled with people, and thought that they had stopped here through respect for Creppo, and so he went to inform him of it.

Creppo was busy writing in his private office. Tassonte knocked at the door and after a moment he heard Creppo's voice saying: "Who is there?"

Tassonte: "It is I, your faithful servant."

Creppo opened the door and said: "I had told you not to come and disturb me, because I had to solve a very important and very intricate problem, which if I succeed in it, will be for the good of us all."

Tassonte: "I came to tell Your Holiness, that outside there is a very large crowd of people singing and shouting, and they have stopped here. I think that they are expecting Your Holiness to come forward and give them your holy blessings."

Creppo: "What are they singing and shouting?"

Tassonte: "All I have been able to understand was 'Long live the Human Doctrine!'"

Creppo: "Cursed be all this Human Doctrine, which is going to be adopted and accepted by the people, I will die for shame. But no, do not fear; there is no doubt but tomorrow there shall be a very imposing religious demonstration, which shall show and prove that religion is stronger than ever before. I have already contributed twenty-five thousand dollars and the government is contributing the same amount, and I am sure that all the capitalists, each and every one of them, will contribute altogether another fifty thousand dollars, and with one hundred thousand dollars we can get twenty thousand persons from among the laboring class, paying them five dollars apiece, while many from among the most ignorant will even be satisfied to come for one dollar.

"Another ten thousand persons will be the women and the old people, and then the members of the privileged class. Now I am sure that all those who have taken part in the propaganda against the government and our holy religion, will be entirely demoralized and will become convinced that the Hu-

man Doctrine neither now nor ever shall be adopted by the masses because a very large number among the laboring class are still very ignorant; and, according to the Human rules and regulations, all those who have taken the Human Oath, or shall take it in the future, shall have to cease being members of all so-called associations whatsoever, shall have to abolish and banish from their hearts once and forever any and every religion whatsoever. The Human propagandists in order to be encouraged by the continual and successful progress of the Human movement, will have to see to it that all the old organizations shall become weaker and weaker until the entire demolition and ruin of any and every one of them shall be accomplished. They will have to see to it that they spread all over the world and then, this accomplished with success, there would be on the whole face of the globe but one single organization which would be the Confederate Human Society."

Tassonte: "But tell me, Your Holiness, would things be better then?"

Creppo: "Of course they would, because as long as Human Society is divided and governed by different governments, and educated through hundreds of different systems of religion, as it now is, it is nothing but an abandoned bridge, having the two sideways built, but without any connection in the middle."

Tassonte: "And why then is Your Holiness opposed to the Human movement? You have under your dominion thousands and thousands of churches and millions upon millions of ministers and faithful. At a word from your mouth, the order being given, they could all together commence a tremendous propaganda for the Human cause, extending the Human Doctrine among all the peoples and having them take

the Human Oath? I am sure that by so doing, in less than three months, Human Society would be freed and liberated from the present infernal system, and thus your name in modern Human history would receive a place famed and respected forever and always."

Creppo: "I cannot, because I have sworn on the book of our false religion. I am the basis of the present system and it is my duty to find out and to set to work means to maintain it as it is."

Tassonte: "Your Holiness seems to me to be very obstinate. When an oath has been taken to harm the members of the Human Society, and one gets to be aware of the error he has made, he does not commit any fault whatever in breaking his sworn word. Your Holiness seems to me a person very much learned in all sciences and you will pardon me for speaking to you with so much confidence. Let us suppose the fact that I should be a member of some one of the secret societies and I would have taken the oath in it. Now, suppose it would be imposed upon me to attempt at your life. If I were to observe and be faithful to my oath, what would be the consequence?"

Creppo: "You would be an assassin, and worse even, who after having been esteemed by me and respected should take away my life."

Tassonte: "And has not perhaps the poor people loved you like God up to this day? Why do you not break your infamous oath, as I am breaking mine. And drawing a poniard he said to him: Here is the infernal weapon which was destined to take away your life, but the Human Oath which I have taken yesterday in the evening saves you."

He took the poniard with both hands, and breaking it in two he threw it on the ground and looking at Creppo in the face, he said to him:

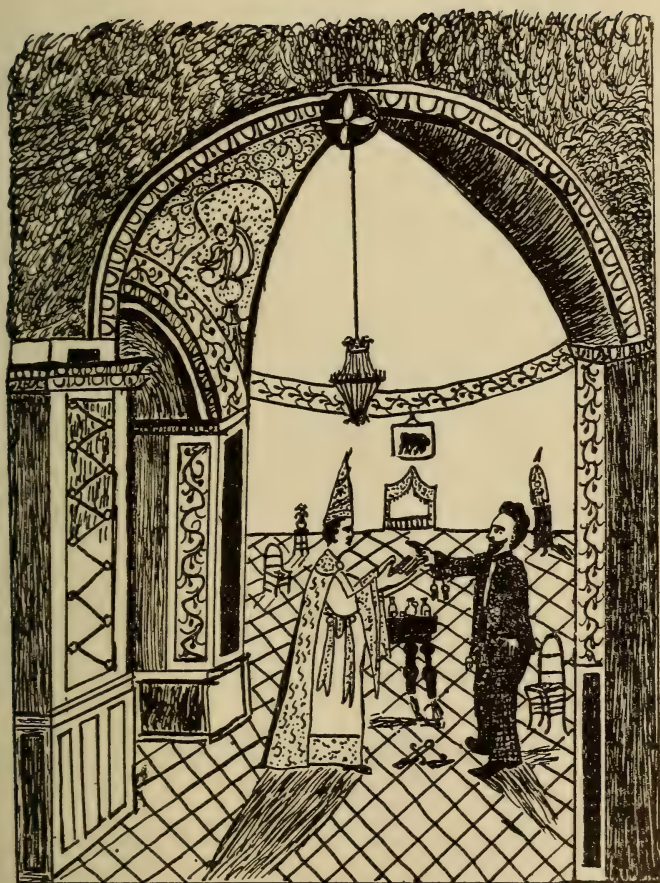


Illustration on Human Movement.

"I am not your servant, but your brother, and remember the Human movement."

Having spoken thus he left. Creppo stood like a statue, looking at him going away, after a while he said to himself and in an undertone:

"One does not know any more whom to trust. But as far as I can understand it the Human Oath is the only thing that can save the Human Society."

Tassonte having arrived outside saw that the Human demonstration had gone away, stopped a while and hearing the shouts he commenced to walk in the direction whence they came in order to unite with the crowd.

The Human demonstration was marching on, and Tremio and all those who were singing "The Strength of the Human Doctrine" had deliberated to lead the crowd in front of the royal palace.

The sun had gone down, and the King and the Queen were in their private room talking about the Human movement which had taken extraordinary proportions among the masses of the people.

The King was remembering the sheet of paper which Orrento had had the skill to have reach the members forming the Creppolian Council. He went to fetch it and when he came back he handed it to the Queen, saying:

"Read this sheet of paper, and you will see that although it is written with coarseness, I will preserve it as long as I shall live."

The Queen took the sheet of paper and commenced to read it and when she had finished reading it she said: "Tell me, is not Orrento the fellow whom you have condemned to death?"

King: "Yes."

Queen: "But what crimes had he committed?"

King: "They have accused him of disturbing the present order of things."

Queen: "In what way did he disturb them?"

King: "He seeks to introduce among the masses of the people the Human Doctrine and he makes them take the Human Oath."

Queen: "What does that mean, the Human Doctrine?"

King: "It means that all the members of the Human Society from the age of eighteen to fifty-five years, must attend to some necessary work which must be useful to the Human Society."

Queen: "The sick also?"

King: "No, some days ago, as I was entering here, some one threw a little pamphlet at my feet. It speaks about the Human movement and says:

'That the Human Society can only dispense from work all minors under eighteen years of age, because these must attend to their instruction and education; also, all those who are unable to work on account of sickness or physical inability; and again, those who have reached fifty-five years of age. All these will receive the same compensation that those who are working are receiving.' "

Queen: "And what does Human Oath mean?"

King: "The Human Oath means that the Human must no longer take up any arms against the members of the Human Society."

Queen: "I don't know, but on the evening when you held that Creppolian Council, there were present the most learned persons to be found, and yet, you had the courage to condemn to death a man who stands for the solution of the greatest problem that can be imagined for the welfare of the whole Human Society."

King: "It was not I who have condemned him to death. It was His Holiness, who incited the sacred ministers and the illustrious counsellors to condemn him."

Queen: "I don't know but I am sure that you must have taken part in it."

King: "I have said a few words, of course, because I was obliged to do so."

Queen: "And why did you not remember your poor unfortunate father, who, if this Human movement had started a few years sooner would surely not have suffered the cruel death that took him away. Oh! Gallonetti, if your father could come out of the tomb, I am sure and certain that he would put himself at the head of this Human movement. He might speak and tell what atrocious pains a Human body must suffer when pierced by those accursed balls. Look at your mother, you know she never more shall have peace in her heart. Oh! my dear beloved husband, I recommend to you that you also should participate in the Human movement; in order that every time you leave me, my hearth may not be oppressed with fear of never seeing you again alive." (At these last words tears were running down her cheeks).

The King, taking her by the hands, and looking at her in the face, said to her: "Do not weep, my dear, I will do all I can possibly do in order that the movement may progress. But in accordance with the position I occupy I must do my duty."

Queen: "What do you mean by your duty?"

King: "I must see to it that the laws are respected, that is why I took my oath."

Queen: "So, then, you are not convinced yet that your oath was inhuman? So, then, you mean that you will again, at the slightest provocation, have the flower of youth massacred. I unfortunately cannot understand that infernal organization of yours."

In the private room there was a balcony looking into Leria street. It was just from that direction that the Human demonstration was coming still

shouting and singing. The Queen heard the command given by Colonel Santrelli, to "Charge Arms," and suddenly she arose and sought to run away: The King stopped her and asked: "What is the matter?"

The Queen (crying): "The massacre ordered by you."

The King took her tenderly in his arms.

Queen: "Let me alone if you have a Human heart, and making a thousand efforts she gave him a push which sent him falling into a chair near the table, and running to the balcony she shouted with all her might: "Colonel, do you not notice that it is the civilized people who are coming, while you and all those who take up arms are not yet civilized."

At the same moment the Human demonstration was arriving, shouting:

"Long live the Human Doctrine!"

"Down with arms!"

"Long live brotherhood and fraternity!"

"Long live universal peace!"

And the Queen, raising her hand to heaven, and looking at the people commenced to shout, saying: "Yes, brothers and sisters, keep on shouting until the infamous arms and weapons are abolished."

She re-entered the room and taking the King by the arm, she said: "Come, come and see the civilized people."

King: "That civilized people is nothing else but the fall of our authority."

Those interested in the Human propaganda, were carrying a table upon which Tremio jumped and said: "Brothers and sisters of all classes without difference of race! Under the Universal Human government, directed by Order and Purest Civilization, every man is a king and every woman is a

queen, and our sons will be princes and our daughters will be princesses.

“The Human government does not cause titles to fall down and be lost, but it causes them to raise to a title, he or she, who had none before, so that every member of the Human Society shall have the same title.

“The Human government is the last perfectionment of our Human Society. You know that on the whole face of our globe, we have about two hundred and fifty millions who do some work but do not produce anything, or rather do nothing else but prepare danger for others.

“The King works by mounting his horse, and passing his troops in review, and when he returns home he is just as tired as any other worker. It would then be better for him, to go and work in some distribution office; such work is infinitely dearer to the heart of Human Society! Perhaps he thinks that under the Human government he cannot any longer dwell in this royal palace. Oh! no, the Human government never takes away from any one the house in which he dwells. It will only think of constructing and remodeling, in order that all the other houses will become palaces and royal dwellings. Perhaps you think that our earth cannot furnish the material! Perhaps we have not the forces and strength to do it? We have everything, only we lack yet the perfectionment of our Human organization. Having succeeded in this, this globe upon which we live shall be changed from a hell into a paradise of delights, and all complaints, sorrows and tears into joy.

“But tell me, brothers and sisters, how will this change come?

“Without the Human Oath and without Human Society accepting its own doctrine? Never! Neither we ourselves nor the future generations will ever

succeed in being able to say, 'We are civilized,' except with those two conditions fulfilled. Therefore we will call the attention of all those who call themselves members of the Human Society, and who have not yet taken the Human Oath to come near."

From all parts persons approached who were evidently convinced and converted to the Human Doctrine, and they all took the Human Oath.

The Queen while Tremio was speaking, fell on her knees before the King, and weeping implored him to go together with her to take the Human Oath.

The King, arising in a melancholy mood carrying the chair back, said to her: "I cannot, otherwise, if I take the Human Oath, as long as Creppo can find inhuman wretches, he will take my life."

Tremio cried out: "Whosoever has any weapons of any kind about him, or carries them in hand, cannot take part in the Human Oath."

Colonel Santelli was standing in the centre of the entrance, and having disposed the third army corps of the braves on the right and on the left, with their backs turned towards the royal palace, he was standing in a proud attitude, with his saber unsheathed, looking at all times on the right and on the left to make sure that no one was breaking the rules to go and listen to the one that was talking.

Tremio saw that the people were ready to take the Human Oath, but looking towards the soldiers, he saw that they were all standing arms at rest, and holding hard to them, and shouting very loud to them, he said: "Oh! brave soldiers, it is true you know not either how to read or write, yet you are endowed with human intelligence. You are like plants left in abandon and forsaken. This was not the fault of your parents, but rather of the inhuman organization, because inhuman government produces nothing but ignorance. Tell me what have you learn-

ed in the army? Of course you are going to answer me: They have taught us how to handle the gun, how to fence, how to march, etc. A fine education, indeed, you have received; this is the way, members of the Human Society know it but too well, they keep you in ignorance of all else. So, then, you have not yet understood that as long as the government will be able to find ignorant people to take up arms, the representative of that government shall have a tremendous authority over us all; while he himself is also a member of that same Human Society. Consequently throw down your weapons, take the Human Oath and instead of we being the subjects of the King, we shall become his brothers."

All the soldiers threw down the arms, and the officers did the same.

Colonel Santrelli shouted: "Why do you throw down your arms? Remember the oath you have taken to defend the King and your country."

Some soldiers who were nearer to him answered: "Go and make your report. We are going to take the Human Oath."

The Colonel ran and ascending the steps he found himself at the door of the first apartment, and he hastily rang the bell. The door keeper opened and when he saw the Colonel with his saber unsheathed, with red eyes, seeming indeed too angry to be able to talk. He closed the door in his face.

The Colonel shouted: "Why don't you let me in? I need very much to speak to the King immediately."

Gatekeeper: "Because you seem to me like a butcher, the way you present yourself."

Colonel: "Pardon me, I had forgotten to put back my saber into the scabbard. These are times when a fellow can easily lose his head."

The doorkeeper opened the door, and Colonel Santrelli entered and said to him: "Why were you afraid of me?"

Doorkeeper: "Well, of course, because with your chest all filled with medals and with your saber bare, it occurred to me immediately that you have been a celebrated assassin and murderer. For some have related to me that in the war we waged against the Croinians, when the butchering and slaughter was over, you went on the scene of the contest and amused yourself in cutting down with your sabre the lives of ever so many unfortunate ones who had been left wounded upon the field of battle."

Colonel: "I did my duty. I avenged the death of so many of our brave soldiers who had been killed."

Doorkeeper: "And why did you not go, one of the first ones, to fight? Rather than this, as soon as you had given the signal for the attack you withdrew with the trumpeter. You went six miles away and from there you regulated and ordered the massacre to be accomplished."

Colonel: "Because our rules prescribed it so. Such are the regulations and orders for battle. You don't understand anything about it. If I should be among the first in the fray and should get killed, our brave soldiers not having any one any more to direct them would take to flight, and the war would be lost from the very start. Instead of this, I was always encouraging them from a distance, having the trumpet sounded continuously to the assault and attack, and the Croinians were doing the same thing. Towards three o'clock in the afternoon, I saw through my field glasses, that the victory was ours, because there was no one left of the enemy, while on our side about twenty were withdrawing satisfied to have finished the work with a great victory. After a while

I saw the Croinian officers killing our wounded ones with their sabers and when they were through, they left. I spurred my horse, and when I arrived on the spot, I did the same thing to those of the enemy killing all the wounded Croinians."

Doorkeeper: "So, then, I was not mistaken in forming my opinion that all officers of all armies, with their breast all filled up with medals you have even lost the instinct of a Human being. The members of the Human Society seem to you to be scorpions and your own hearts are worse than tiger's. Well, come with me."

The doorkeeper having arrived at the room next to the private quarters, turned to the Colonel and said to him: "Stop here."

Colonel: "For what reason must I stop here? I have much confidence with the King."

Doorkeeper: "These are the orders I received yesterday from the Queen, that all persons bearing arms, or recognized as such, I must have them stop at the distance of one room."

The Colonel stopped, and the janitor went to the door of the private room and rang the bell.

The Queen was still kneeling and getting tired imploring her husband.

The King took her by the arm and brought her to sit down near the table, and going to the door he asked: "Who is there?"

The doorkeeper answered: "Here is Colonel Santrelli who wishes to speak to Your Majesty."

King: "Have him come in."

The doorkeeper opened the door and turning to the Colonel, he made him a sign to come in.

The Queen arose suddenly and ran to the door and shut it in the face of the Colonel and hooked the chain to it.

King (turning to the Queen): "Why do you not let him in?"

Queen: "I no longer trust any one who carries arms."

King: "How is that? Colonel Santrelli is a high officer and a special and very good friend of mine."

Queen: "I don't trust any one. It was the high officials who killed the whole royal family of Sorriana. He must disarm."

And turning towards the door, she cried out: "Nevestro, if he wishes to come in, be sure that he has no arms about him."

The Colonel took off his saber and laid it on a chair, then he walked towards the door.

Nevestro (the doorkeeper): "Stop, Colonel, I want to make sure that you have no arms about you."

The Colonel stopped, and carrying his right hand to his belt, he withdrew a revolver.

Nevestro: "What do you use that for?"

Colonel: "When the assailant is at a short distance, we use the fire-arm, and when he is near we use the sabre."

And he went to put it with the sabre.

Nevestro: "Have you any other weapon about you?"

Colonel: "No."

Nevestro: "I want to make sure. I had said I would not engage in this dirty trade, but that comforts me, the fact of not having any weapons about me. I am not like the guards at the frontier who want to go through others, while they are armed."

Colonel: "How is it possible to maintain public order without arms?"

Nevestro: "With the Human Oath."

The Colonel did not answer and Nevestro commenced to go through him and search him from head

to foot and finally he felt something hard between the boot and the trousers, under his right knee and he asked him: "What have you here?"

Colonel: "I had forgotten it, and bending down, he drew from it a poniard which was held by the lining being sewed to the boot.

Nevestro: "How and why do you use this?"

Colonel: "This is used in very exceptional cases. For instance, eleven years ago when we were at war with the government of Sorria, a Major gave me a blow, which threw me from my horse; jumping up he thought he had gained the victory over me. Instead of that I planted him this instrument in his heart and he fell dead. The government promoted me from the grade of Captain to that of Colonel."

And he went to lay it down with the other weapons.

Nevestro: "All right. Now, you may enter."

The Colonel entered the private room, and the King going to meet him shook hands with him and said: "What is the matter? What is the news?"

Colonel: "I come to report to you that the entire corps of braves, including the officers, have thrown down their arms and are going to take the Human Oath."

King: "I don't know. But you have been one of the bravest of Colonels, and at a wink of your orders the whole corps used to tremble. Now, I cannot understand, with what kind of a face you dare to come and present to me such a report?"

The Colonel remained paralyzed, and was not able to answer.

— —

Orrento had designed the emblem of the Human movement which was to distinguish the person who had taken the Human Oath, and had embraced the Human Doctrine.

The emblem was composed of a cockard ten centimeters long, of white goods, on which there was written:

Order and Pure Civilization.

Universal Human Government.

The cockard was surmounted by a button in which there was engraved in the centre a globe, and above it two hands clasped together, and on top a little white banner. On the upper part there were the words: Universal Peace! And on the lower part: The Civilized Members of the Human Society. He had dictated a few words to Grandinello, who had written them with the greatest attention and when he had done, Orrento turning towards the whole crowd said: "Brothers, we have to fulfill a duty to the benefit of the whole Human Society. I would like to go but I have other work more important keeping me here." And taking the few pages he had dictated and joining them to the designs of the emblem of the Human Movement, he said: "These have to be taken to the city."

The members of the Human Committee arose all willing to do this service.

Grandinello, who was near Orrento, begged him to let him go, in order that he might learn whether the Human movement had made any progress.

Orrento placed everything into an envelope, and on it he wrote: "Tremio, receive the greetings of the Human Committee."

And he gave it to Grandinello, who started shaking hands with every one of them, and when he was through, he said to them; "In the name of *Humanity!*. Good-bye, brothers."

And he left.

Grandinello having departed two hours later than Alestro, hastened his steps, with the intention of catching up with him, but this was impossible,

nevertheless he was in the city before sundown. He went to Tremio's house and when he had reached the front door he rang the bell.

A beautiful young girl opened the window and looked. Tremio was in the midst of his family, talking about the Human movement, and saying that it did not mean any harm to anybody of any class. But his father thought it was an impossible thing and said to him: "You cannot persuade me, for in order that one class may go up it is necessary that the other come down."

In the meantime the servant girl came and said to them: "A young man in peasant's dress has rung the bell, must I let him in?"

Scarcely had Tremio heard the word peasant, than he turned to his father and said: "Excuse me, father."

And he went running to the front door and opened it, and seeing Grandinello, he shook hands with him and kissed him. Tremio took him by the hand and said to him: "Come upstairs, I want to introduce you to my folks."

Grandinello: "I prefer not to go, because your folks are not converted to the Human movement, and I would not like to disturb them."

Tremio: "I am converted and when my folks refuse to receive you they refuse me."

They went up the stairs and when they had arrived Grandinello took off his hat and Tremio pointing with his right hand, said to him: "This is my father and this is my sister, and that is our sister."

Grandinello shook hands with all three. Tremio, turning to his father, said to him: "This is one of the members of the Human Committee, and he will be better able to demonstrate to you how the Universal Human Government directed by Order and Pure Civilization does not harm any one in any class

but instead benefits all the members of the Human Society."

Mr. Alsenzio: "I cannot believe it, because it is a very difficult problem."

Grandinello: "Modern Human Science means nothing else but the demonstration of the truth." And going near to a window from which one could observe almost two-thirds of the city and a great part of the country, he said: "Come near here, Mr. Alsenzio, and look all around and tell me what you see."

Mr. Alsenzio looked all around and after a while turning towards Grandinello, he answered him: "I see nothing else but the sky, the earth and the city."

Grandinello: "But do you not see that at about a hundred meters from here there are houses where members of our Human Society are dwelling, which are a great reproof and blame on the present inhuman organization? You, with your family, you live here in this great palace, surrounded by magnificent gardens, full of roses and other flowers, and instead of smelling the magnificent perfume sent by these flowers, you smell the pestilential air coming from the pools around here.

"Now, suppose that from where those dirty and nasty houses are standing there should be built another palace like yours, also touching your gardens with its gardens, and that these people should live in comfortable circumstances like you, would they cause you any harm or damage?"

Mr. Alsenzio: "No, on the contrary. For myself and family it would be better. But the present organization does not prevent any one from building. This world of one combination has seen very rich people fall into the most abject poverty, and poor people rise up to the most affluent wealth. Now, with your Human movement, all you do is to cast

down some people into wretchedness. My own affairs already are beginning to go badly just on account of the soldiers having cast away their weapons."

Grandinello: "So, then, it is not God who has given riches to the few, but the gross ignorance of the laboring class. The Universal Human Government only, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, abolishes:

Inhuman Justice and Falsehood.

Tyranny and Cruelty.

Profit and Charity.

Robbery and Poverty.

Rascality and Imbecility.

Fortune and Immorality.

Arming and Homicide.

Superiority and Inferiority.

"Consequently do not speak to me any more about the present inhuman organization, but rather when the Human Committee shall arrive in the city, come and listen to the Human propaganda and you will be convinced and converted."

Mr. Alsenzio could not find anything to answer, and Grandinello holding out his hand to him, said: "Pardon me, if I have not spoken well."

And taking leave of all, he said: "In the name of *Humanity*, good-bye."

When he had left the room, Tremio said to him: "Wait a moment for me, brother, I will accompany you."

They went out together and Tremio, addressing Grandinello, said: "It seems to me it is getting rather late, I know a young mechanic who keeps a little shop; he is very skillful in printing and engraving, and I think he will be just the man to do the work which Orrento has designed." They went to

his place of business and found him just ready to close up.

Tremio wished him a good evening, and the young mechanic turning around recognized him, shook hands with him and said: "How does it happen that I see you here?"

Tremio pointed to Grandinello, and answered: "This is one of our brothers and a member of the Human Committee."

The young mechanic went to shake hands with him and kissed him, then opening his shop and turning towards them said: "Come in, brothers."

Tremio, addressing the young mechanic, said: "Brother, I have forgotten your name."

The Young Mechanic: "My name is Arcadio Bivilla."

Tremio: "Thank you. We have need for some of your work."

Arcadio: "I am always ready to serve my brothers."

Tremio brought out the letter he had in his pocket and withdrew from it the emblem of the Human movement designed by Orrento, and said: "We need a great many of these emblems, and here below there is explained how you should go to work." and he placed the whole thing upon a table on which there were several little iron instruments.

And taking the written page he commenced to read as follows:

"The Members of the Civilized Human Society.
Human Movement.

"The aim of the Human Movement is to re-establish Human brotherhood and fraternity and Universal Peace among the children of *Humanity*, under the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization. All those who have taken the Human Oath and embraced the Human

Doctrine are called members of the Civilized Human Society.

“All those who have taken the Human Oath must be provided with a Human emblem.

“The Civilized Human members shall never be allowed to raise their hands against their brothers of the Human Society, nor shall they dare to take up arms against any one belonging to the same.

“By orders of the Human Committee.”

And turning towards Arcadio, he said to him: “You will make a little pamphlet of this and print millions and millions, because the Human Movement is as much desired among the members of the Human Society, as rain is welcome in dried up and arid land. If you need any help, call on some other mechanics to help you for by tomorrow evening, I want to get fifty thousand of these ready.”

Arcadio: “Have no fear, brother, I have many friends. I am going now to call on them; we shall work all night and tomorrow and we will do our very best so that by tomorrow night you may get the number you expect.”

Tremio: “Well, now we are going, in the name of *Humanity*, good-bye!”

He shook hands with Arcadio and went out.

Grandinello: “I will remain here, and help as much as I can.”

Tremio: “Do as you please. I am sorry I cannot stay, also, but tomorrow I have a big day’s work before me. In the name of *Humanity*, good night. I have much to do yet this evening, preparing for tomorrow.”

Colonel Santrelli stood silently before the King in the private room of His Majesty.

Tremio shouted: “Human Oath is the most sacred thing for the civilization of our Human Society. From it depends the first basis of our Economical

Human Organization. Human Doctrine is nothing else but the spouse of the Human Oath. Natural Human Science demonstrates this, that all bodies that have life in them upon our globe, are of two sexes, male and female, and if one of the two should perish the other one must perish as a natural consequence.

“So then, brothers and sisters, who are taking the Human Oath, that is to say, who are embracing the Human Doctrine, these two acts are one and the same thing. The Human Oath insures Universal Peace and the brotherhood of man. The Human Doctrine, joy and abundance for our whole Human Society.”

The Queen was at the balcony listening. She knew that the hour was near, when the people were going to take the Human Oath and thinking of the Ladies of the Court, she thought it would be a good thing to have them also take the Human Oath.

She went to fetch them. Having reached the second room, she noticed left on the chair by the Colonel the infernal weapons, and she got frightened, and uttered a very loud cry: “Oh! My God! Help me!”

And she ran into the private room with her face as pale as death.

The King, running up to the Queen, shouted: “Colonel, go and see whether there is anybody in there.”

And holding up the Queen he carried her to a chair, all the while trying to comfort her.

The Colonel ran to the second room and came back immediately, saying: “There is nobody.”

Queen: “You are a liar! You don’t see anything?”

King: “I will go and make sure.”

The Queen kept back the King by the hand and cried out: "No, for the enemies of *Humanity* are there."

King: "Colonel, go and look very carefully."

Colonel: "There is no one."

Queen: "Then (with a very loud voice) *I am a liar!* Do you not see those infernal engines of destruction upon the chair?"

Colonel: "Oh! You are afraid of the arms."

In the meanwhile the mother of the young king entered from the other door, all dressed in black and weeping.

Queen: "I am not afraid of any one, except of those infamous weapons, which at any given moment may reduce me to the most terrible desolation, as they have done to my mother-in-law, who has already shed more tears than all her wealth is worth."

The widowed Queen approached and looking at the young Queen in the face, she said: "Oh! what is the matter? Why are you so pale?"

The King, turning towards his mother, said: "She is almost crazy. She has an undying hatred against arms."

The widowed Queen commenced again to weep, and through her tears, said: "She is right, my son, if there had been no arms your dearly beloved father would still be among us."

The King, pulling a white handkerchief from his pocket, set to wipe his eyes which had been filling with tears and he asked the Queen: "Do you wish for anything, my dear?"

Queen: "I wish the ladies of the court and all the employees and servants to come here immediately."

Colonel Santrelli had just re-entered the private room and was standing at the left side of the door. Very much pained on seeing the Human scene

between the King, the Queen and the widow, and taking a white handkerchief wiped his eyes, too.

The King came near the door and called: "Nevestro!"

Nevestro presented himself, saying: "Command, Your Majesty."

King: "Go and call the ladies of the court and all the people of the palace and tell them to come here immediately."

Nevestro: "Ready, Your Majesty."

After a few minutes twelve ladies of the court entered the private room, and seeing the Queen indisposed, they came near her and one of them asked her: "Is anything the matter, gentle Queen?"

Queen: "Nothing. Wait."

Soon there entered six cooks, four footmen, three doorkeepers, among whom was Nevestro.

The Queen, arising, called: "Nevestro!"

Nevestro advanced and answered: "At your commands, Your Majesty."

Queen: "Is there any one else in the palace, who is not present here?"

Nevestro looking at every person present, said: "The Guards of the Safe are wanting."

Queen: "Go quickly and call them, and make sure that they are not carrying any arms about them."

Nevestro (bowing down): "At your service, Your Majesty."

After awhile Nevestro returned followed by a corporal and three soldiers.

The Queen, turning towards all assembled, said: "Brothers and sisters, Human reason calls you to take the Human Oath; and if you have loved me in the past as your Queen, you will love me in the future as your sister. So, then, follow me if you have a Human heart." She started walking towards the

balcony. Her mother-in-law followed her and placed herself at the right side of the Queen. Behind them followed all the ladies of the court and went to take their places, six on the right of the dowager Queen and six at the left of the Queen, and all the other personnel of the house took their places at both ends.

The King and Colonel Santrelli remained in the private room.

Grandinello had learned from some people passing by that the Human demonstration was standing in front of the royal palace and said to Arcadio, that if the first distribution of the Human emblems could take place there, the Human Movement would have a greater success.

Arcadio approved of the idea, and they hastened to put all the Human emblems they had ready into a box and the little pamphlets into another and each one carrying one of the boxes they hastened to reach the place and arrived just at the moment when the Queen came to stand at the balcony.

Tremio, as soon as he saw Grandinello and Arcadio, was filled with joy. He opened one of the boxes and took a pamphlet out of it.

The people were looking on, imagining that that little pamphlet contained some sublime Human ideas. Tremio, looking on the right, in front, on the left and back of him and seeing that from the balconies, the windows and even on the roofs of the houses, there was looking at him a mass of children of *Humanity*, and the same all around him in the street, he was filled with joy and ecstasy.

The sky was also resplendant with stars, the modest moon was shedding its pale light upon that mass of humanity as a kind of reinforcement to the artificial light. Nature was showing the fall of ignorance, the disappearance of barbarity, and the re-establishment of the brotherhood of man among the

children of *Humanity* and Tremio, with inspiration, and exultation, said: "I know very well, that you all, brothers and sisters, are desirous and anxious to know everything contained in this little pamphlet.

"This contains nothing else but a few words, and truly our sacred Human prayer. Its significance is the salvation of our Human Society, the basis of our highest civilization, and the first duties of any and every member of our Human Society, and if these are not scrupulously observed by all the members we have nothing but a human form and the instinct of animals."

While Tremio was talking the King, turning to Colonel Santrelli, said to him: "Go and take your weapons from off that chair and take them to the hall of royal arms."

The Colonel stood still thinking, suddenly he said: "I have already made my examen of conscience in this Human affair, and I am going to take the Human Oath, and he advanced quickly towards the balcony."

The King arising, went to the second room, took the weapons from off the chair and passing through the private room he let fall the revolver, which on striking the ground went off and the shot took effect in the King's left leg, wounding it slightly."

The King hastened in picking up the revolver and took it with the other weapons to the hall of royal arms and came back in a hurry into the private room.

The Queen, and all those who were on the balcony, on hearing the shot came running into the private room very much frightened and turning towards her husband, she asked what was that shot.

King: "I went to take those weapons which the Colonel had left on the chair, with the intention of taking them to the hall of royal arms, but the re-

volver slid out of my hands and on touching the floor went off."

The Queen-dowager coming near the King, asked: "Is anything the matter, have you been wounded my son?"

King: "No, mamma."

Queen: "Let us go. Weapons are the plague of our present inhuman organizations, and they will always be so until they shall all be destroyed. They will always cause fear."

They all returned to the balcony. Tremio had just taken one of the Human emblems and had pinned it to his chest.

The Queen and the Queen-dowager, as if they were remembering that Tremio had taken up this Human distinctive mark for their own consolation, commenced to weep for joy.

Tremio commenced to read in a loud voice:

"The Members of the Civilized Human Society.
Human Movement.

"The Human Movement has for its aim the re-establishment of the brotherhood of man and of Universal Peace among the children of *Humanity*, under the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization.

"All those who have taken the Human Oath and embraced the Human Doctrine are called members of the Civilized Human Society.

"All those who shall take the Human Oath must be provided with the Human emblem.

"The Civilized Human members shall not raise their hand against their Human brothers, neither shall they take up arms against the members of the Human Society.

"So, then, brothers and sisters, who are ready to take the Human Oath, you must consider any weapon, of any kind, as one hundred thousand times

worse than the most ferocious animals. For, as long as they shall exist, we cannot have universal peace, and we cannot call ourselves a civilized people, for a civilized people does not need any arms.

"The Human Oath is taken by raising your right hand, and at the same time every one must abolish within his or her own heart, all what has ever been thought or done with an idea of injuring our Human Society."

And raising his right hand, he said: "Whosoever is convinced of and converted to the Human Doctrine, take now the Human Oath."

All the people raised their right hand. Tremio, looking all around, said: "Shout, brothers and sisters:

Long live Human Doctrine!

Down with arms!

Long live the brotherhood of man!

Long live Universal Peace!"

The King while the Queen with the others, were on the balcony in the act of taking the Human Oath, took off his stocking from his left leg, and saw that his foot-wear was filled with blood. He took from his pocket a white handkerchief and tied it around the wound, while looking in a desperate condition and without uttering a groan or a word.

The persons interested in this Human propaganda were distributing pamphlets and emblems among the people.

Tremio turning towards Alestro with his hands full of Human pamphlets and emblems, said to him: "Brother, take these to our brothers and sisters who are yonder upon the royal balcony."

Alestro took off his hat and Tremio put in it all the pamphlets and on top of these the Human emblems and elbowing his way through the crowd as fast as he could he entered the royal palace. The

Queen and all those who were with her on the balcony entered the private room and she called: "Brother Nevestro, go and meet our brother."

Nevestro: "Ready, sister."

The King was sitting with his forearm leaning upon the table and looked unwell.

Colonel Santrelli had his breast all full with medals and was busy taking them off and throwing them upon the table.

The King, looking at him, said: "Why are you taking them off?"

Colonel: "Because in the eyes of the Civilized Human people, my breast all covered with medals looks to them as a register of all the crimes I have committed."

The King did not answer, but taking his right hand to his forehead and leaning with his elbow on the table he placed himself in an attitude of thought and meditation.

When the Queen and the ladies of the court had entered the private room, they had placed themselves in half a circle and all the servants had placed themselves on the right and on the left in the same order. The Colonel, after having taken off all the medals covering his breast, although he had taken the Human Oath, felt somewhat ashamed to place himself with those who were wearing the clothes of Human citizens, and went to place himself on the right of the corporal who with the three soldiers had remained in the rear.

The Queen when she had called Nevestro, had stepped outside the line, looking towards the door from which she was anxiously expecting the Human emblem.

The Queen-dowager had remained in the center.

The ladies were wearing dresses of silk of a light orange color and the Queen was wearing a blue silk dress artistically labored. The Queen, as soon as she saw Nevestro coming, advanced quickly towards the door.

Alestro, entering the private hall, bent his head and said: "In the name of *Humanity*, civilized brothers and sisters, receive my Human greeting."

All inclining their heads, with the exception of the King, answered: "Welcome, brother."

The Queen shook hands with him and immediately took one of the Human emblems, kissed it, and fixed it to her chest.

All the others shouted: "Long live Universal peace!"

The Queen, commencing from the right, put on Human emblems to every one present and shook hands with each one after having fastened the emblem.

Alestro was distributing the pamphlets and did as the Queen was doing, he shook hands with every one of them who was receiving it.

When they were through with the first row, they went to the second, and as the Queen was fastening the Human emblem to the Colonel's chest, she said to him: "Finally, you are converted to the Human Doctrine."

Santrelli: "You were right sister. The arms have been the first cause of our uncivilization."

When the Queen got through she went and placed herself in front in the center of the hall, and Alestro to the right of the first row. The Queen then turning towards all of them, said: "You may go now; I will remain here with my mother-in-law; I have no need any more of court ladies or of servants, but only of brothers and sisters, who will love me so much the more."

All of them taking their right hand to the Human emblem, answered her, singing:

1. "These Human emblems, how fine and fair;
Now our hearts, also yours, shall have peace.
On land and sea arms down, no more war;
Now we shall have, the world o'er, peace!"

The Queen, answering, said: "If you wish it, you may go."

2. "Sublime, civil, white they are; the while
Each Human must wear it without cease.
Down with the arms and Tyranny vile,
We want to have Universal peace!"

The Queen: "If you wish, you may go."

3. "The Human emblem alone wear we,
All other emblems are infernal.
Down, down with the arms on land and sea,
We want to have peace universal!"

The Queen answered: "Well! You can all remain in your old positions in the palace, until the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and pure Civilization shall have been established. But I recommend to you to observe well the Human Oath."

Turning towards the Queen-dowager, she said: "Mamma, you remain with me."

They all left the private room with the exception of the King, his mother, and the Queen.

The Queen, after having made sure that she could not be heard turned towards the King, and said: "Are you convinced of what the Human Oath means? I don't want any more weapons within the

palace. They were all made with the intention of doing some harm or injury to the members of the Human Society.

“Tomorrow all these infernal engines of destruction from the largest down to the smallest shall have to be thrown into the public streets, and I wish to show to the people that here are dwelling Civilized Human beings.”

The King, from the moment the Queen had commenced to distribute the Human emblems until the time when the ladies of the court and all the other domestics had left the hall of the private room, had remained with his right hand to his forehead and his elbow resting on the table. From time to time he was gnashing his teeth on account of the atrocious pains he was suffering, while they all thought that it was on account of this sight of the Human movement that he was making these disagreeable motions. They thought that he was thinking of the end of his authority, and of his reign. He now turned toward his wife and looked at her dryly but without answering.

The Queen pointing with her right hand to the King, said: “I, and your mother, we will retire to my apartments, and you shall see me not any more until you shall have taken the Human Oath and embraced the Human Doctrine.”

The King followed with his looks, until together with his mother, they had left the room. After a moment he tried to get up, but it was impossible for him to do so. He leaned both hands on the table and slowly, very slowly, he succeeded in getting up, and taking his right hand to his head he scratched his hair in an act of desperation and striking with this same hand a terrible blow on the table, he cried out: “Accursed be forever the arms and their inventors!”

And with very slow steps and limping, he withdrew to his own apartment.

Tremio after having finished the distribution of the Human emblems shouted and said: "Brothers and sisters, the Human disarmament is not like unto the other inhuman disarmaments that have been accomplished heretofore. For they have always preserved the arms to make use of them again and again in order to butcher and slaughter the members of our Human family.

"The General Human disarmament must be followed by the destruction of the same arms; and when this shall have been accomplished the members of our Human Society will be entitled to and right in shouting at the top of their voice that we have gained the greatest Human Victory ever recorded.

So then, brothers and sisters of all classes without any distinction of race, make your examination of conscience and ask of your own intelligence of a Human being, and see what it shall answer you. That as long as there shall exist any arms, no one of the members of the Human Society can say with security that we cannot at some moment be killed by some of such infernal engines of destruction. The inhuman history of the past demonstrates this to us, that the arms never have and never will bring respect to any one. With them have been killed:

Emperors and Empresses,

Kings and Queens,

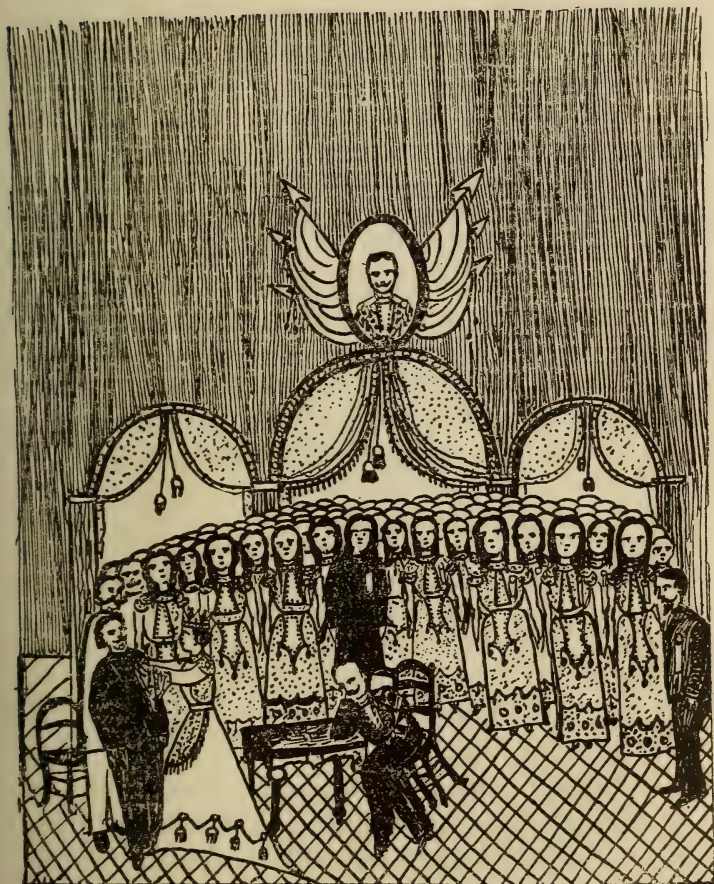
Princes and Princesses,

Dukes and Duchesses,

Counts and Countesses,

Presidents and President's Wives,

And so on from the highest degree to the lowest and most menial. And as long as arms shall be in existence, it will always be so. And we who are calling ourselves members of the Civilized Human So-



Distribution of Human Emblems.

ciety, ought we not to know that the arms have been the true cause of our Human want of civilization, and the most terrible enemies of our whole and entire Human Society?

“I cannot call upon our brothers and sisters who have been assassinated and killed by those infamous arms, because the dead do not come out of their graves. But I call upon you for the destruction of all those infernal engines and weapons, and when this shall be accomplished, when all shall have been destroyed, we shall have gained and accomplished the revindication of the Human race.

“So then, we, the Civilized Human members of the race, let us go to work, and after having destroyed them, let us make of them two great piles, one on the right side of the royal palace, composed of the arms of the people or popular arms, and one on the left side composed of all military arms. Any one who wishes now to go home, can do so. I declare the Human demonstration closed and adjourned for today. Tomorrow whoever wishes to help the Human work, can come here with the wagons and carts to load them with the destroyed weapons and take them outside of the Leria gate and throw them in the space which unto this day has been called the Place of Arms, and thus in the future it shall be called the Place of the Destroyed Arms.”

Tremio came down and the people commenced to disperse in all directions, in a few minutes the arms were destroyed and put in place.

Those in charge of the Human propaganda were overwhelmed by other intelligent people who understood to the bottom that the Human movement did not do any harm or injury to any class, but that it led the entire Human Society to the highest degree of perfect organization.

They set on walking all together with the object of deliberating what would be the best means to cause the Human movement to progress with the best success.

Santrelli was a very intelligent man and of mature age. His hair was white as snow, and his face of a florid complexion. He made a sign to the others to stop and said to them: "It is necessary to call together a Human Council."

All the others accepted the proposition, but of course, it was necessary to deliberate when it should be held.

Tassonte had for a long time been a member of a secret society, which object was to better the condition of the poor producing people; who, indeed, believed in the Supreme God, without knowing at all the reason why it happened to them that the more they were working, the worse their condition was getting.

All the members composing this secret society were intelligent, and were not long in demonstrating that the true cause of their bad condition was Creppo, the representative of the inhuman religion, which paralyzed the human intelligence of millions of poor unfortunate ones who had grown up deprived of education and of all instruction whatsoever. Tassonte spontaneously and of his own free will had arisen and taken the oath which was to take away the life of Creppo, avenging thus the death of so many beings who had starved and died with hunger, but contented, because they were going to enjoy forever in paradise the reward of the blessed.

Tassonte came near Tremio and shook hands with him.

Tremio was very much surprised to see him before him decorated with the Human emblem, and

he said to him: "Why, did you also get converted to the Human Movement?"

Tassonte: "Of course. When Creppo, with his own mouth, had confirmed that the Human Movement was one of the most radical for the salvation of the entire Human Society. He has also told me that whoever took the Human Oath, each and every one of them, would have to cut loose from all infernal associations whatsoever, and abolish in and banish from their heart any and every religion, to such an end that all those associations would burst and the earthly religions would also die of inanition and that among Human Society there would no longer exist but one single organization which shall be called the Confederate Human Society."

Tremio: "The way you talk seems to indicate that Creppo has also been convinced."

Tassonte: "Death alone will convert him. He is a terrible oppressor of *Humanity*. He does nothing else but think how, with his inhuman science, he may succeed in pushing back the Human Movement, instead of pushing it along. He is preparing for tomorrow a tremendous religious demonstration."

Tremio: "I don't think that it will succeed very well, because the people who have listened to the Human propaganda will abstain to one man to take part in it."

Tassonte: "The poor people are forced to go they will be paid."

Tremio: "You are right; the accursed money is the most terrible obstacle to our Human Movement." And turning towards the others, he said:

"Brothers, don't you think that tomorrow night we shall have a fine opportunity to hold the Human Council? While they will be tired of the religious demonstration. We can have Orrento here to give the clearest and most lucid Human illustrations."

Grandinello, turning towards Tremio, said to him: "If I knew in what place the Human Council is to meet I would go now and tomorrow evening, I would be back with Orrento."

Tremio: "If it would be agreeable to all those interested in the Human propaganda, I would offer the large store room on the right which is still vacant. I hope also that henceforth it may be used as the central office of the Human Movement; for, as you know, Creppo has sent bulls of excommunication against all those who profess the Human free thought; and he has sent a circular to all owners and landlords of meeting halls, warning them not to give those of the Human Movement any opportunity whatsoever to meet anywhere; believing that, as the Human Movement had arisen from out of the laboring class, it was his opinion that all capitalists ought to be opposed to it. My father himself was at first very much opposed to it, but when he understood that the Human Movement was not harming nor causing any prejudice to any class whatever, but on the contrary was benefiting the whole and entire Human Society, he was convinced and converted to it and he put the entire palace at our disposal."

All, with common accord, accepted Tremio's offer and proposition, and decided to send the following day an invitation to all the civilized members of the Human Society, and bidding each other good night, they withdrew each one to his lodgings, satisfied with the progress and the success of their work that day in favor of the Human Movement. Grandinello departed with his heart full of joy, because he had such a brilliant report to make to the Human Committee of the progress the Human Movement had made.

The next day, quite early, the Queen arose and thought in order to do honor to the great Human

Movement, that she would put on the white dress of the Human Symbol; and having done so she fastened the Human emblem to it and went to visit the ladies of the court, who also had put on white garments and were discoursing together in the large conversation parlor.

As the Queen entered the hall, all the ladies went to meet her and shake hands with her and called her "sister."

The Queen said to them: "Very dear sisters, this morning we are all of the same grade, and in order that all, each and every one of us might be a queen, all that is wanting are the Human Crowns, which, however, we can make with our own hands. The jewelers and goldsmiths have worked a long time until now, and have exhausted their inventive genius in order to make crowns to be worn by inhuman Queens."

They had there a large quantity of white roses made artificially, which the ladies had manufactured in their moments of leisure. They went to fetch them, while the Queen, at the same time, went to get some other material.

The ladies of the court returned to the large conversation parlor carrying a large basket full of artificial white roses, and the Queen with a bunch of wire and a quantity of white silk cockades. They set themselves to work, and in a short time they had made new crowns for every one of them, which they put upon their own heads. Having put back into the basket all the remaining roses and material, they carried it away, and soon came back in haste and sat down together in half a circle.

The Queen showed by her countenance that she was happy and had taken a seat on the right. Smiling, she said: "Very dear sisters, I feel as if I were in paradise, and I believe that the Human Or-

der is the true basis of our Human Society in order to call ourselves civilized. I think that we produce a better effect now than when I alone was wearing a crown, the crown of inhumanity. I hated it because it was heavy. I hated it because I thought that it was not mine nor my husband's, but rather the price of the blood of the poor laboring class."

The widowed mother of King Gallonetti had arisen somewhat late that day. After having put on the Human emblem she went to the Queen's sleeping room, and when she saw that everything was in order and made up and nobody inside she, of course, immediately thought that the Queen had gone to the large conversation hall. She thought then that she ought to arrange and tidy her own room, and so she went back and after having arranged all things and set everything in order, she also directed her steps towards the conversation parlor.

The door of the large conversation hall was wide open, and as soon as the Queen-dowager saw the Queen and the court ladies all dressed in white and with crowns on their heads, she entered running and with open arms she exclaimed: "Oh! daughters of *Humanity*, now you look like civilized sisters."

When the Queen and her ladies saw the Queen-dowager they all stood up, and with haste went to meet her, shook hands with her and kissed her. And taking her by the hand they wanted to make her sit down in the center.

The Queen-dowager commenced to weep and said to them: "Let me go! Let me go! The inhuman organization has made me unhappy forever. It is much better to live the life of a happy peasant woman than to lead an unhappy life in wealth."

And still weeping she set to walking and wished to go to her own solitary room, where she had already spent a part of her unhappy life in weeping.

Having arrived at the door of the hall, she turned around and said to the Queen and ladies: "Happy are you, who are still young. You will experience the difference there is between the present inhuman organization, and the Universal Human Government directed by Order and Pure Civilization."

When the Queen-dowager had left, the Queen and the ladies, all very sad, sat down again.

Creppo, after the Creppolian Council had set himself to study which would be the best way to follow in order to interrupt the Human Movement in its march and prevent its progress, and he decided that inhuman science must accomplish it by inflicting upon humanity a most terrible plague. He called together a council of representatives of all the greatest nations of Jupiter.

In Creppo's palace, and next to the large hall, there was a hall all painted in red, which was only used when there was to be discussed the greatest massacres of the children of *Humanity*, and it was here that the representatives of all nations gathered together and met.

Creppo was dressed in red, and on his entering the hall, all the representatives stood up and bowed down (as the highest sign of respect to the head of the religion) and after the door had been shut, Creppo made them a sign to sit down.

After all the representatives of all the nations had again sat down, Creppo went himself to sit down, and taking out of his pocket a sheet of paper, he commenced to call the names of the nations to which each representative belonged, as follows:

Rumpica,
Dalcone,
Animeca,

Giramaco,
Fracassa,
Intolia,
Immanglasse,
Ciaccolina,
Sporia,
Accustra,
Gremola,
Premia,
Pantolia,
Traccolia,
Croi,
Sorria,
Arrentina,
Folina,
Manduria,
Sannelia,
Dramanta.

At the call of each name, the representative of that state stood up, answering: "Present."

Creppo then said to them: "Honorable representatives, before I speak, it is necessary for you to take your oath, that of all what shall come out of my mouth you must keep secret in your heart. Only that each one of you must make a report of it to your government. Illustrious representatives of all nations, if any one among you feels not to be able to keep his oath, I give you the faculty and permission to leave."

All the illustrious representatives were very silently listening. Prince Drosili, representative of the government of Rumpica arose and said: "Your Holiness, if the oath we are asked to take does not mean any harm to any of the governments and rulers which we represent, or to the class to which they are allied, or to us, certainly we are ready to take it and to keep the secret, otherwise we beg

for the faculty of being allowed to break it right here in your presence."

Having spoken so, he sat down.

Creppo: "I have not had any thought to do any harm to the very class to which I myself belong; but the object of my thoughts is how to throw down any movement whatsoever tending towards the liberation of the poor and laboring class from under our yoke. Therefore, I desire your oath of secrecy."

All the illustrious representatives jumped to their feet and raised their right hand.

Creppo looking in their faces, said: "Illustrious representatives, as you have raised your hands so must you keep your oath. Sit down."

They all sat down, and Creppo continuing to speak, said to them: "You already know that the Human Movement is developing and spreading almost all over our globe, and in such a manner that it seems even to yourselves that it is no longer possible to cut it down. The reason why the Human Movement has made such a gigantic progress, is because of the tranquility which has existed in these last years among all nations. The Human propagandists have circulated among the peoples, a formidable storm of literature; and millions of intelligent persons, who formerly were the basis of our system, now have gone over to reinforce the rank and file of the Human Movement. The Human literature demonstrates the Human natural science, or the truth. It is sufficient for a person to read a few copies, to show the Human hatred against us. Consequently it is necessary to have a war between two nations, where the Human Movement is not yet very much spread and developed and where the working class is still very ignorant and more so than

in other states. Thus both parties will go to work and massacre each other as stupid imbeciles."

(The author cannot find among the animal races, any race that kill each other among themselves as men do, although they claim to be civilized, but they are not so according to the Human Doctrine).

"And therefore, as much as I am able to know, I think that war should be declared between Rumpica and Dalcone."

Prince Drosili, representative of the government of Rumpica, jumped to his feet and answered him:

"Your Holiness, what is that just uttered? Know you that the Emperor Nottolo is a very intimate friend of Emperor Maccan."

Count Agun, ambassador and representative of the government of Dalcone, had also arisen, and when Prince Drosili ceased speaking, looking fixedly in the face of Creppo, and in a firm voice, he said:

"Your Holiness it is impossible that a war should break out between two friendly nations."

Creppo: "But I think that it is necessary and it must be."

Prince Drosili: "How could that be, when there is no subject of dispute whatsoever between the two nations?"

Creppo: "By means of my counsels, there soon will arise some."

Count Agun: "Your Holiness may speak, we are listening attentively."

Creppo: "Thank you."

The two representatives: "Your servants, Your Holiness."

Creppo: "Emperor Nottolo, ruler of the great nation of Rumpica, with high authority must notify

Emperor Maccan that he wants the cession of the island of Caces; because it is necessary to Rumpica for the development of its industrial commerce. The government of Dalcone must answer in the negative. Emperor Nottolo then declares war and Emperor Maccan then without any other answer shall send immediately the squadron of infernal torpedo boats to give battle to the naval squadron in the port of Martan, and two-thirds of the navy shall have to be sunk and destroyed."

At these words, Prince Drosili arose and said: "Your Holiness, I am compelled to break my oath. Your proposition is terrible, for Your Holiness wishes to bring about a great and considerable loss to Emperor Nottolo, whom I represent."

Creppo: "Your Emperor shall not lose anything, for neither his great grandfather, nor his grandfather, nor his father, nor even himself, have ever worked a single day to the construction of the navy, nor to its armament."

Prince Drosili: "So far I am convinced, but by destroying the navy, it seems to me that men also will be destroyed; and as Your Holiness knows, there are among them some who belong to our class, and I, neither now nor ever, can consent to your proposition."

Creppo: "The members of our class shall not perish in this, not one of them, for all the admirals will be furnished (provided) with secret plans, and they will know how to save themselves at the opportune moment."

Prince Drosili: "But could not such a terrible destruction be avoided?"

Creppo: "No, it is the Human Movement which compels us to it. Because, in order to establish the Universal Human Government directed by Order and Pure Civilization, as the Human propa-

gandists have described it, they will have to destroy all the arms, which have been manufactured with the aim of harming the members of the Human Society. They will change them into steps to be placed at the entrance of their modern palaces. Well, do not you think that it would be a grand reproach to be cast upon us?"

Prince Drosili: "Your Holiness, every epoch comes last and passes. This has been the epoch of the most terrible arms, weapons and engines of destruction, and when they shall have been abolished, the future generations will believe that there never have been any, that none could ever have been in existence. As for me, from what I have heard from Your Holiness, I think that Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, will not permit the circulation of inhuman books, nor of any other kind of literature, which might corrupt the hearts of the members of the Human Society to the level of the very brutes."

Creppo: "I am of the same opinion, but I also think that I must remain represented on the stage forever, to show to the Human Society the difference there is between the artificial Inhuman Science and the natural Human Science. He took out of his pocket a small key and opened a drawer from the table before which he was sitting, and commenced to pull out of that drawer a quantity of rolls of paper and laid them upon the table, and when he had taken out all what he wanted, he locked the drawer, stood up, and turning towards all the representatives assembled there, he said: "Illustrious representatives, these rolls contain the description of the part each nation has to take in the most terrible destruction of the artificial wealth produced by the laboring class, and the greatest massacre of the same laboring class. The propagandists of the Human

Doctrine have made out their plans, and our powerful cuirassed ships and our immense men-of-war, after having been disarmed shall be used only for the transportation of commercial products and commodities, and for excursions. They say that they wish to make three pyramids with all the money in the world, one of gold, one of silver and the third of brass (bronze). This they wish to accomplish in this very city of Rosisma, which they have selected as the center of our globe. They also state that a book is to be published soon, entitled: 'The Monetary System and its Danger to the Human Society.'

"They say that this book shall be placed in the modern Human schools, and as all classes shall have finished their school terms, they all shall have to go and pay a visist to the three pyramids.

"I, on the other hand, have devised a plan entirely contrary to those designs which is that before we shall see the finish of our fall, all ships, from the largest cuirassed to the smallest little boat, shall have to be destroyed, and this after every maritime city shall have ben reduced to ruins and ashes."

He then took up the rolls of paper from the table, and calling off from the superscription the name of each nation, each representative in his turn went at the call of the name of his nation to take the roll intended for him, and after all the rolls had been distributed Creppo said: "In the name of the Supreme God, the Council is ended. I recommend you to have these things well explained and understood immediately by your governments."

The illustrious representatives stood up and Creppo opened the door and placed himself at the side. Each representative on going out bowed down very profoundly and kissing his right hand, they went away.

Grandinello, at break of day, was already with the Human Committee, and was telling them all the

particulars of the immense progress made by the Human Movement in the city, and especially of the distribution of the Human emblem. He told them that the Human propagandists had decided to hold a Human Council which was to take place on the evening of this very day, and that they wanted to have Orrento with them.

The Human Committee had sent four of their members to find out the agricultural conditions in all parts of the globe, and after having taken cognizance of all the facts and taken notes and had formed an idea of the true conditions and state of affairs, they arrived just at the moment when Grandinello was talking.

Orrento turned towards Grandinello and said: "I have understood everything."

And he went to meet the four returning members, to shake hands with them and bid them "welcome."

All the others followed his example and the four returning members were welcomed in the most splendid manner after their long absence.

The four members of the Human Committee, who had just returned from their journey of an agricultural analysis, were: Vario Torzi, Murchi Crispere, Pireno Frantoni and Sullio Arnoldi.

The members of the Human Committee were desirous to know the agricultural conditions and they placed themselves in a circle.

Vario Torzi, without waiting to be asked to speak, said: "Brothers of the Human Committee, during our journey for agricultural investigations, I have everywhere noticed and observed that among the members of our Human Society who follow the agricultural profession, there exists the most terrible inhuman disorder. And not only is this true for this country of Intolia, but also for all other countries. We have found very large agricultural or-

ganizations, which at first sight, it seemed, were carried on with some semblance of order or Pure Civilization, but we found out very soon that both were wanting them. We saw a great many persons tending to agricultural labors, and one, two, at times, three, who as we thought were directing the works. We went nearer and after having greeted them in the name of *Humanity*, and the one or the other answered with the old stereotyped answer: "Good morning," or "good evening." As far as I have been able to learn, the persons who were directing the work were performing two duties, the one of directing and the other of oppressing the poor laborers under their orders with inhuman words and treatment, and threatening acts, and forcing them to work without giving them the time to take breath. I asked of those men who were directing the work, whether they were the masters, and they answered me that the landlords were at their homes. They asked us why we were traveling around and we answered them that we were members of the Human Committee, who were going on a tour of investigation in agricultural matters. They were very much surprised on hearing this, for they had never heard of the existence of our organization; there were some among those who were working, who on hearing those words from us, understood instinctively that it was something tending to the betterment and improvement of their condition. They accompanied us to the dwellings of the landlords, who after having heard the object of our mission, received us very well. Some of the masters demonstrated to us that those among the laborers who were working with agricultural organizations fared better and were more respected than those who were working for individual masters, because the agricultural organizations were well equipped with the best agricultural machines and implements. As in-

deed we have ourselves found the best agricultural organizations in the states of Animeca. The landlords honored us very much; we remained there for two days in order better to observe and notice every thing concerning the conditions of the laborers, as well as of others; and to find out in what way they were cultivating that large field. The landlords after having made us take dinner with them, went out with us, to show us how the land was cultivated and the quality of the products they were cultivating.

“One half of the field was sown with grain; the landlords told us that this was because the climate or the land was so very favorable to this kind of culture; that after a long experience they had found out that this was the first product on which to base their agricultural industry. The other half was sown and planted with vegetables and garden produce for their own domestic use, in order not to have to go and buy them somewhere else.

“The hour being late and the laborers having quit their work and gone to their lodgings, we also went back to the homes of the landlords.

“The partners of this agricultural organization were three and they employed something like five hundred persons. Each one of the masters had a beautiful palace of his own, three stories high, and each contained about thirty-six rooms. They were all three in a row and of the same kind of architecture. The three landlords had each wife and children. As soon as we had reached the second story of the palace of the center, they made us enter into a hall in which there was a table beautifully arranged and they made us sit down.

“Two of them went away and one remained with us, and said: ‘All those who come to visit us are welcome, and we respect them as our own, and we

wish them all to think well of us, to be pleased to have come in contact with us, and to speak well of us.'

I arose and answered him: 'I can tell by your faces that you are gentlemen.' When we were through eating, I said to the servant to tell the masters that we wished to go and visit the laborers. After a few minutes he came back with a surveillant or foreman, whom we had gotten acquainted with at our arrival, who then was trying to show himself to be something more than our poor brothers, the workmen, because he had been invested with some masterly authority. He took the lead and we went out together.

"In front of the palaces, at the distance of about two hundred meters (yards) there was a very large store-house of a rectangular form, and on the right of it another little palace of two stories; on the left there were four large store-houses. At the distance of about five hundred meters (yards) there were two immense houses separated the one from the other. We asked of the foreman who was accompanying us, for what purpose all those houses and buildings had been erected, for what purpose they were used, and he answered us that in the two-story little palace, the manager, the secretary and all surveillants (foremen) were living, and all the workmen dwelled in the store-house in front. The four store-houses on the left were used to store away the products, and the two very large houses to be seen at a distance were used one as a stable for the horses, and the other as a shelter for fodder and feed. When I heard that all the workmen were living in the store-house in front, I was very much surprised, and was thinking how it was possible that five hundred people could find lodgings in there, and I grew very anxious to go and look in what way they were situated. It was a little

late, perhaps, a few hours after sundown when we arrived at the door of the store-house. The door was closed and the foreman, our guide, knocked. After a moment the door was opened and we entered. At our entering I looked on all sides, and I thought I had entered into an immense tomb, such was the impression the sight I beheld made upon me. The store-house was long and wide, and in its whole length and width, there was constructed against the walls from the floor to the ceiling a kind of coarse scaffolding-work, which in its whole height was divided into five divisions, about one meter (yard) apart and which were about or scarcely one meter (yard) wide. At every two meters (yards) distance there was a division and at every two divisions a ladder, which stood vertically and reached from the pavement to the fifth division. To each one of the workmen was assigned one place to sleep between two divisions, or in other words each one had two cubic meters of air. When we entered we found a great many already in bed, probably on account of fatigue, but as soon as they heard us talk they got up the one after the other, and coming down the ladders they came near where we were, and stopped in a circle around us. I asked them if any among them had wife and children, and they answered me that about two-thirds of them were married and the most of them had children. I asked them again why they did not work where they might be able to have oftener the opportunity of being with their family, and they told me that it was on account of the scarcity of work. I was wondering at seeing that among all those workmen there were neither young ones nor old ones, and I asked of the men that had accompanied us to what this was owing, and he answered me that the agricultural organization had established the rule that on their property no one should be employed except men between twenty-one

and forty-five years of age. Such an answer astonished me, and in fact I thought that such an organization had some respect for the poor laborers. I asked of one of the workmen, whom I thought had his human intelligence somewhat more developed than the others, whether the agricultural organization was giving a pension to their workmen when they had passed the age of forty-five years or whether their savings were sufficient to live decently in their old age. The latter answered me: 'What, a pension? How, savings? They force us to buy from their stores everything we need and they make us pay double prices for them, and when we get old we expect to go and beg alms or starve for very hunger.' "

Orrento, on hearing these words, raised his right hand, and said:

"Brothers, the artificial inhuman science has succeeded in generating its last flower of barbarity, which demonstrates to us the most terrible disorder and the most extreme want of civilization that can exist in the organization of our Human Society. It is the artificial inhuman science that has begotten authority and subordination (subjection), superiority and inferiority, the oppressors and the oppressed, the few who live in the triumph and enjoyment of riches and wealth, and the great many who live in the slavery of wretchedness. And all the crimes that have been committed by the members of our Human Society have been engendered by accursed existence of the artificial inhuman science.

"The Natural Human Science on the contrary will foster the Universal Human Government directed by Order and Pure Civilization, and harmony and brotherhood shall reign among the members of our Human Society. Order means everything that indicates perfection, and that which is not perfected is nothing else than disorder. Order is human. Dis-

order is inhuman. So then, if our Society is Human, it has the right to be directed by Human Order advised by Pure Civilization.

ESTABLISHMENT AND ORGANIZATION OF THE UNIVERSAL HUMAN GOVERNMENT, DIRECTED BY ORDER AND THE MOST PURE CIVILIZATION.

In order to establish the Universal Human Government directed by Order and Pure Civilization, the Human Movement is necessary. The members of our Human Society, cannot expect that all the nations of our globe shall come altogether at one time and of one common accord and declare the general Human disarmament, because even were they all willing to do so they could not do it, and for several reasons:

1. Because the present generation has done nothing else but to continue the evolution of the past one, with a great advantage to civilization. Because from the beginning of last century to the beginning of the present one, nearly two-thirds of the nations have disappeared.

2. The development of human intelligence in these last years, has caused all the nations of our globe to spend immense sums of money in order to provide for the formidable engines of destruction; and in order to show to the members of our Human Society that the antagonistic part, the oppressive part of their members, still holds the upper hand and the first place in the social scale.

3. The nations of the earth in order to obtain the means to maintain the present organization so inhuman, as it is tyrannic, have had to bleed every vein of all the members of our Human Society; and they have arrested and imprisoned all those who have uttered the least little cry of protestation in favor of the oppressed population. In acting thus they have developed in

a high degree Human hatred among the masses, from which have been developed little by little the destructive revolutionary groups which from day to day are taking extraordinary proportions, and which are ready at any moment to give the great final assault. So, then, the salvation of the Human Society rests in the Human propaganda. It is we who must go ahead with human vigor and although now the ones and then the others, in the beginning will hate us, modern human history shall write in its pages the names of all those who shall have taken part in the Human propaganda. The Human Movement is nothing else but the Mediator or Intermediary between the two antagonistic parties which menace the destruction of the artificial wealth and of the entire Human Society.

PROPAGANDA OF THE HUMAN MOVEMENT.

“In order to begin the Human propaganda a few things only are necessary: a trumpet which by its strident sounds shall call the Humans together to come and listen to the Human Doctrine. A sign of a circular form, which shall bear painted on it two hands in the action of giving a hearty shake, around this there shall be written the words: “Human Propaganda. Moreover at least three persons shall be necessary: a propagandist and two aids. They shall also be provided with the banner of *Humanity* and wear the Human emblem.

“The Human Propaganda shall have to be made in the public streets and places where people usually gather together and the propagandist each time that he shall end one of his Human speeches or discourses shall cry out:

Hurrah for the Human Doctrine!

Down with arms and weapons!

Hurrah for brotherhood!

Hurrah for Universal peace!

“This, in order to get the audiences accustomed to shout these cries and so much the sooner expand and spread among the masses of the members of our Human Society the signification of the Human Movement.

“The Propagandist shall also be provided with Human emblems, and with pamphlets containing the duties of the members of the Civilized Human Society. Which shall also explain what Human Doctrine means and what the Human Oath. He shall also call to the convinced ones to take on the spur of the moment right away, the Human Oath, and shall immediately pass to the distribution of the emblems and of the pamphlets.

“When the Human Propaganda shall have made good progress in every village, town and city, and when the Human Propagandists shall be aware that at least one-fourth of the members of our Human Society have taken the Human Oath and embraced the Human Doctrine, they then shall proceed to the organization *en masse*, that is to say of whatever trade or profession, class or race, and in all districts. Such organizations shall have to form a union or confederation. Each local organization shall be provided with the banner of *Humanity* and shall keep a list of the names of all the members which compose it.

“The local organizations shall be known by the name of:

THE MEMBERS OF THE CIVILIZED HUMAN SOCIETY.

“When the Human Movement shall have been spread and developed in all parts of our globe, a Human Congress shall be called together, where the perfecting of the Human Confederation shall be discussed.

PERFECTING OF THE HUMAN CONFEDERATION.

“To reach the highest point of perfection in our Human Confederation, it shall be necessary that

every single organization, after the close of the Human Congress, give a beginning to the new list of arts and trades in order that members of the Human Society now civilized may be able to join the other members of their same trade, art or industry, and from these organized industries will be formed the Human Counsel of Order.

“The organizations of every industry shall have to form unions or confederations of the same trade, etc., all over the globe; in order that they may know the number of the members of our Human Society working at such or such a trade, etc., and from all the confederated industries separately there shall be formed the Universal Human Congress of Pure Civilization.

UNIVERSAL HUMAN CONGRESS OF PURE CIVILIZATION.

“The Human natural science demonstrates that as our globe is one, it is necessary that all the members of our Human Society, be known as members of one sole nation; it is necessary that the names which divide our globe should be abolished; for, it would be a very strange thing to find two members of our Human Society asking each other ‘where are you from?’ and have them answer the one that he is a Sorrianese and the other a Croinese; and in order to succeed in this it is necessary that we should call ourselves people of the Southeast, of the Southwest, of the Northeast, and of the Northwest. This way the members of the Human Society will be the better united to brotherhood and fraternity; and such names, while not dividing the globe at all into different nations, serves however to the maintenance of the perfectionment of the Industrial Confederations.

“Our globe geographically divided in four parts, will give a better opportunity for the maintaining of our Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, because the industrial or-

ganizations confederated separately for each and every different line of industry shall nominate one member as a delegate to the Human Congress of the Pure Civilization and a separate secretary. In every one of the four divisions of the globe they shall appoint a universal secretary for each different line of industry.

FORMATION OF THE UNIVERSAL HUMAN CONGRESS OF PURE CIVILIZATION.

“As seen above the Universal Human Congress of Pure Civilization shall be composed of four members for each line of universal industry, and each member shall have the secretary who shall give him all informations he may desire about the conditions of the confederations to which they were appointed.

“The Universal Human Congress of Pure Civilization shall not make or decree any laws, because the Natural Human Science demonstrates that the word law means nothing else than that a part of the members of our Human Society, wish to oppress or compel the others to their own subordination. Now, if I have been able to demonstrate to you that the Universal Human Congress of Pure Civilization will represent the highest development, and the final one of the Human Movement, all that is necessary to observe is to accomplish and fulfill scrupulously all the Human duties.

HUMAN DUTIES.

“The Universal Human Congress of Pure Civilization must carefully study how to diminish the hours of labor for the members of our Human Society. To reach some success in this all the unproductive industries must be abolished.

“It shall be the duty of the Universal Human Congress of the Pure Civilization, after having abolished the unproductive industries, to develop the Human Order among the members of our Human Soci-

ety, because it is through these that we may succeed in arriving to the highest degree of civilization. In order to develop the Human Order the Human Congress of Pure Civilization shall call together a Universal Architectural Congress, in which shall voluntarily take part all the architects of our Human Society. In said Congress they shall discuss and settle upon the style to adopt in the construction of our very beautiful modern palaces. As, for example, they shall design a palace having one hundred meters on each side, three stories high; the first floor shall be used for all the commodities and conveniences which a civilized people does and may need; the second and third floors shall be used as dwellings.

“The rooms shall be large and airy, and like unto the interior of the modern palaces, there shall remain an open square space having seventy-five meters on each side which shall be used as flower garden of pleasure and park, where there shall be placed a certain number of iron chairs nicely painted. The rooms on the front sides shall receive air from our modern streets and the rooms in the back or interior shall get it from that park of delight in the center of the building.

“Our modern palaces shall have four large and very beautiful gates of entrance in the center of every side, that is to say, one at the east, south, west and north. The palaces shall always be kept clean and white as snow. Neither horses, mules or asses shall never enter inside and, if possible, no dogs, either.

“In the center of the pleasure ground or park in the middle of the palace, there shall be placed an electric light, and one also at every corner outside of the palace ground. Thus each palace shall be equipped with five large electric lights, one inside and four outside.

"All the rooms of the palaces shall be equipped with electric lights and furnished with the most splendid modern furniture.

"Each palace shall have a large Human Harmony Hall, where there shall be found the most complete set of automatic musical instruments; so that the members of our Human Society shall go there to spend their hours of leisure. There will also be a very large dining room, where they will be able to gather altogether on occasions of joyful festivities and for Human wedding feast.

"The future beauty which the Civilized Human Society shall be able to create can only be seen now with the eyes of the mind but not with our bodily eyes.

"We see the terrible inhuman disorder existing now-a-days everywhere, in every village, town or city, and throughout the countries and fields of our globe. Go wherever you please, in the best and finest of cities of our globe, and you will be convinced that there exists neither order nor pure civilization. Only the members of our Civilized Human Society can know the mistakes made by the false inhuman science. Before the members of our Human Society can say that we are all civilized, the Human propagandists and the members of the Human Committee shall have to combat with all our Human intelligence and with all our Human strength. I do not hate Creppo, who in place of praising me condemns me to death on the accursed tree, because if he were able to see the beauties of the future as the members of the Human Committee see them, I am sure and certain that he also would be one of the most intelligent propagandists.

"When the Universal Human Congress shall see that the Universal Architectural Congress shall have settled upon the space to be occupied by our modern palaces, they shall declare it dissolved.

“Every architect of our Human Society shall have six months time, during which he shall design the plans for the Universal Palace.

“The Universal Human Congress of the Pure Civilization shall appoint a committee composed of the most intelligent members of our Human Society, and at the end of the six months they shall call together again the Universal Architectural Congress, in order that plans for the modern palaces may be presented by each one of those who shall have designed them.

“The committee shall examine them and shall select the best one which shall be adopted for all the Human palaces of the globe, and this shall be the final end of the architectural industry, and the architects instead of growing old at the designing table, shall go and direct the works of remodeling and constructing.

“Inasmuch as I have been able to describe order, it is not only Human, but it is also economical, and will bring to the entire Human Society one of the principal basis towards the highest climax of civilization. Suppose that you are dreaming that you are walking in one of the streets where Order and Pure Civilization shall have been established, certainly it will seem to you as if you were in a paradise of delights on seeing all those beautiful palaces, all built on the same architectural plan and on a right straight line, wide streets, and looking through the gates of the palaces from which you can see the beautiful interior garden and park and the opposite entrance gate; and while you are walking, you would notice on the right and on the left all these beautiful things, I am sure that you would be enchanted and dazzled to find yourself in such a city of enchanting joys.

“So, then, the members of the Human Committee and the Human propagandists, after having demon-

strated to the members of our Human Society the present inhuman disorder and the human want and lack of civilization which exists in our Human organization, must also demonstrate to them the results of the accomplishments and fulfillment of the Human Movement.

“During the time of our Human propaganda, we must demonstrate to our brothers and sisters the beauties of the Human Natural Science. Millions of members of our Human Society have already put into their heads that like the oppression press calls us people civilized, we are such. Yet such a term has had no other result than to delay the Human progress. Let us suppose that from some other planet with a large and powerful telescope you were looking upon our globe, and that in that planet there existed Order and Pure Civilization, you would certainly say that our Human Society is still uncivilized, because observing our cities and our countries, indeed, you would be right in saying that we are still in the first grade where there is written nothing but Ignorance. And if this would be the verdict ought we to get offended at it? Indeed not, since it would be nothing but the truth.

“Let us take a look at our cities and at our countries and let us see what kind of Order and Pure Civilization we have on the whole face of our globe. If we should stop in a street of the best city and would set to work observing how they are constructed and thinking for a moment we would say to ourselves: Oh! what a disorder. We see some palaces which seem as if they were going to touch the clouds, and others of one story high. This kind of architecture surely shows that we are civilized like savages. When one has to build a house, he calls the architect to make plans for him, and he tells him that he wants to build a magnificent palace. The architect after

having worked to death for some time in order to design something fine and make a famous name for himself, comes and presents the plans. The palace is being built and finished and the architect is applauded and lauded for his fine style of architecture. Well, another has also one built next to the magnificent palace, and although he had all the means at his disposal, financial and others, he is not satisfied to have it built like his neighbor's, but in his turn he calls upon an architect, telling him that his palace must be more beautiful still, and it does not matter whether it is higher or lower. Such kind of Order we call inhuman. I would like to continue to talk on this subject, but I cannot because I have too much to do; but I promise you that although I am not much of a writer, nevertheless at the first opportunity I have I shall write a book which shall be entitled: 'The Development of Order and Pure Civilization Among the Human Society.' "

Turning towards Grandinello, he said to him:

"Brother, you shall soon return to the city, tell our brother Tremio that the first thing he has to prepare in the hall where the Human Council is to take place, is the white banner, or the symbol, sacred and holy, of our Human Society."

And turning towards the others, he said to them:

"And you members of the Human Committee, go and expand and spread the Human Doctrine over the whole of our globe. Divide yourselves in groups of three, and thus when you enter into villages, towns or cities, the members of our Human Society will be surprised and astonished at the Human Movement, and hearing your Human propaganda, all, the ones as well as the others shall be ashamed to carry weapons. I cannot go far away from this state, because from this place the modern history of Human Civilization must take its beginning."

They all took leave of each other, shaking hands with and kissing Orrento and Grandinello.

When they were all ready to depart, Orrento said to them:

“Brothers, I know that you are all desirous to go, but it is necessary that ten of you should remain here with me.”

Ten of them remained and the rest left; and Orrento turning towards Grandinello, said to him:

“Brother, tell our brothers and sisters of our Civilized Human Society, that I shall very surely come this evening to the Human Council.

Grandinello departed and as soon as he arrived in the city, he went directly to the hall where Tremio had told him to find him. He found the door closed and knocked. After a moment the door opened and behold Arcadio, Tremio and several other members were decorating the hall.

When Tremio noticed that the one who had just entered was Grandinello, he went to meet him, shook hands with him and asked after Orrento and the members of the Human Committee; just then Mr. Alsenzio was entering carrying in his arms a whole bolt of white cloth and embroidery which his daughter had made to decorate the hall.

All the others came near Grandinello, shaking hands with him and wishing him happy return in their midst.

Mr. Alsenzio, his daughter and her servant-maid had already taken the Human Oath, the previous night in front of the royal palace, and they were so enthusiastic about the Human Movement that they worked more than the others in order that the hall in which the Human Council was to take place, should be beautifully and artistically decorated.

Alestro and the other members were going through the city to invite the Civilized members of the Human Society.

The Queen and the ladies of the court from the conversation hall had gone to the balcony in the center of the third floor, in order to see the broken weapons thrown in the streets and above all in Leria street facing the palace.

When she saw the popular weapons heaped up much more numerous and in a pile ten times as large as the military arms, she was frightened and said:

"Oh; Human Movement, thou alone shall be able to save us, the whole Human people is ready to massacre each other."

She entered the palace and called: "Nevestro!"

Nevestro presented himself immediately and said to her: "Ready, sister."

Queen: "Call all our brothers, a human work is to be accomplished, come all into the conversation hall."

Nevestro went away and the Queen went to take the key of the Royal Armory Hall, and returned quickly and calling all the court ladies, they all went back to the conversation hall.

Nevestro after having called all the men, went with them to the conversation hall, and as they were entering the Queen and the court ladies arose and went to meet them.

After having shaken hands the one with the others, the Queen gave the key to Nevestro and said: "Brothers, I recommend you that all the arms and other destructive engines to be found in the armory hall, and which you acknowledge having been made with the intention of killing or wounding the members of our Human Society, carry them away after having destroyed them."

Nevestro and all the other men went to the Royal Armory Hall, and having entered it they commenced to take the arms, breaking them or putting them out of service and they carried them out.

Creppo had sent a secret circular to all nations, advising them that all those who composed the standing armies, should be kept with all soldiers in surety in forts distant from the cities in order to avoid them listening to the Human propaganda; and that they should give orders that no Human propagandist should obtain the permission to enter the fortresses, nor any one wearing the human habit.

Alestro entered the Royal palace and saw Nevestro coming with a basket on his shoulders and walking quickly.

Nevestro, as soon as he saw Alestro, laid the basket on the stairway and went to meet him and welcoming him very warmly, and he accompanied him taking him to the conversation hall.

The door of the conversation hall was open, and when the Queen and the court ladies saw Alestro, they arose and went to meet him and welcomed him with great honors.

Alestro after having taken off his hat entered the room and the Queen and the ladies of the court, their heart full of joy, shook hands with him and asked him if in the evening after the religious demonstration there would be any Human demonstration.

Alestro answered them: "I came to inform you that this evening there will take place a Human Council to which you are invited. Concerning the Human demonstration I don't know anything about it, but it might take place after the Human Council, it might very well develop at the going out, that would be very natural."

And taking a package of cards on which the directions to the hall where the Human Council was to be held was written, and the hour when it would begin, he commenced to distribute them among the ladies.

The Queen asked him whether the hall where the Human Council was to take place was decorated.

Alestro: "Tremio, son of Mr. Alsenzio, told me that he was to go and call Arcadio, a young mechanic, very intelligent, and that together they were to decorate it."

The Queen, turning towards the court ladies, said to them: "A large number of white roses have remained in the basket, go and take them so that our brother, together with Nevestro, may take them over there and thus the hall will be still better decorated."

Two of the court ladies went to take the basket which was almost filled with roses and they returned immediately.

Alestro and Nevestro after having taken leave took up the basket and went out, and when they reached the spot where Nevestro had left the basket full of destroyed arms, they found that the others had already carried it away. As they were arriving at the outside door of the Royal palace, they saw wagons loaded with the destroyed arms and a great crowd of people looking on.

Alestro, while walking, was saying: "If the Human propaganda should become quickly understood by the masses of Humans, the universal Human disarmament would take place in a short time, and that is what I hope for; and as the Human Movement is not a class movement, every good hearted Human ought to help the Human propagandists, as well morally as financially, in order that the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization might soon be established."

They arrived at the hall and found the door closed. Alestro knocked at the door, which was opened immediately.

As Alestro and Nevestro entered, all those who were busy decorating the hall went to receive them.

Nevestro was looking attentively and was greatly surprised to see the hall so artistically decorated, although it was not yet entirely finished, and taking off his coat he set to work.

It was not yet midday and the hall was entirely finished and ready, and it seemed to be something quite modern and new; the way and style in which it had been decorated was so tasty.

They left the hall in order to go to dinner, and Nevestro taking leave, his heart full of Human joy, returned quickly to the Royal palace, desirous of relating to the Queen and the court ladies, the way in which the hall where the Human Council was to take place was decorated.

Having arrived at the conversation hall, he took off his hat and entered.

The Queen and court ladies arose and went to meet him desirous to know in what style the hall was decorated, and after having shaken hands they asked him about it.

Nevestro answered: "It represents the expression of Human Free-Thought and the Modern Human Civilization."

The hall was painted a light green color which served as a background for the decorations. A large Human emblem is fixed on the front wall looking from the entrance, and it is surrounded with beautiful designs of white satin. The front and side walls are all decorated with white drapery, artistically disposed. At the entrance at a short distance of the facing of the one to the other side of the lateral walls, there is an inscription artistically made, which reads: "Human Council."

In the center of the hall there is a very beautiful nymph, which when it shall be illuminated will make a splendid and sublime effect. In the center of the hall, there is a little table covered with a very

white cloth, with the edges beautifully adorned with embroidery.

On the left of the table, upon the floor, there is planted the banner of *Humanity*.

At these words they all shouted: "Hurrah for the Human banner!"

The Queen said: "Well, we must prepare something that might be harmonious so that the Human Council may commence with joy and end with Human affection. I need to retire all alone and although it is the dinner hour, I wish to write a few verses which we shall sing this evening."

She withdrew to her private office, took a sheet of paper and a pen and commenced to think and to jot down a few words, till at last she found her subject and wrote:

"HUMAN JOY!

1. Our hearts are at ease,
 Filled with Human joy;
 Inhuman torments will cease
 The Human flag we deploy.

CHORUS.

Oh! Human banner, white and pure,
 Thou art the symbol of Creator and Creature.

2. Here we unfold the joy of our heart,
 That which foretells Universal peace;
 Banner of love, wave, for thou art
 Above the infernal flags for time without
 cease.

Chor.—Oh! Human, etc.

3. Oh! Human banner, white and pure,
 Symbol of all, oh! mayst thou be;
 The whole Human people, to be sure,
 Before thee forever shall bend the knee."

Chor.—Oh! Human, etc.

She stopped writing and said to herself: This little song on this Human subject we shall sing to-night. When we shall have arrived, behind the door of the hall of the Human Council, we shall entone it, and we shall finish it kneeling down before our Human flag.

But I would like to find some other subject to write on; some other little song which we would sing at the end of the Human Council, and which might make a better impression on all those who shall be present, and she commenced to write as follows:

“OUR HUMAN BANNER.

1. This is our Human Banner,
To be worshipped by Humans all;
If of the Human you are a member
Before it, on your knees you must fall .
2. Oh! Banner, white, sublime and holy,
Our only hope, joy of our hearts;
Worshipful for us you are wholly,
Banner Universal known in all parts.
3. Answer you, if your heart is Human,
Why worship those banners infernal;
This alone, is the flag of honor, and Human!
No blood has it shed! 'Tis the flag Universal!”

If we are members of the Human Society, let us shout: “Hurrah for the Human flag!”

When she was through writing, she went back joyful and smiling to the conversation hall, and called: “Nevestro!”

"Command, sister," answered he from the room next to the conversation hall.

Queen: "Go and call all our brothers and sisters, I wish to hear how these two little songs I have written will sound."

After a few moments Nevestro and all the others entered the conversation hall.

They placed themselves in a circle and the Queen read several times the two songs, so that they might learn the words by heart.

The Queen then said: "Let three of you take the lead and the others sing in chorus."

The doctor had secretly entered the Royal Palace, in order to extract the ball from the young king's limb. His Majesty was suffering terrible pain, and while the doctor was bandaging him, of a sudden they heard the singing, which seemed to go through the King's heart. The meaning of the well-felt words coming from the mouths of the three leaders moved him and the doctor asked whether those singers knew anything of the accident that had happened to him. The King answered: "They do not know anything about it and I don't want them to know it, either. My wife is right. I thought she was crazy, while the real crazy one is myself."

Doctor: "But, how is that, have you had a misunderstanding, and have you separated privately?"

King: "No, indeed. She loves me very much, and she should not wish at all that I should go away from her. She is afraid that any one might attempt at my life, because I occupy the most elevated position in the nation. She is tired of seeing ourselves, every time we go out together, being guarded by armed forces, and she has told me a thousand times that she would be pleased to see me go free like every other honest citizen and not being armed and my breast all covered with decorations and medals. But

tell me, doctor, if I should return to private life would perhaps the conditions of the people improve? Certainly not, because another one, perhaps worse than myself, would come to occupy my place, and the system would remain the same, or who knows, perhaps a little worse. That which will be able to change the present system is the Human Movement alone, and I should wish that all intelligent persons should go out and start as propagandists and educate the people to the Modern Human Civilization."

Doctor: "I think that my profession is one of the most necessary. I have created a fine name for myself in surgery; I have saved the life of thousands of wounded people who suffered from deadly wounds; I am able to handle all the instruments of surgery with great skill, and if I were able to show all the legs and all the arms I have cut from so many unfortunate ones, they would frighten the worst inhuman. The true physicians are the Human propagandists, for if all the members of the Human Society understood the signification of the Human Movement, they would stop bathing their hands in Human blood every day of the year."

It was two o'clock in the afternoon and from the great temple there proceeded the tremendous religious demonstration, and in order to make show of its very important strength, there marched at the head of the procession a company of fireworkers, who unceasingly were shooting in the air shots like from bombs which caused the walls of the largest buildings to tremble.

Behind the company of fireworkers came the corps of Royal Guards on horseback with their sabers unsheathed. At a short distance from these, a very tall man was marching. He wore a red vest and cap, the latter covered his whole head and came down so as to cover his neck and throat also. There

were two holes for the eyes to look through and on top of the head it ended in a horn. He was carrying a long pole in a vertical position, and to it was fastened the picture of the Superior God. Behind him marched the members of the sacred red rite, disposed in a front line and a side line who kept all the time at a distance of three steps apart. They wore white vests with galoons and red mantles all embroidered in gold and silver. On their heads they wore caps artistically worked and embroidered which ended in the shape of a horn. On their necks hung large gold medallions on which there was cut the image of the Superior God.

One in the center of the first line was carrying in both hands a gold rod surmounted by a little quadrant artistically worked with two small crystals in the center of which there was a red heart which they called "the heart of the incarnated Superior God." In the last row and in the center of it, there was one carrying a small standard on which were the words: "The most intimate friends of the Superior God." Behind these came the famous Royal Band playing joyful music. They wore a superb red uniform.

After the band came the sacred yellow rite, wearing a white vest like the sacred red rite, a yellow mantle all embroidered in silver, a yellow cap or beretta also embroidered in silver and at their neck hung, resting on their breast, a silver medallion. One in the center of the first row was carrying the little yellow standard on which were the words: "The second friends of the Superior God."

Behind the yellow rite came the sacred black rite, which were in a very great number. In the center of the first row one was carrying a black standard on which were the words: "The third friends of the Superior God."

Behind the latter came the very great Municipal Band of Rosisma. Then followed two lines of car-

riages containing several hundred people. In each carriage there were two persons, a man and a woman dressed in the highest fashion. At the first two carriages there were two small blue standards bearing the words: "The members of the privileged class are the true friends of the Superior God."

Every hundred carriages formed a division and a music band was playing at the head of each division.

On the first two carriages of the second division, there were other little standards, bearing the words: "We are pleased with our Holy Religion."

At the third division on the first two carriages there were again two green standards on which was the following inscription: "The present organization for us is Human! We care little for the beauties of the future!"

From the head of this demonstrative procession to the last carriage taking part in it, there marched on the right and on the left, a fine file of soldiers with arms loaded and their sabers and bayonets bare and behind the carriages came the Fourth Corps of the Braves, all with the arms shouldered.

After the Fourth Corps of the Braves there came a great mass of people. A fine young man, with pale face, was carrying a large standard on which there was this inscription: "We are the last friends of the Superior God."

The religious demonstration was marching towards the ascent to the Aldochina street.

On an elevation on the square of the temple, near a tree, there was a group of persons talking among themselves about the duplicity of certain members of the Human Society, who not wishing to work themselves and wishing to live at the expense of others of their own brothers, had adopted this what they named religion.

This group was composed of members of the circle known as "The Brothers of the Oppressed." Other persons joined them shaking hands and exchanging fraternal expressions. The latter were members of the Circle called: "Without God or Religion."

After a moment another group of persons gathered together and joined the others. These were members of a very large circle known as "The Hungry Ones."

The small group thus increased. They were all free and strong people. None of them had any respect for any authority since they understood that authority among the members of the Human Society is a crime charged to any one who wishes to assume it, thus declaring by his act that he has the right also to command to kill.

A certain Carnesio, a member of the Brothers of the Oppressed, said: "Brothers, we here, are all revolutionaries, and altogether we must go and stand in front of Creppo's balcony and listen to his speech, in which he will try to paralyze the minds of so many poor unfortunate ones who work and live like ourselves in wretchedness and misery."

They set on through Leria street, which was filled with people, and went up Scialbina street, and down Aldochina street, and stopped in front of the central balcony of Creppo's palace.

The religious demonstration was going slowly, because at every stand or altar, they stopped and the one who was carrying the heart of the Superior God incarnate, raising it on high was turning it from right to left and from left to right and the people was shouting:

"Long live the Superior God!"

The Royal Guards, making their horses present bout face, were giving the military salute with their

sabers. The two rows of soldiers were presenting arms, and also the Fourth Corps of the Braves, and the whole mass of the poor people were falling devoutly on their knees.

When the religious demonstration arrived in front of the palace where Creppo resided, the sacred red rite stood still and the Royal Band commenced to play the Creppolian Hymn.

Creppo in very solemn mien and clad in his most pompous vestments, came to the front of the balcony, raised his right hand with the index and the middle fingers extended, described a little circle in the air, meaning that he was giving them all his blessing.

The members of the revolutionary circle were looking on attentively, watching every one of Creppo's motions and when they saw him describe a circle in the air they commenced to laugh.

The religious demonstration set on the march again and shouting. Every sacred rite, however, stood still and every band played the Creppolian Hymn; immediately after having received the holy blessing, the march was resumed. When the mass of the poor people arrived in front of the palace, the religious demonstration stopped entirely.

The poor people was hoping to find in the words of the Holy man some comfort for a better condition.

Creppo, joyful and smiling, at seeing himself surrounded by so large a mass of people, raised his hands and eyes towards heaven, showing how his mind was putting itself in communication with the divine spirit.

Carnesio, member of the Brothers of the Oppressed, said to the companions he had near him: "Certainly Creppo must be thinking of the words he is to use to deceive the poor ignorant people."

Creppo after about five minutes of reflection, in a well-toned voice, said:

“God is angry with you. It is he who said: The just weep for the sinner. The anger of God will soon fall from above. It will punish you with a terrible war, with wretchedness, with pestilence and will exterminate you from the face of our globe. The reason that God is irritated against you, is on account of the Human propagandists; as you, yourselves see, here in our holy religious demonstration there is perhaps not one of all these who has not taken the Human Oath. Their propaganda is terrible; they are educating the people in the Human Doctrine, and give to understand that in order that the people may enter into the modern civilization, it is necessary that they should cut loose from all associations whatsoever and no longer fulfill the duties of our Holy Religion. They have no conscience, they wish to force all the sacred ministers to work. Oh! this is truly a mortal sin, because as you know, the sacred ministers’ hands are consecrated. Therefore God is angry.

“I congratulate you and I recommend you to think all the time that your ancestors were always honest and religious, and bore patiently their misery, and now they are happy in heaven.”

Raising his hand, he blessed them and the poor people commenced to shout: “Long live our Holy Religion!”

Then the religious demonstration set on march again.

— —

The Queen had made an inscription upon a large sheet of white linen and on both sides. The following words were to be read:

“This Evening there will take place a Grand Human Council, at No. 700 Scialbina street. Dis-

cussion on the subject: The Modern Human Civilization."

It hung from the central balcony of the third floor of the Royal Palace.

The passers-by were reading that inscription, and were talking about the good Human heart of the Queen, and that her action of having embraced the Human Doctrine was very much admired by the great majority of the people.

When the demonstration arrived at Leria street and the sacred red rite noticed the white banner flying from the third floor of the Royal Palace, they wanted to go back, but thinking that they would insult the Corps of Royal Guards by so doing, and that serious disturbances might occur, they continued their way.

The Queen and the court ladies and all the others had just finished their dinner, when they heard the bomb shots, and the Queen called in a loud voice: "Brother Nevestro!"

Nevestro: "Command, sister."

Queen: "What are those bomb shots?"

Nevestro ran to the balcony and saw that the religious demonstration was coming and he returned running to tell the Queen: "The religious demonstration is coming. They are the shots by the fireworkers."

Queen: "Infernal religion, they want to honor God, with bombshots. Do me the favor to go and tell, that if they are to pass this way, they must stop their fireworks."

Nevestro ran to warn the director of the fireworkers to stop the fireworks immediately.

On his return, as he was going to re-enter the Royal Palace, Nevestro saw Mr. Crilio Santrelli, who came towards him in a quick step; he went to meet him, shook hands with him and asked him: "Why

did you not come sooner, we have just rehearsed two Human songs, which we are to sing tonight at the Human Council?"

Santrelli: "I have been reading Human literature because I wish to become a Human propagandist."

The two together went up to the Royal Palace.

The Queen and the ladies of the court from the dining room had retired to the conversation hall, and when they saw Nevestro together with Santrelli, they all went to meet them and received the new-comer with great honor.

The Queen, addressing Santrelli, said: "Brother, if in the past you have done your duty for the defense of the nation; now that you have fastened on your breast the emblem of *Humanity*, you ought to become a famous Human propagandist. Now you have the opportunity to speak to the people demonstrating to them the difference there is between the Human Movement and religion, and when possible call them and convince them to the Human Oath."

Santrelli: "Sister, I am ready to demonstrate my courage."

Queen: "Ascend at once to the central balcony of the second floor, while myself and our sisters, we shall prepare a quantity of temporary Human emblems."

Mr. Crilio Santrelli and Nevestro went up to the second floor and went to the central balcony.

All the sacred rites had passed silently by, thinking that some one of the Royal family was ill. The members of the sacred red rite were walking slowly, turning around from time to time with the hope that the King would show himself at the balcony, to make a little speech to the poor people, in order to gain their affection to the government of their country; noticing now that two persons were there, they stopped.

Mr. Crilio Santrelli seeing himself facing such a great multitude of people, who were suffering on account of the inhuman organization, pointing towards the members of the sacred rites, said:

“Religion and its Progress.

“The deceit of religion, introduced into our Human Society has just achieved the development of its last progress, it is condemned by the majority of the members of our Human Society as being inhuman.

“I, dear brothers and sisters of all classes without any distinction of races, insofar as I have been able to understand the Human Movement, know that it is a terrible defense for the entire Human Society and I wish to demonstrate to you the difference there is between religion and the Human Oath. And as I shall be speaking about the natural Human Science, I shall be obliged also to demonstrate the truth to you.

“It is true that as soon as our little brothers saw the light of day, their parents first care was to take them quickly to the temple of the Superior God or to any other chapel to be circumscized or baptised, or to go through some other kind of ceremonies attached to a certain ritual, which was to show that the new-born were now recognized as children of God. The parents between kisses and caresses have raised these children by means sometimes of a thousand superhuman efforts, and after having supported and educated them in order that they might become useful members of the Human Society, and a help to themselves, a group of members of our own Human Society, whom we call parliament, congress or council of war, have decided upon their massacre *en masse*, by the accursed weapons and engines of war. Such massacres have occasioned immense losses to our Human Society, because all the produce and all

the products they used and consumed from the time of their birth to that of their massacre have been thrown to the wind, and our brothers more advanced in age have had to work until death to support and make up for the loss sustained.

“Suppose, dear brothers and sisters of all classes without any distinction of race, that our globe instead of being so very large were small, and that a small family, say of about fifty Human beings should inhabit it, and that they should need eighteen horses to satisfy their needs in using them in the culture of the fields and to other necessary labors, and suppose that the average life of the horses be about fifteen years. Now, suppose again, that the horses should be produced by a small number of mares, bearing three every three years, and we, as being Human, the horses having given us nine years of labor, we would let them at liberty, so that every three years three horses would be taken away from labor. In order for us to replace these horses or fill their vacant places we would have to take three young horses which we have been raising and which are now three years old. And if at the same time some inhuman wretch should come and kill them, we would be compelled to take back the three old horses and take them to work once more. So you see, the wars have been and are the true cause of misery and wretchedness in our Human Society, and all the sacred ministers who have told you that it is the duty of every good citizen to go and defend his country, even at the price of their own blood, are guilty of all the blood that has been shed upon the face of the globe.”

A voice from the midst of the crowd shouted: “That Holy man, Creppo, told us that the cause of so many plagues which God sends upon us, was you people, the Human propagandists, who have edu-

cated the people in the Human Doctrine. And he tells us that God is going to punish us with famine and war, if you folks do not return to our holy religion."

Santrelli: "War shall come only on account of the stupid ignorant and religious people, as for the members of the Civilized Human Society they cannot be compelled to go to war because they have taken the Human Oath."

A man of mature age, with a high hat and a long beard, shouted to him, saying: "If it had not been for the wars the people would have eaten one another; and it is only by means of standing armies and armed people that public order can be maintained."

Santrelli: "That is why you carry the standard and that you are satisfied with the present organization, and you little care for the beauties of the future. Instead of spending your time in houses of recreation and pleasure you should do better to use your hours in reading the development of Order and Pure Civilization among the Human Society, and then you would be ashamed to speak as you do."

Turning towards the poor people, he said to them: "And you, dear brothers and sisters, if you still continue and persevere in religion, you shall always be persecuted by pestilence, hunger, war, and the most terrible calamities and plagues."

At these words Carnesio and all his companions who were listening, commenced to clap their hands.

Santrelli, continuing to speak, said: "Today, a day of grace for all of you, it is a day of Human graces. You have the opportunity to become members of the Human Civilized Society; but your Human intellect is paralyzed and I have not much confidence in you. I call on you to take the temporary Human Oath, and you will receive in return the temporary Human emblem which announces to all that the Universal Human peace is at hand, it breaks the

infamous inhuman hatred among the children of *Humanity*, and finally insures Human brotherhood and fraternity, the beauties of the future; and the accursed wretchedness shall soon disappear. But how is it to be done? I know that all of you religious people, you have your hearts tied by the weapons, not only you, but also all the sacred rites; if I were empowered to make an investigation, I would prove to you that what I am telling you is the truth. Tell me, brothers and sisters, if you should feel some venomous or poisonous animal crawl upon your person, you certainly would get afraid. Oh! how much more poisonous are the weapons which you are carrying than any known animal! Oh! how many members of our Human Society have massacred one another against their will, and then the sacred ministers tell us that they were destined by God to die. If any one is killed by another, they say that that was his destiny, his fate. It is not so very long ago that Giuseppe Archelli took it into his head to go hunting, and taking with him his young son of about sixteen years of age, he gave him the gun into his hand, and in so doing, some way or other, the shot went off and his chin was taken away. The father gave himself up to despair and weeping on account of his accursed misfortune. So, then, if any of you be convinced and converted let him throw down all weapons and swear never again to raise your hands against your brother with any arm or weapon whatsoever, and to never again take up arms against any Human member of Society."

The Queen and the court ladies were ready with their hands filled with temporary Human emblems.

Santrelli seeing a great number of persons of the poor people raising their right hands, said to them:

“Brothers shout:

Hurrah for the Human Doctrine!

Down with weapons!

Hurrah for brotherhood!

Hurrah for Universal peace!”

The Queen at the balcony saw the soldiers who did not have the heart to throw down their arms, she shouted to them and said: “And you brave soldiers, what kind of a fate do you expect in arms? There is nothing but death to be expected. You must also understand that the Human Movement is here to save us. If these brothers and sisters have cast down the arms and have taken the Human Oath, what are you waiting for? Tell me to what race you belong? Answer, whoever has the most courage.”

A voice answered: “To the Human race.”

Queen: “And do you not understand that the Human Movement has appeared for it? How many times have you not heard about the Universal Judgment, is it not perhaps this? There is nothing else but the Human Oath which means that Human Society has appointed a Universal Judgment, and that its members shall cease to massacre one another. So, then, if you wish to be called Human, come and take the Human Oath. I am no longer your Queen, but instead the sister of the Civilized Humans.”

All of the soldiers threw down the arms they were carrying, and coming nearer, they raised their right hand.

The Queen, with her heart full of Human joy, said to them: “Shout you also:

Hurrah for the Human Doctrine!

Down with all weapons!

Hurrah for brotherhood!

Hurrah for Universal peace!”

While the soldiers were shouting, the Queen and the court ladies descended the stairs and went down outside and commenced to distribute the temporary Human emblems.

The sacred red rite, understood that in front of the Royal Palace, they were talking about and for the Human propaganda, and some one rang the bell, which meant that they should proceed ahead on their march.

Some gentlemen and ladies belonging to the privileged class who had seen the great spectacle of the children of *Humanity* taking the Human Oath, and thus establishing the highest civilization, came down from their carriage and approached, convinced of the Human Doctrine, and they also raised their hands and took the Human Oath.

The religious demonstration was totally broken up and going down Leria street, at the arrival at the temple they dissolved.

The hour was getting late, the sun was commencing to go down, when groups of boys were seen running through the streets, with bundles of newspapers, and shouting:

"Extra! Extra! The squadron of the Dalconesian infernal torpedo boats sunk twenty-one ships of the Rumpicanese."

Many people were soon seen reading papers and laugh and some one said: "Inhuman! This is the proper time for the people to protest, for the wars now-a-days are a reproach to the entire Human Society. We must consider our globe as a small village, in two hours time we get the news from any part of it through the great invention of wireless telegraphy."

The revolutionary groups withdrew to their different meeting halls, where they made speeches of protestation against the inhuman tyrants.

At the Circle of the Oppressed, Carnesio arose and said: "Brothers, you know already that the Human Movement has done nothing else but delay our sublime ideal of Human Liberty, which can only be attained by means of the Holy Social revolution. We must make away with all the tyrants and oppressors and wipe them from the face of the globe and destroy everything. This evening let us join the other circle and let us go and protest at the Human Council, and if they join us it is now the time to break it. The tyrants themselves have commenced the work of destruction by the death of so many unfortunate ones who having grown in ignorance not having understood what soldier means; and have been treated as marked lambs to be sent to the slaughterer."

It was half past seven in the evening and Grandinello, with Alestro went to Tremio's house and found him there, he had changed clothes; he wore a coat of black broadcloth and a white scarf across the waist to distinguish him as one of the Human propagandists at a feast of joy.

When Tremio saw Grandinello and Alestro he went to meet them, shook hands with them and said: "Brothers, I have thought that this evening besides discussing the interesting affairs concerning the Human Movement that it should be a feast of joy for the members of the Civilized Human Society; therefore I have prepared a number of scarfs of white silk to distinguish the Human propagandists, and the members of the Human Committee; besides wearing the scarf across the waist they shall also wear a cockcard on their right arm. A while ago two members have told me that in front of the Royal Palace, Brother Santrelli and our sister, the Queen, have made a tremendous Human propaganda, which broke up the religious demonstration. Now we may count

both as among the number of our propagandists of the Human cause."

He gave a scarf to Grandinello and one to Alestro, who put them on across the waist, and he put a white cockard on the right arm of Grandinello, and looking at the clock, he said: "Let us go, it is eight o'clock."

The Queen and the ladies of the court, after having finished distributing the Human emblems, re-entered the Royal Palace, and all went to the conversation hall, their hearts full of joy for having accomplished this work to the welfare of the whole Human Society. The Queen turning towards Santrelli, said to him: "Brother, go right away to the hall of the Human Council and tell our brothers there that we will soon be there also."

Santrelli left immediately and when he arrived at the door of the Human Council. He found it closed and nobody inside. At the same moment, Grandinello, Tremio and Alestro, arrived and finding Santrelli waiting, they exchanged fraternal expressions, shook hands, and praised him for the excellent Human propaganda he had made.

Tremio took the key and opened the door, and all four entered. Alestro pressing the electric button, the hall was immediately illumined as by magic.

Grandinello, addressing the other three, said: "The Human Council, by rights, ought to be held with open doors, but on account of Orrento, who might be the victim of some inhuman trouble, we shall be compelled to keep the doors locked."

They shut the door and fastened the chain to it, and then went to kneel down before the banner of *Humanity*.

Grandinello commenced to sing and the others sang in chorus with him:

"Oh! Symbol pure and holy,
Before thee kneeling we are;
Thou to the Human people, solely,
Shall give peace, keep them from war."

They arose, and Tremio who was carrying a little box containing scarfs and arm-bands of white silk, took out of it a scarf and gave it to Grandinello, who turning towards Santrelli, said to him: "Brother, in honor of the Human propaganda you have so successfully made, receive the Human scarf."

Santrelli standing still, Grandinello fixed the scarf around his waist, and, stretching out his right hand, said to him: "For the sake of the whole Human Society, you must show your Human courage in the Human propaganda, because the salvation of the Human Society rests with the Human Movement."

Santrelli: "To the best of my abilities I shall fulfill my duties as member of the Civilized Human Society."

All three answered: "Hurrah for our brother Santrelli! Thank you."

Tremio: "Two must go and keep the door."

Alestro: "I shall go."

Santrelli: "And I shall accompany you."

Tremio: "Grandinello and I we shall put every thing in readiness, before the Human Council be opened."

Alestro and Santrelli went to the door and placed themselves, one at the right and the other at the left.

Tremio after having placed a small book and the white inkstand and pen upon the small table, set three chairs near it, one on the right side and one on the left side, and the third one in the rear.

They heard the hymn of "Human Joy" which was being sung outside the door.

Alestro and Santrelli hastened to open the door and again took their position at the sides.

Tremio and Grandinello quickly went near the entrance in order to see the members come in, and they placed themselves, one at the side of Alestro, and the other near Santrelli, all facing each other.

The Queen, at a quick gait, entered the hall, and as she beheld the banner of *Humanity* unfolded, she extended her arms, and pointing with her right hand towards the symbol of Universal peace, and with her left hand pointed at the ladies of the court, raising her voice, she entoned the following verse:

“Here waves the joy of our hearts,
Announcing to all peace Universal;
Banner of love wave in all parts,
For all others are banners infernal.

Oh! Human banner, pure and white,
Symbol of all creatures, and Creator;
The Human people now with right
Before thee kneel, of all banners the greater.”

As the Queen had entered the hall, the ladies of the court followed her, entering in two rows; and when they had arrived to the center of the hall, they stopped, the line on the right facing the line on the left, and thus advancing near the banner, they went to kneel down before the Human symbol.

When they had finished singing, Grandinello, Tremio, Santrelli and Alestro, and other members of the Civilized Human Society, commenced to clap their hands and shouted: “Hurrah for our Human banner and Pure Civilization!”

The Queen and the ladies of the court arose and making front towards the back of the center and walking in two lines, they went and stopped on the left side of the banner.

The court ladies walked back a few paces in order to leave the table in full view from the entrance, and the banner as well, the two extremities of the rows touching the side walls.

The members of the Civilized Human Society placed themselves partly at the extreme right and the others at the extreme left.

The Queen stepped forward a few paces, and making a profound bow, said:

“I am going to sing:

“ALL WOMEN ARE HUMAN QUEENS.

When women all shall understand it,
They all will grasp at the Human emblem;
To all who wish it, we shall grant it,
All shall be Queens of the Human realm.

In all feasts of Human joy and mirth,
We shall wear it, all shall be equal;
This fine design announces the birth
Of equality, and we all wear the crown regal.

Civilized now ourselves, we call,
Each one to one's own duties attending;
Unfortunates no longer, but rich, we all
Are Human Queens, with no subjects bending.”

While the Queen was singing, all the ladies were accompanying in chorus, and when they had finished the song, they all clapped hands, and shouted: “Encore! Encore!”

They all wished, above all the ladies, to hear the song once more.

There was a knock at the door, Santrelli and Alestro approached, and all the members of the Hu-

man Society kept silent. Alestro asked: "Who is there?"

The answer given from outside, was: "Orrento."

They quickly opened the door and Orrento entered.

Santrelli hastened to lock the door again.

Orrento was a man of a characteristic figure, tall and robust, he was in the bloom of youth, but with his long blonde beard and hair, he seemed to be a man somewhat advanced in age. He wore a long cloak on his shoulders, which reached down to his feet; it was of grey fur and very clean, so that the fur resembled silver-threads; he had a big fur cap on his head, also of a grey color. He had manufactured these with his own hands. He had a long time since sworn not to lead the life of a slave, and neither to live at the expense of other people's labor. He grieved over the misfortune of the poor people who labored hard and lived in wretchedness. He did not profess any religion, but he believed in a true God in Heaven and in *Humanity*.

As soon as Orrento had entered he took off his cap and bowing his head he greeted all present. Tremio had given a Human scarf to the Queen who had placed it across her waist. After Orrento had greeted everybody, he remembered suddenly that Santrelli had locked the door, and turning towards him, he said:

"Open the door, the Human Movement is for the whole of *Humanity*! The Civilized Humans must show their Human courage."

Grandinello and all the members of the Civilized Human Society left their places and came near in order to shake hands with Orrento and as every brother and sister had done so they returned to their respective places.

When all were through paying their fraternal honors to Orrento, Grandinello and Tremio, accompanied him to his seat near the table; the seat was reserved at the center back of the table. When they approached the banner, Orrento fell on his knees, and arose immediately. Orrento took off his cloak and Tremio took a scarf and gave it to him, and Grandinello took one of the arm-bands and cockard and fastened it to Orrento's right arm.

Tremio took hold of the seat reserved for Orrento, and thinking that he must be tired after his long journey, he said to him: "Sit down, brother."

Orrento had put on the scarf across his chest, and having done so, he answered:

"This is no time to sit down or rest, we have very much to do this evening."

Grandinello noticed that since the door had been left open, the hall although very large and spacious had become filled to its full capacity with people of all kind, because the news had been spread all over the city that there was to be held a Human Council and that Orrento was to speak on the subject of the present system and the future Human Modern Civilization, and pointing towards Orrento with his right hand, and looking towards the members of the Civilized Human Society and at those who did not belong to the Civilized part, he said: "Brothers and sisters, children of *Humanity*, I introduce to you our brother, Orrento, the founder of the Human Committee."

Orrento, making an inclination of the head, greeted all present and turning towards Grandinello said: "I thank you, brother."

And extending his right arm with closed fist, with the exception of his index finger, he said: "Brothers and sisters, the development of our Human Society has taken a formidable turn, which threatens the destruction of the whole society. Who

could have imagined that from the time of the first inhabitants of our globe, when the true God of Heaven, who made them superior to all the other races or species of animals, and caused to reign among them love and brotherhood, not even destroying the venomous animals, who could have imagined, I say, that there might have resulted any harm to them from themselves? Our ancestors followed the evolution in order that it be possible to all of them to travel all over the globe without fear of danger. But they did not even dream that the hands of their descendants were to engender and create the most terrible monsters, which may be expected to destroy us all totally. Some of these monsters are so terrible, that in one single minute they are capable of dealing death to thousands of members of our Human Society. Therefore it is that the Human ideal has urged me to organize the Human Committee, whose aim it is to study the means how to find a movement, which shall not harm any class or race of our Human Society.

“We studied the Natural Human Science, and we have found that the only means was the Universal Human Movement, which certainly will lead our entire Human Society to be governed by Order and Pure Culture, which means the very highest degree of civilization.

“Now demonstrating to you with Human reason and right that our Human Society has arrived at a point where it finds itself facing two large highways; on the left there is one where there is a very large road-sign on which we read: Destruction of the whole Human Society! Near that sign there is a man wearing a red shirt and carrying in his hand a red banner, and at some distance away there are some people protected by some of those terrible monsters, who are shouting to him: ‘We are ready, your red flag does not frighten us!’

“Back of the man holding the red banner, there is an immense crowd of poor people, in a desperate state of mind, who shout to him: ‘We are ready, we are not afraid of those monsters; we have a more terrible one than those, and we are able in three days’ time to destroy the universe. We are tired living in wretchedness.’ Another approaches the man with the red flag, and says: ‘Fear not, but that victory shall certainly be on your side; all what is wanted is to make use of any destructive tactics whatsoever, and when they shall behold everything in fire and smoke, they shall die with fright and fear.’

“The man with the red flag answered: ‘We possess so many bombs and so much dynamite, that in the wink of an eye, we can reduce this our globe into atoms.’

“He left and went towards the crowd of those protected by the terrible monsters and said to them: ‘Be at ease, for victory shall always be yours, and the poor people shall forever be subjected to you and your posterity.’

“The way on the right is modern and exceedingly beautiful; there is also a very large road-indicator, and on this one we read the words: ‘Salvation of the entire Human Society.’

“Near this sign, there is a man holding the white flag of *Humanity*. Not far away there is a group of people, all wearing the emblem of *Humanity*. These are calling to the Human people, whom they see ready to enter through the road on the left, and they say to them: ‘This one here is the way for the Human race.’

“At a short distance from these there is another group of people who are unceasingly making signs to those protected by the terrible monsters and shout to them, saying: ‘Do not go any further.’

Leave off those terrible poisonous and destructive monsters, and come this way with us, if you wish to save yourselves, this is the way of salvation for the entire Human Society!’

“The fellow who had assured victory to the two terrible and antagonistic parties approached the latter group and said to them: ‘Let them advance instead of you going to join them, thus the Human Society will succeed in liberating itself from the present organization.’

“The people of this group shouted to this man, saying: ‘You are a traitor, and you certainly are not a member of our Human Society. What is your name?’

“He answered: ‘My name is *Inhuman Disorder*.’

All those forming the group commenced to shout: ‘Away with you, far from us, you accursed infernal spirit! We no longer believe in all your lies, by which you intend to lead the whole Human Society to destruction. We are the members of the Human Committee, who have paved the way which the Human Movement and the Human Society is to follow; and through which they shall be saved by us and the Human propagandists.’

“So, I say to you, brothers and sisters, remember that you are members of the Human Society. Take care that all times the cry of

“‘Hurrah for the Human Doctrine!’”

“‘Down with arms and weapons!’”

“‘Hurrah for the brotherhood of man!’”

“‘Hurrah for Universal peace!’”

may come from your hearts, that this cry may indicate to your brothers the salvation of our Human Society, and may lead them soon with us all to the establishment upon our globe of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and the purest Civilization.”

Scarcely had Orrento uttered these last words, when there entered into the hall of the Human Council the whole Circle of the Brothers of the Oppressed. They were carrying the red flag and wearing the laborers costume; some of them were without vests, and all were armed with sticks and fire-arms, and other destructive weapons.

Carnesio advanced with arrogance and shouted to Orrento: "Instead of holding your Human Council, you could be busy with better things; you and your Human propaganda have ruined our revolutionary movement. With tyrants it is necessary to use weapons, because they are the greatest enemies of *Humanity*; recently again they have sunk twenty-one ships with thousands of poor, unfortunate, ignorant victims. We have come here to warn you and inform you that you should join us and unite with us. This very evening is going to break out the great destructive social revolution."

At the same time that Carnesio was talking, the Circle "Without God or Religion" also entered, with a red banner and every member armed. All of them were wearing the red cockard.

Orrento stood with his arms folded on his breast, and without saying a word.

Carnesio taking out a bomb which he was carrying hidden in his clothes, and growing hot said roughly: "Well, what do you think of it? You either come with us or I will send you through the air, you and the whole of your Human Council."

The Queen and all the court ladies fell on their knees and with extended arms towards the Human banner, shouted:

"Oh! Symbol of peace, save us from so terrible a catastrophe!"

Orrento, extending his right arm towards him, said: "Calm yourselves; remember your Human

intelligence, and that you are Human. Yes, among our Human Society there have also been found some who were inhuman, but they have always respected the banner of *Humanity*. Rather if you have Human intelligence, answer my question: 'What do you think will result after all from the destructive social revolution?' "

Carnesio: "Society will become free."

Orrento: "Have you made an analysis of the signification of the words 'Destructive Social Revolution?'" "

Carnesio: "Certainly."

Orrento: "How have you made it?"

Carnesio: "That we must make away with all the tyrants that oppress *Humanity*."

Orrento: "You have made a mistake. It means the destruction of the whole Human Society."

Carnesio: "I don't think but one part should remain."

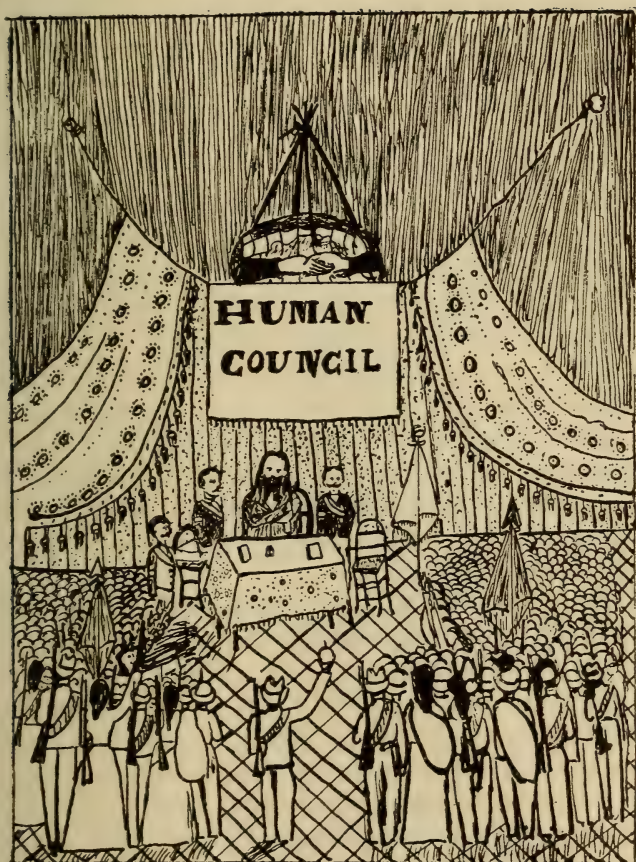
Orrento: "Well, even should one half of our Human Society remain, do you think that their condition would be improved?"

Carnesio: "Most assuredly."

Orrento: "You are mistaken. The Natural Human Science demonstrates to us that all the changes that have been accomplished among our Human Society, by the shedding of the blood of their own members, has done nothing but develop more tyrannical governments. It is the Human Movement alone that must and shall lead our Human Society to the point where it shall be governed by Order and the purest Civilization. And if your hearts are human throw down all those accursed infernal banners and weapons."

The Queen and all the court ladies had arisen.

Orrento, as soon as he had finished speaking, went quickly to take hold of the banner of *Humanity*



with his left hand, and going back to the center and in front of the table, he fell on his knees, raising his eyes and his right hand up to the banner, he exclaimed:

“Oh! Symbol of our Human Universal peace! Only you can protect the Human right! Under you the spilling of the Human’s blood will cease. Because only you are the flag of the whole Human Society!”

The Queen, the ladies of the court and all the members of the Civilized Human Society, looking on the great spectacle offered by Orrento, pointed towards the flag, those on the right side with their left hand, and those on the left side with their right hand, and they all intoned the song:

“Our Human Banner,”

which they sang to the end.

While they were singing the members of the revolutionary destructive circles, convinced by Human instinct, commenced to throw down their weapons and all their engines of destruction, and they lowered their flags.

When the singing was over, all in common accord shouted several times successively, “Hurrah for our Human Banner!”

Scialbina street in which was situated the hall where the Human Council was held, was filled with an immense crowd of people, and although the hall was very large the people were so crowded in it that there was no breathing space.

A certain Onetto, a man who seemed to be very religious, was at the service of Creppo as a secret spy. He had seen Orrento enter the hall of the Human Council. He went immediately to make his report to Creppo, who wanted to proceed forthwith to the arrest of Orrento, as there did not seem to be a better opportunity than this.

Creppo went quickly to the Royal Palace, and when he arrived at the entrance and did not see any sentinels nor any doorkeeper, he felt quite demoralized, because he conceived and understood instinctively that the Human Movement had already transformed the whole system within the royal family. He ascended the stairs and when he had arrived at the entrance to the first apartments, he rang the bell.

The King, after the visit of the physician had gotten up, and as if he were not afraid of any one, he went himself to open the door. The Queen, the ladies of the court and all the people in service at the palace had, as we know, taken the Human Oath.

As the King saw Creppo, he grew pale; he thought that he came to reprove him for not interesting himself in the preventing or stopping of the Human Movement.

Creppo, when he saw the young King, looked at him in his face in an air of reproof, and Gallonetti lowering his eyes, stretched out his hand to him and led him into his private room, made him take a seat, and said: "Well, Your Holiness, how is it that you took the trouble to come and visit me at this hour?"

Creppo, after having sat down, answered him: "I know that Orrento is at the Human Council, and I came to tell you, that you should immediately inform the General Commander of the fort to send the Squadron of the Cavalry of Suppression and a company of the Assailers, and have him arrested."

King: "Your Holiness, you know that I have ever fulfilled all my duties and shall always do so. I have by armed force suppressed all revolutionary movements, I have had the instigators to such movements imprisoned, I have had the offices of obnoxious publications closed, and abolished all periodicals which incited the people to rise up against us

and against the entire privileged class. But my Human conscience, neither now nor ever in the future, shall ever allow to interrupt the Human Movement. The actions of Orrento deserve praise from the entire Human Society. Their Human ideal penetrates the hearts of the most inhuman."

Creppo: "I know that also; but what of my shame?"

King: "For you, it is an honor, because people will say that with your cunning, you have had yourself worshipped like a second Superior God, and that you are, after all, nothing more than a member of the Human Society, like every other man."

Creppo: "And you know they say that all those who have not taken the Human Oath, they are not civilized? Do you think that it is right?"

King: "They are telling the truth, because if we had taken the Human Oath, you, instead of coming to me, thinking to have Orrento arrested, Your Holiness and myself, we might much better help the Human propaganda."

Creppo: "Let us put a stop to all those discourses concerning the Human Movement. Are you ready to comply with your oath?"

King: "I am convinced that the oath I have taken is inhuman. Moreover, I have not taken any oath to oppose the Human Movement which is the very way to salvation of the entire Human Society."

Creppo: "It matters little about Human Society. Either you act or I shall act."

King: "What does Your Holiness mean?"

Creppo: "That I shall call the armed force together."

King: "And I shall make it public tomorrow morning that it was Your Holiness who caused Orrento to be arrested."

Creppo: "It matters little to me. The Human propagandists know more or less that I am the key to the present inhuman system."

He went to the telephone which was to be found in the same room, and he called up the Commander General of all the troops, which were at that time within the fort; he gave him all the information, and the directions of street and number, where the Human Council was taking place.

The fort was at about two miles distance from the city, and as the Commander received the orders coming expressly from Creppo himself, he did not lose any time in having the forces required set on the march.

Creppo, after he was through telephoning, turned towards the King and said: "If I succeed in stopping the Human Movement, I will have you pay dearly for this and for your Human conscience."

And without saying anything more, though looking at him threateningly, he left.

The King was sunk in deep thought, but after awhile, he said: "Inhuman wretch; he believes, indeed, that the Human Society must forever remain in ignorance."

Mr. Alsenzio had the whole of the front of the palace illuminated, and he thought that as the first Human Council was taking place in his house, surely his name ought to occupy one of the pages of modern Human history.

It was about half past ten in the evening, when in the hall the whole congregation of people there assembled were shouting: "Hurrah for the Human banner!" While on the outside among the people assembled in the street there was going on a scene of bitterness.

The squadron of Suppressive Cavalry had come running in full gallop with sabers bare and facing

the population gathered in the street, and in a threatening attitude, and they went to post themselves in front of the hall of the Human Council, causing all the people to back away so that they themselves might be in a better position to see Orrento when he should come out of the hall. Soon after the cavalry came the company of the assaulting batallion, who went and placed themselves one-half on the right and the other half on the left of the entrance door.

Onetto approached the captain of the assaulting company and showed him the medallion of the Superior God he wore on his breast.

The captain knew then, that this fellow was in the service of Creppo and in a friendly way going near him, said: "Have you anything to tell me?"

Onetto: "Just pay attention. Orrento is a very tall man with long beard and hair and he wears a gray fur cloak."

The chief of the music band, who was at the head of the last friends of the Superior God in the religious demonstration, after having taken the Human Oath, with all his musicians, had retired with them to the concert hall and was writing the Human Hymn.

When they had finished arranging it, it was late, and they left the hall in the hope of playing at the end of the Human Council.

Grandinello took hold of Orrento's cloak and laid it on his shoulders.

Orrento raising the banner of *Humanity*, commenced to march towards the door leading outside.

The Queen and the court ladies followed him in two rows, and behind them came in order and sequence, the members of the Human Committee and the Human propagandists, and after these marched the Civilized members of the Human Society, They were all decorated with the Human emblem.

When Orrento with the banner of *Humanity* arrived outside the door, the whole population outside on seeing the Human symbol, commenced to shout:

“Hurrah for Human Doctrine!”

“Down with the arms and weapons!”

“Hurrah for the brotherhood of man!”

“Hurrah for Universal peace!”

At the same time the music band of the Civilized members of the Human Society commenced to play the Human Hymn.

The captain of the company of the assailing battallion, on seeing the banner of *Humanity* coming out, shouted: “Present arms!”

The commander of the squadron of suppressive cavalry did the same.

Orrento having arrived in the middle of the street stopped, and the Queen shouted: “Lower the accursed arms!”

And with the ladies of the court they all went to place themselves in a circle around Orrento and the banner of *Humanity*.

Mr. Alsenzio on his balcony was viewing this Human scene of Human joy, and he was wiping his eyes with a white handkerchief which he filled with tears of joy.

Orrento holding with his left hand the pole of the banner of *Humanity*, and with his right hand pointing towards the banner, spoke in a very loud voice and said:

“The Human banner absolutely refuses to be saluted by the accursed arms. The inhuman banners alone require such honors. For among the army corps composed of the flower of the youth of the members of our Human Society, they are presenting arms to announce that with the same they shall be led to the slaughter. The accursed inhu-

man banners are terrible; they have caused the human to become worse than the ferocious wild beasts causing them to lose all instinct of Human beings.

"Is there any one among you who was in the war we waged a few years ago against the Croinians?"

An old soldier of the company of the battallion of the assaulters, in the first row, throwing down his gun and saber, stepped forward and cried: "I was! I was!"

Orrento: "Tell us the prodigies worked by the inhuman banners. You know that the members of the Human Committee and the Human propagandists cannot lie."

The Soldier: "When at last we had consumed all the ammunitions and they as well, we threw ourselves the ones against the others, and where the two banners were flying there also the theatre of the massacre was the hottest."

Orrento (pointing with his right hand to the banner of *Humanity*,) said: "Brothers and sisters of all classes, without distinction of race, in order that we may not be taken away from the surface of our globe, all the accursed inhuman banners must disappear, and our Human banner must wave over all parts, not till then shall the Human race have any right to call itself civilized."

The Human banner is not to be saluted by arms, but by Human hearts, who give out with all their strength the shout:

"Hurrah for the banner of *Humanity*!"

The people commenced to shout and the band commenced to play the Human Hymn repeatedly, filling all hearts with joy. The squadron of suppressive cavalry, and the company of the batallion of assailers threw down their arms and taking white handkerchiefs and tearing them in strips, they dec-

orated their breasts with them, showing that they also were Human.

Orrento commenced to march and the Queen, the ladies of the court, the members of the Civilized Human Society and the whole assembled population followed him.

The company of the batallion of assailers and the squadron of the suppressive cavalry, after the whole crowd had passed, set out to follow them at a short distance. No one could have imagined that at the end of the Human Council there was spontaneously to succeed one of the most imposing demonstrations that had ever been witnessed in the city.

The hour was late, and a great part of the population had retired for the night, when suddenly they heard the shouts of the demonstrating procession:

“Hurrah for the banner of *Humanity*!”

They all got up and dressing went to join the movement and thus increasing the numbers in this very great Human demonstration.

The Human demonstration took its direction towards the east side of the Scialbina street. The streets were finely lit up and illuminated; but that which touched the heart of the most tyrannical was the sight of the Human banner, which for the first time was waving triumphantly through the streets of Rosisma, and that the Humans at last acknowledged that it was the symbol of *Humanity*, which secured to them Universal peace; the brotherhood of man, joy, abundance for all the members of the Human Society and the highest degree of civilization.

Although some were contrary to the Human Movement, yet the Human instinct at the sight of the Human banner, moved them to take off their hats, to bow down their heads acknowledging it as the symbol of the Civilized Human Race.

The Human demonstration took through the Al-dochina street, the crowd was keeping on shouting:

“Hurrah for our Human banner!”

“Down with the infernal banners!”

“Hurrah for the brotherhood of man!”

“Hurrah for Universal peace!”

Creppo heard the shouts, and went to conceal himself behind a window in such a way that he could observe the whole demonstration of *Humanity* without being seen by any one.

As he saw Orrento carrying the banner of *Humanity*, he said: “I have said it, that the Human Movement would be able to cause the whole inhuman organization and all of them to disappear, but I must maintain solid and firm to the last.”

He watched attentively, and his heart filled with joy at seeing that grand Human demonstration pass by.

The Human demonstration was now going down the Leria street, and the widowed mother of the young King went with haste to the balcony and seeing the Human banner she ran down to the first floor and rang the bell of the first apartment.

The King had put on the dress of a Human citizen, and as he heard the bell ring, he went to the door and opened it, and seeing his mother, he took her right hand and kissed it.

The mother said to him: “Dear son, come and see the Human demonstration, with the Human banner at the head. It is your duty to receive it and to demonstrate to the people that you are a member of the Civilized Human Society.”

King: “I would like to have a Human emblem.”

The mother taking off the one she was wearing herself on her chest, gave it to him, saying: “Take this one, I shall go and get another one.”

At the same time that the King was taking the Human emblem from his mother, the Human demonstration was arriving, and Orrento went to place himself in front of the central balcony. The Queen and the court ladies placed themselves in a line, behind the banner of *Humanity*.

When the street in front of the Royal Palace was filled with people, their heads turned towards the banner of *Humanity*, and Orrento raising it, the people commenced to shout:

“Hurrah for the banner of *Humanity*!”

“Down with infernal banners!”

“Hurrah for the brotherhood of man!”

“Hurrah for Universal peace!”

The King showed himself at the balcony, and bowing down saluted the Human symbol and said:

“Human obligation.

“Every Human, whether male or female, is obliged to salute the banner of *Humanity*! Oh! to how many members of our Human Society has it not been the means of saving their lives. When all hope was lost, to have recourse to this Human symbol. I praise the Human Committee who has designed and traced the plans and lines to follow in the Human Movement; I praise the propagandists for the Human cause who are educating the people in the modern Human civilization; I praise the members of the Civilized Human Society, because into their hearts the spark of *Humanity* has penetrated, and lit the fire of Human brotherhood. I would like to take the Human Oath, but I cannot as long as there are inhumans in existence.”

Taking the Human emblem, he continued talking, saying: “I have here my Human emblem, and I am sorry that I cannot adorn my chest with the Human scarf, because I must cause our constitution to be observed and this has been established by the

will of the majority of the people, which constitute our great nation."

Saluting the Human banner, he withdrew.

The Queen was very sorry, for she thought the King had become convinced, and resolved to take the Human Oath; and in her turn saluting the banner of *Humanity*, with all the ladies of the court, and some other members of the Civilized Human Society, they re-entered the Royal Palace.

The Human demonstration dispersed, and Orrento, with Grandinello and the Human propagandists, carried the banner of *Humanity* back to the hall of the Human Council.

Alestro had betaken himself home to see his dearly beloved mother, and found a package of letters, which the mailman had brought during the day. He immediately understood that the letters came from the members of the Human Committee and he went out right off to take them to the hall of the Human Council.

Orrento after having placed the Human banner in the hall of the Human Council, said to the propagandists: "Brothers, in a short time the movement has made an immense progress. What is now necessary to do, is the organization *en masse* in every district in the city.

At this moment, Alestro entered the hall of the Human Council, and handed the package of letters to Orrento, who took one of them and read: "From the Members of the Human Committee, in Human Propaganda.

"The Human Movement is being embraced on a grand scale by all classes without distinction of race. The organization *en masse* is just making furor, and all are approving of our Human ideal. At every moment persons are presenting themselves, coming from all classes and races, who offer their services voluntarily to act as Human propagandists.

The ladies especially know how to convert the most inhuman by using their gentle and attractive manners. The great need now is the international office which will give a new impetus, every day, and will increase considerably the number of the members of the Civilized Human Society; and will keep up the correspondence between all parts of our great Human confederation.

"In the name of *Humanity*, I greet you.

"At Trevoli, in the fourth year of the twentieth century.
SORRIA."

Tremio and all the others listened attentively to the reading of this message, and when it was read, he said:

"Orrento, we cannot find a better place to be used as the international office."

Orrento: "It would be an exceedingly good place, but I would not like to give any trouble to your father; you know that the international office will be crowded all the time and will be filled to overflowing when the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, shall be inaugurated all over our globe, and when the banner of *Humanity* shall wave everywhere from the smallest village to the largest cities."

Tremio: "My father said that the whole palace is at the disposition of the Human Movement, and I am positively sure that he will become one of the most interested members."

They all went out, and after having locked the door, Orrento and the others were bidding good night to Tremio, preparing to go away.

Tremio, shaking hands with Orrento, said to him: "My father told me that after the Human Council should be ended, he wished to have the honor to entertain at a dinner with him all the members of the Human Committee and the Human propagandists."

Orrento: "The honor is on our side, but it is getting so late."

Tremio: "No matter, everything shall be found in readiness."

They went to the front door and Tremio rang the bell.

Crelia, the maid-servant of the family, immediately looked out of the window, and when she knew that it was Tremio with the others, she opened the door.

Mr. Alsenzio went to meet them, while Crelia and Ainetta set to work preparing everything.

They entered into the dining room, shaking hands with Crelia and Ainetta, and taking off their hats, they went to sit down at the table.

Crelia, although she had been raised in that house, being from her tenderest years an orphan without father or mother, had of her own accord employed herself as maid-servant in the service of the family of Mr. Alsenzio, and as such had always been used to eat at a separate table. She had become a beautiful woman with finely colored cheeks blooming like two roses; she was working with alacrity and was a model of honor and cleanliness.

Tremio loved her very much, and continually was saying within his heart: Some day, if Crelia loves me, she will become my legitimate spouse. He did not wish to speak of it in the family circle, because the father had told several persons, that Tremio must marry a young woman who should bring him a dowry equal to his own.

At the left of Mr. Alsenzio Miss Ainetta, his daughter, had taken her seat at the table; and Tremio leaving an empty seat between himself and his sister, turning towards Crelia, said to her: "Sister, why do you not come and sit down."

Crelia: "I cannot, because as long as the Uni-

versal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization is not established, I am your slave."

Tremio: "You are not nor shall you be my slave; but if you love me with your Human heart as I love you, you shall soon be my Human spouse. Because the Human Oath abolishes all inhuman prejudices."

And taking her by the hand he took her to the vacant seat.

Crelia blushed so much that her cheeks became red like fire, and Tremio's sister kissed her.

Mr. Alsenzio looked somewhat displeased, and Orrento arising, said: "Hurrah for our brother! The members of the Civilized Human Society must be the first ones to introduce the Modern Human Civilization."

After the repast was over, Orrento took the package of letters and gave it to Tremio and said: "Brother, I beg of you to answer tomorrow to our brothers, the members of the Human Committee, and let the Human correspondence be directed to the hall of the Human Council."

Bidding them all a good night, and giving them a good shake of hands, they departed.

Tremio went to accompany them as far as the door, and shaking hands once more and wishing them again good night, he re-entered the house.

Orrento and Grandinello, when they were outside, took leave of all the other Human propagandists, and although it was already so late in the night they thought of returning, so that without losing any time, they might be in the morning early with the other members of the Human Committee.

The Human Committee was composed of persons of all classes without any distinction of race. The idea which had urged them to assemble and or-

ganize was the great confusion of parties existing among the whole Human Society, and which was threatening its complete destruction.

Each party had the intention to improve the condition of its own members and to harm that of all the others.

The governments formed the principal party, and dealt out the greatest harm to the whole Human Society. They were united and formed a confederation among themselves, but to the eyes of the ignorant people, they appeared to be hostile to each other. Their naval fleets were always going together and wherever the oppressed people sought somewhat violently to free themselves, if it was necessary, they all joined together and very soon had the poor people surrendering at discretion. In order to maintain this inhuman disorder they had millions of members taken from the flower of youth among the members of the Human Society, had them armed with the most terrible infernal engines of destruction. The pedestal of these governments were the false religious constitutions, introduced in the Human Society. To these all the unproductive drones by profession had joined themselves, and all united formed fully one-third of the members of the Human Society, who were not producing anything.

If the other two-thirds of the members of the Human Society who were able, capable, and willing to work, had been given an opportunity to labor for the production and necessary distribution, the whole Human Society might, nevertheless, have been living in comfort and abundance, but even then it was impossible to establish either Human Order or Pure Civilization in a Human sense, because these can only be obtained and begotten by the Human Movement.

Of the two-thirds of the members of the Human Society who were subjected to the toying and gambling of the other unproductive third, at the most three-fourths were working, and one-fourth at least were permanently without labor, because it was impossible for them to find work; and they were used as supplements, so that whenever one of the working members rebelled against ill-treatment, or any other grievance, he was sent away and his place was immediately filled by one of the supplementary laborers, and the former was compelled to go and seek work some other place or to starve.

In the midst of so many ill-treatments of all kinds and of an inhuman source, the laborers commenced to join together, and form unions and large protective associations or confederations.

Their aim was to combat against the inhuman treatment of which they were the victims everywhere, to shorten the hours of labor, and to increase wages. In order to obtain all this they had found that the best means was to strike and stop all work in the places where they were employed, and to prevent any other members of the Human Society from taking their places.

When this labor movement was once fairly started, misery and wretchedness among the two-thirds of the oppressed members of the Human Society commenced to increase on a par, because the strikers, were stopping one line of necessary production, and that the strike lasting sometimes three, four or more months, the products in that line became every day less and less. The strikers found out also that one strike was no sooner ended than another was started and so on successively, but all the time without giving any satisfactory results. Because, even if the strikers had obtained a small increase in salary, they had to pay so much the more

for all the commodities and the necessities of life which had remained unproductive for some time, and the manufacture of which now was costing more. They had perhaps obtained a small increase in wages and a diminution in the hours of labor, but their conditions had not improved at all.

They thought they had made away with ill-treatment and they were worse treated than ever. When they were striking in some branch of industry, they were compelled to have recourse to violent means in order to prevent others to take the places they had left vacant.

The one-third of the members of the Human Society forming the unproductive class were not slow in finding people who were very glad and willing to go and occupy the places left vacant by the strikers, because they were compelled to do so by misery and wretchedness, and even if it were at the peril of their life that they were taking hold of that work, in the circumstances in which they found themselves, they could not refuse to work. This state of affairs was something like an ignorant tragedy. If ten thousand struck and went out of work, immediately ten thousand others were sent to take their places. The unproductive third of the members of the Human Society, moreover, sent another ten thousand of the sons of the oppressed two-thirds, with arms and weapons and engines of destruction of all descriptions to be used against the strikers, and thus at one sole place of labor and in one instance alone, thirty thousand persons were in agitation and in a stir the ones against the others, fighting and killing, wounding and disabling one another, while no one was tending to the necessary labor, and the unproductive class who had everything in abundance any way, were complacently looking on from a safe distance.

Orrento, although young in years was old in experience, and one day he said to the Human Committee: "It is not necessary for the Human propagandists to study ancient history, but let them only lay out during their Human propaganda, all the conditions of the present system. As I can demonstrate it very well, if from all the members of our Human Society that are able to work, only one-fifth were working at the necessary production of commodities, the conditions of our Human Society would be as they are now.

"The industrial associations are organized in the same style and on the same principles as the unproductive third of the Human Society.

"Every industrial association is being directed by a president, aided by a secretary and an industrial adviser (counsellor). The industrial advisers or counsellors, of all the industrial associations of a city, united form the Industrial Council. The confederated or united industrial associations of a province, directed by a president and all the provincial confederations or unions by a national president.

INDUSTRIAL COUNSELLORS AND THEIR AUTHORITY.

"The industrial counsellors have the power to call a strike in any association of laborers, and to make them return to their work.

"The unproductive class, which have appropriated to themselves all the natural and artificial riches or wealth, know that the Human will of the members of all the industrial organizations is in the hands of the industrial counsellors, and as soon as an industrial association has been called upon to strike, they commence to seduce the strikers, as the inhuman seducer acts with the virgin maid to cast her afterwards on the street the unfortunate victim of adventure and chance.

“The poor strikers are a toy between the bosses and the industrial counsellors. The former who oppress them and the latter who betray them.

“The strikes cannot last long because the subsidy which every striker gets from the funds of the federation are insufficient to the support of himself and family; and compelled by want and misery, very often without waiting for the order from the industrial council, he goes back to work of his own accord and is looked upon by the others as a traitor.

“When the bosses wish to make a show of their superiority over the association of laborers, first of all they insure themselves, and the president of the great national federation does the same. They give him a good compensation and when everything is well combined among them, they then feel secure in venting their inhuman hatred against those who have produced for them the wealth they enjoy.

“When the Industrial Council of a city, called for or ordered a strike, all the artisans in one line or branch of industry stopped work and when they saw that no one presented himself to help the thing along and give it a lift, they then ordered a general strike for the whole brotherhood, and made a report to the president of the provincial federation. After a short time the whole entire federation had quit work. Now commenced the struggle against workmen, members of the industrial association. The unproductive class had joined together with the government, and in the province where trouble existed between the workmen and the employers, there were sent thousands of members of the Human Society, armed with infernal engines of destruction, and their own Human will rested in one alone who was called general commander.

“The first thought of the general commander, as soon as he had arrived at the seat of trouble, was

to proclaim a manifesto to all the members of the laboring federation, warning them that within three days' time they had to consign within his hands or of his representatives all the fire-arms or any other kinds of weapons that might be dangerous and injurious to public order. After the three days had passed by he gave orders to his own armed men to commence a perquisition in every house and on every person, and when he had made sure that all the members of the laboring federation had no longer any arms or weapons of any description, he then commenced by having arrested and imprisoned all those who seemed to have the most interest in the organization."

Orrento, speaking with several members of the great federation of labor, always told them: "It is impossible that your movement can give good results because your base of organization is inhuman. And if you are not convinced when the laboring movement shall have had its course, I will tell you the why and the wherefore of it."

The unproductive class seeing that the phenomenon of the laboring movement had a destructive revolutionary instinct, granted them the universal suffrage; and put the ballot box at the disposal of the entire male population having reached twenty-one years of age.

Such an ideal seemed to have a human appearance and the mass of the people were satisfied to see among them members of the unproductive class, preaching to them the modern religion of politics."

Orrento was unceasingly observing the results, and when any of his friends was asking him anything about it, he answered: "I am sure and certain that the unproductive class, by having granted universal suffrage, has done nothing else but strengthen its own rank and file. You need not ask me, because you see it yourselves with your own eyes.

“The mass of the poor people believed all what was told them by the members of the unproductive class, who presented themselves as candidates for some office, promising them a paradise of abundance, yet instead of this, they were receiving a hell of misery.”

Some of the members of the Human Society who had noticed that the universal suffrage was not understood by the laboring class, and who wished to raise up the latter out of their wretched and miserable condition, then commenced to study seriously on the means of solving the problem.

Before their eyes presented itself the phenomenon of Socialism and its written doctrines. This called unto the laboring class and all those who sympathized with them, to unite with the former and united to go to the ballot box and instead of voting for the members of the unproductive class to vote for the members of the Socialist class.

The doctrines of Socialism were being preached on the public streets and squares as well as in large meeting halls. The propagandists of Socialism in the beginning seemed crazy in the eyes of the members of their own class, specially when by chance some member of the unproductive class happened to come near; they felt offended that he was living on the price of the products of the laboring class.”

Orrento was not taking any interest in anything special, he only was thinking.

Some of Orrento's friends who had become Socialistic propagandists, asked him, saying: “Orrento, what do you think of this movement?”

Orrento answered them: “Continue your propaganda; but neither now, nor ever, can Socialism be established.”

Orrento's friends became cold towards him; but after a while, one ventured to ask: “Why?”

Orrento in a movement of loving passion, answered very loud: "For *Humanity's* sake you must also understand that any doctrines that are not Human can do nothing else but harm Human Society."

Orrento's friends had no longer the courage to ask him another question, and had retired. When on the evening of the Human Council they saw him at the head of the immense Human demonstration, carrying the banner of *Humanity*, they remembered the words he had spoken some time before.

There were some among them who were displeased, because they had hoped to be elected to parliament, others as provincial counsellors, others as mayors or city counsellors, and they all saw that the Human Movement was swallowing all parties in order to create an only one, to be the Civilized Human People.

The Human propagandists in their Human propaganda, were not offending any one individually and were demonstrating that the present system was nothing else than the produce of the inhuman organization, making an appeal to all classes in order to establish the Modern Human Civilization.

All the rulers of all the nations, on seeing the development of the Human Movement and on listening to the explanation of the Human Doctrine, realizing that it meant harm to no one, but only the welfare of the whole Human Society, they commenced to correspond with each other and resolved to send a delegation to Rosisma, and to have an interview with Orrento. The great Human phenomenon which had developed the problem for the welfare of the entire Human Society, was raising to the highest pinnacle of civilization.

The resolution which all the rulers of all the nations had taken, was made public, and they sent telegrams directed to the hall of the Human Council

at Rosisma, that they would all meet there on the first of April.

The other parties became jealous of this, and thought of sending delegates there also, in order to secure the knowledge of the importance of that interview.

In the eyes of the people it seemed that Creppo was very much contrary to the Human Movement, and he had sent a circular to all the sacred ministers ordering them to keep aloof from the Human propaganda and forbidding them to read Human literature; but he himself, was secretly, one of the first ones to get a copy of anything that came from the press of the Human Movement, and he was spending a great deal of his time in reading and studying all the publications issued by the Human presses.

However, everything went contrary to Creppo's wishes. He was getting all that literature in secret; but a great many of the sacred ministers had thrown off the frock and had become Human propagandists, and were preaching the Human Doctrine.

Alestro betook himself every evening to the hall of the Human Council, and was going out with the Human propagandists. Tremio had received and read the telegrams, and when he saw Alestro in the evening, after having shaken hands with him, he said to him: "Brother, at the first opportunity you have I beg you to go and see our brother Orrento and tell him that on the first of April he must be sure and be here himself very early.

King Gallonetti as soon as he was aware of this coming event, by the notice he received, spoke to several of his friends about uniting together and forming a committee to make preparations in order to receive the delegation of representatives of all the nations, and entertain them at the Royal Palace; and he recommended that the president of the committee should humanely speak to all the members of the

delegation that no one should be carrying weapons of any kind about himself.

The members of the delegation of all nations, had corresponded with each other to the object that in order to create a grand effect at their arrival in Rosisma, they should arrive all together at the same time; and they agreed to stop and wait at Tramel, a small village at about twenty-five miles from Rosisma.

At the break of day, on the first of April, Orrento arose and went to work to awake the members of the Human Committee and taking leave of them, after having shook hands with them, he left.

Rosisma was one of the oldest cities on the globe, and enclosed in her bosom the greatest historical treasures.

The Human Committee had established themselves to the west, at a certain distance from the city, so that Orrento on his way was walking towards the east. When he arrived at Mount Varnol, he saw Rosisma, which seemed to be still enveloped in darkness. The sky was clear, the atmosphere was firm, and a heavy dew had been falling during the night, and was hanging like diamonds and pearls on the blades of grass, giving a silvery appearance to everything. The sun was on the point of rising on the horizon. Orrento stopped, looking with enchantment in the direction whence the sun was to project its first matutinal rays, and was to cover the east with a splendid mantle of gold, and suddenly at the appearance of the orb of day, he fell on his knees, and extending his arms towards it he cried out: "Oh! divine orb, as you came out to cast your beneficent light upon the whole universe, make that this day, from my mouth, may come out words which will convince all and every one, that the Human Movement is not meant for the harm of any single individual, but indeed to lead and conduct the entire

Human Society to the highest degree of Civilization."

He stood up and started again walking his way cheerfully, and asking himself, the Human Reason seeming to have a discussion with the Human intellect, and he was saying within himself: Certainly, if I take an orange and peel it, I cannot expect to find a pear inside but I shall find the meat of the fruit called orange, which represents the value of the tree which has produced it. For, 'by their fruit, you shall know them.' Now if the Human Movement has been developed from the Human Doctrine it certainly cannot produce disorder and want of civilization, but I am most sure that it will develop Order and Pure Civilization for the whole Human Society, which will represent the value of that very selfsame doctrine."

He arrived at the hall of the Human Council, and found Tremio in the act of opening it.

As Tremio got sight of Orrento, he went to shake hands with him, welcoming him in the most graceful style, and accompanied him inside the hall of the Human Council.

At seven o'clock in the morning the reception committee gathered in front of the Royal Palace. Each member came in a princely carriage, and when all had arrived they started for the Central railway station of Rosisma. The carriages formed two lines arriving at the depot at thirty minutes after seven.

At eight o'clock a special train entered the station, coming from Tramel.

The members of the reception committee had alighted from their carriages and approaching the in-coming train, were getting ready for the ceremonies of reception. The members of the delegation of representatives of all the nations, commenced to alight from the cars and the members of the reception committee received them with grand cere-

monies and led them to the carriages in which they ascended.

In each carriage there entered two members, one of the reception committee and one of the representatives of the delegation from all nations.

The president of the reception committee, ordered the coachman to drive ahead and in a single file.

The members of the delegation of representatives of all nations were wearing the emblem of their respective countries, in order that they might be known and distinguished the one from the other, and to what nation they belonged and the country they represented.

The chairman of the reception committee, after having reached destination, alighted and approaching the first carriage, in order not to show any partiality, asked gently of both occupants, saying: "I must obey the orders I have received, and I beg of you not to feel offended, but tell me, are you carrying any weapons of any description; which you must acknowledge have been made with the sole object of wounding or killing some member of the Human Society?"

The member of the reception committee answered: "I do not carry any."

The other occupant of the carriage, on hearing such a strange question, turned towards the chairman of the reception committee, and answered him: "What is the reason that you want to know that?"

Chairman: "Here, the Human Movement has made such brilliant progress, that the King has resolved not to tolerate any longer any infernal engines within the precincts of the Royal Palace."

This was the representative of the grand nation of Rumpica, and he asked again: "What! the King has become a Civilized Human?"

Chairman: "Not yet; for he has not yet taken the Human Oath, but he does no longer take any interest in the troops."

Delegate: "By George! There is the Royal Palace of the Emperor Nottolo, which seems to be a fortress of the first rank and there are always war-like preparations going on."

Chairman: "Of course, the greater a tyrant a man is, the greater coward he is, the more he feels afraid all the time, and he can hardly sleep, and if he does doze he dreams that some one is blowing him through the air, with his Royal Palace and everything. Tell him, at your return, that if he wants to free himself from his inhuman folly, he must contribute to the Human propaganda, and read Human literature."

The representative of Rumpica, taking a revolver and a poniard which he was carrying hanging from his belt, handed them over. The first carriage commenced to go forward and the others neared, and as each carriage came before the chairman of the reception committee, it stopped and the occupants of the divers carriages, on seeing the chairman of the reception committee understood what the matter was, and that there was question of a complete disarmament, and without it being necessary for him to renew the question, they took off the arms they were carrying about them and handed them over to him.

As the chairman of the reception committee received the weapons handed him over by the occupants of each carriage, he was placing them upon his carriage, and when they had all passed by, he ordered all to stop; he mounted in his carriage, he ordered the coachman to take him to the Hotel Crimaldi, in front of the Central station.

The King Gallonetti had prepared in the large dining room of the Royal Palace, a splendid

repast for all the members of the delegation of representatives of all nations, and the members of the reception committee.

As soon as the carriage of the chairman of the reception committee stopped in front of the Hotel Crimaldi, one of the employees approached; but seeing that inside there were weapons, he made about face and went away as fast as his legs could carry him, and entered the office. The chairman of the reception committee alighted from the carriage and quickly went to the office where he found the manager of the hotel, and asked him politely: "Please have you not a vacant room?"

The manager answered: "There is more than one."

Chairman: "I would like to have one for a couple of days, because I have here the weapons carried by the members of the delegation of the representatives of all nations, and I would like to leave them here."

Manager: "I cannot allow that, for the owner of the hotel we have now has taken the Human Oath, and he has given strict orders not to let any person carrying arms enter the place or cross the threshold or to allow any arms within the premises. All what we can do is to help destroying them but not preserving them."

The chairman of the reception committee without answering anything, turned around and entering his carriage once more, told the coachman: "Whip your horses and stop at Number Thirty-nine, Volen street."

The coachman whipped his horses and set them trotting and in half an hour's time stopped at the appointed destination.

This was a beautiful country house, surrounded by a magnificent park. At the central window there was a beautiful young woman amusing herself with

playing with and kissing a little boy about eight years old.

The little boy was very beautiful. He had beautiful shining chestnut hair carefully combed. He wore a costume of marine captain trimmed with golden galloons, and on seeing the carriage stop, he shouted: "Good morning, papa!"

The young woman noticed that there were weapons within the carriage, and she cried out to the chairman of the reception committee: "Whose weapons are those?"

The chairman of the reception committee was Baron Prascurio, married to the very beautiful and gentle young baroness Addenels, daughter of Prince Ugolan, and the little boy was their only son.

The chairman answered: "They belong to the members of the delegation of representatives of all nations, who arrived this morning."

Baroness Addenels: "And have you no other place to take them to?"

Prascurio: "I went to the Hotel Crimaldi, and they told me that they had all taken the Human Oath."

Baroness Addenels: "Well, I shall not take them in, either. With what courage did you bring them here. I have taken the Human Oath. Take them to those who are not yet civilized."

The baron alighted from the carriage, and commenced to take some of the weapons and place them on his left arm. His wife shouted to him: "So then you will not desist? Is that the respect you have for me?"

She ran down the steps and went to meet her husband at the entrance door and placing herself in the middle, she commenced to shout to him, and said: "Go back! Go back! Don't you know that the Human Oath is sacred to the Human Society?"

Prascurio: "I care little for the Human Oath! Let me pass, I am in a hurry."

Baroness Addenels: "This is impossible in my house; I do not want any infernal engines of destruction."

Prascurio: "The house is yours, but I am the head of the family, and you are my slave. Away from here; and pushing her away with his right hand, he made her fall with her head on a step of the entrance door and he ascended the steps."

As the baroness was falling she shouted to her husband: "Inhuman man; you shall repent for not having listened to my Human advice."

She arose and went out.

The baron returned, running and said to the coachman: "Come down and help me!"

The coachman answered: "My duty is to guide the horses, not to carry arms."

The baroness called her little boy: "Clainto! Clainto!"

The little boy when he saw his father leaving something in the second room and returning in a run, left a little dog with which he was playing, and went to see what his father had laid down there. When he found the arms he took a small revolver, which seemed to him the most beautiful of all, and pressing upon the trigger accidentally the shot was fired piercing his heart through and through, reducing him instantly to the state of a cadaver.

The baroness, who was not stopping calling her little son, thinking to take him along with her to the house of her father, on hearing the report of the shot, exclaimed: "Oh! My God! What desolation has struck my house!"

She went running inside and going up the stairs in one flight she entered the second room where she found her little Clainto stretched on the floor a corpse! dead!

She knelt down near him and cried out: "Oh! My son, your father is the cause of thy death."

The baron had thrown down the arms and running up the steps following his wife, he hastened to ascertain what had happened, and when he saw that his little son was dead he pulled his hair with all the sorrow of despair, he fell near him on the floor.

The vice-president of the reception committee, when he saw that the chairman was not coming back, sent a member in a carriage to go and enquire what had happened.

Those of the last carriage said that they had seen the carriage run in the direction of the Hotel Crimaldi.

The coachman whipped his horse to gallop, while the vice-president of the reception committee thought of taking the delegation to the Royal Palace.

The member who had gone in search of the chairman of the reception committee was Duke Galanfroni Ugolani, brother-in-law of Baron Prascurio, and when he arrived at the Crimaldi Hotel, they told him that the baron had gone away, the coachman urging his horses to a trot.

He thought immediately that he must have gone to his country place, and giving orders to his coachman to run his horses at full speed he went that direction. When he arrived at a short distance, he saw a crowd of people, men and women, small and large, who went running in that direction. His heart began to beat thinking that some misfortune must have happened at the house of his sister. When the carriage stopped in front of the residence with one bound he leaped to the ground and ran to the entrance door and asked what had occurred.

People were looking at him and no one was answering, but made haste in giving him room to pass. When the duke reached the door of the second room where there were two members of the Civilized Hu-

man Society, wearing the Human emblem, and who did not let pass any one, they made the people make room for him, and when he saw his sister kneeling and weeping, and his brother-in-law fainted, and with his face all livid, and his hair all in disorder lying unconscious, weeping also, and looking at his sister, he asked: "What has happened?"

His sister looking at him and weeping, exclaimed: "Brother, the accursed weapons have made me unhappy forever! They have killed my dear Clainto!"

The brother came nearer, and kneeling down he kissed his little nephew.

While the duke was kissing his nephew, the family doctor entered, and taking off his hat he came near little Clainto and bending down he took his little pulse with his right hand. While the doctor was watching little Clainto's pulse, all were keeping their breath.

After five minutes of suspense for all, the doctor said: "There is no longer any hope. He is dead."

The baroness on hearing these words, kissed him again and again, and exclaimed: "My son, I bless you with all the kisses I have given you! I bless you with all the caresses I have made you; and be sure that your tomb shall be bathed every day with my tears. Yes! Yes! Your poor disconsolate mother cannot forget you."

The duke arose, and weeping, looking at his sister he raised his right hand and said: "I swear in the name of the God of Heaven and of *Humanity*, that I am going to take the Human Oath; and I shall organize a company of members of the Civilized Human Society, which shall be called: 'The Valorous Humans.' And in three months, from the most bulky and voluminous to the very smallest of all weapons and infernal engines of destruction, which may be

found contained within the city of Rosisma, must be destroyed. Such companies shall have to be organized in every place, from the smallest village to the largest city in our entire globe, and when they shall have been all destroyed your son and all those who have been assassinated by the infamous arms shall be vindicated. Among the Humans we do not wish to have any infernal engines of destruction."

The doctor telephoned immediately to the office of an undertaker to bring all things necessary for embalming the little corpse.

The duke seeing the weapons which were still in the room and turning towards the two men wearing the Human emblem, said to them: "Do me the favor to go and call a mechanic to come and destroy these infernal weapons."

One of the two, who was Arcadio, one of the valiant mechanics answered: "I know how to destroy arms, but I cannot make them."

The duke on hearing this Human answer said: "Bravo! Well and good, you are the first member of the company of the Valorous Humans. Take these arms, carry them away, show to the Humans how infernal weapons are being destroyed."

Near Arcadio there was a boy, he took a key out of his pocket and said to the boy: "Cramenti, take this key and run and take the little chest with iron ware (hardware) and come back quickly."

The duke, turning to the doctor, said to him: "Do me the favor of driving to the Royal Palace and tell the King that neither my brother-in-law nor I can attend the festivities."

As the doctor was leaving, the sisters of the Civilized Human Society all wearing the Human emblem, entered the room.

As the baroness noticed that the sisters of the Civilized Human Society were there, she uttered a very loud cry: "Sisters, how unfortunate I am.

Ah! Would to God that the Human Movement had been started a hundred years ago. I should not now have lost the joy of my heart."

The sisters of the Civilized Human Society commenced to weep, and one of them exclaimed in her tears: "Your wound is but small in comparison to mine. My son was killed in the Croin war."

They came near the little Clainto and when they saw him in his costume of captain of marine, one of them said: "Sister, little as he was, you had marked him out to be killed by the accursed arms."

The baroness answered, weeping: "His father had the mania to see him wear a military habit."

The sisters of the Civilized Human Society asked her then: "Where is the Human habit?"

The baroness turning to the left said: "Here in this wardrobe."

Two of the sisters went to take the little bed of Clainto and carried it into the room, and the others took him up tenderly and arranged him on it and commenced to undress him and to put on his Human habit.

At the same time there entered four members of the company of embalmers carrying all preparations necessary, and in five minutes the couch was ready. The sisters of the Civilized Human Society had finished dressing little Clainto, and the four members of the company of embalmers took him and put him into the uncovered little mortuary urn.

Two sisters took the baroness by the arm and holding her up they carried her to the left side making her sit down near the urn. The doctor had recommended the duke not to awake his brother-in-law, but let him awake of himself. The sisters of the Civilized Human Society placed themselves kneeling on the right and on the left. The baroness arose and kissing her dear little only son, commenced again to weep.

The baron awoke from his fainting and sitting down on the very floor set to look around, and towards where his little son Clainto had fallen dead and in an undertone, he said: "Assassins! They come to discuss Human affairs and they come armed, worse than brigands. Where are the arms?"

(The duke as soon as he saw his brother-in-law awake, came near him and taking him by the arm he supported him).

Duke: "What do you want to do with them?"

The Baron: "I am guilty of homicide, and I want to take the law in my own hands and administer punishment to myself. Give me the same revolver with which my little only son has been assassinated and I shall send my brains through the air; thus we shall be buried together."

Duke: "You are not guilty, but it is the arms, and they have already had punishment."

Baron: "How is that, I am not guilty, but the weapons are?"

Duke: "Yes."

The baron commenced to laugh, and after a moment seeing the bed of state where his son was lying surrounded in front by lighted candles, and his wife who with a white handkerchief was wiping the sweat of death from his little Clainto's face, and the sisters of the Civilized Human Society wiping their tears away, and nobody uttering a word. He suddenly got a nervous attack, stretching out his arms with a sudden nervous force which threw the duke at a distance and himself he fell again in full length on the ground and shouted: "I am the guilty one; I did not want to listen to the Human advice of my wife!"

He put both hands to his throat and with all his might he sought to strangle himself.

The duke kneeling down near him took hold of his hands and with all the strength he could com-

mand he succeeded in getting them loose from his throat and said to him: "Calm yourself; you are not guilty at all."

And calling a member of the Civilized Human Society, both of them took the baron by the arms, and brought him to a seat in front of the bed of state.

The news of the accident and misfortune was soon known at the Human Council. Tremio told to Orrento that the mother of the dead child was a member of the Civilized Human Society.

Orrento answered him: "Have immediately the order passed around among all the members that all boys of eight years of age up to ten years should come here."

The King, after having received the delegation of the representatives of all nations, in the grand reception hall, led them into the dining hall and did the same to all the members of the reception committee.

When the breakfast banquet was ended, the King led them all to the hall of the Council, where he was to direct them in the mission for which they had been sent by their respective nations.

When the King and the delegation of representatives of all nations, and the members of the reception committee had arrived at the hall of the Council, he went to sit down in his place and when he saw that all had gotten to their respective seats, he arose and said:

"Honorable representatives of all nations:—Your interview with Orrento will be one of the most interesting missions, and one the like of which has not yet taken place from the beginning of the history of our Human Society, till our present day.

"We know very well, that when our Human race had its origin, there were only a very few members, but with time it was destined to cover the whole

globe, in order to make of it a veritable paradise of delights.

“When our Human Society commenced to develop, its members commenced to live in groups which again counted but few members each. And when the members of each group commenced to increase they were called a tribe.

“The tribes little by little became jealous of one another, because one could perhaps live in better conditions than another, or had a better territorial position, having taken possession of lands more fertile than others.

“Jealousy degenerated into war, between one tribe and another, and the one which came out victorious, either by strength of arms or by treason, compelled the losing one to give over to them a great part of the wealth of whatever kind this might be, which they had produced with great pains.

“The tribes in order to protect themselves the ones from the others, commenced to form federations or unions; and to several tribes thus confederated or united was given the name of government or nation.

“The nations executed the same evolutions as the tribes. There have been great and large ones which have disappeared entirely, or on some account or other have dwindled down to such an extent and have become too small; and from very small ones have grown very large ones, which in our days we still see owing their increase and greatness to successful wars.

“But think of it, Illustrious Representatives of all nations, the time of wars of one government or nation against the other is passed, because the members of the Human Society have full conscience of the fact that all the nations of our globe are confederated and that which is now developing out of this is the great and destructive social revolution.

“The father is at parliament, while the son is organizing a destructive revolutionary group. A brother is a general in the army of his country, and another brother is preparing to lead the great destructive social revolution. The parents are in favor of the present organization because their intellects are paralyzed by false religions, while the sons think them stupid and imbecile for believing in all the superstitions introduced in Human Society.

“The sacred ministers educate the people not to blaspheme, not to rob, not to perjure one’s neighbor, not to commit any immoral act, not to kill; but they blaspheme, rob, lie to their neighbor, commit immoral acts and kill.

“So, then, honorable members, representatives of all nations, yourselves already know it that the present system is like unto a bark broken and leaking, beaten by all the fury of the waves, and if we try to set it right we can do nothing else but repair it a little for a time, but we will always be obliged to do the same thing anew.

“It was impossible for the Human Movement to be accepted by all the members who wished to maintain the present system, because the latter wished to show the people that they were human, but succeeded only in acting as tyrants, and consequently they could not be accredited as members in good standing. I shall see as well as you, though I am already sure of it, that the Human Movement does not harm any class or race.”

As the King ceased to speak, Doctor Galento, a member of the Civilized Human Society, and wearing the Human emblem entered the Council hall and taking off his hat, bending low his head, greeted every one.

The King went to meet him and shook hands with him and asked him: “How is it that you are here? Have you anything to tell me?”

Doctor: "I came to tell you that Baron Prascurio and Duke Galanfroni cannot attend these exercises, because a terrible and sad misfortune has befallen the family."

King: "What misfortune has happened to them?"

Doctor: "Little Clainto has killed himself with his own hands."

King: "What do you say?"

Doctor: "The truth."

King: "And do you know how it happened?"

Doctor: "No, but I took a newspaper along; which will tell the whole story."

He had it rolled in his left hand and presented it to the King, saying: "Your Majesty may read."

The King took the newspaper, and looking at the first page commenced to read to himself. When suddenly the newspaper fell from his hands, he became as pale as death, and he said in an undertone: "I am guilty of manslaughter; if I had not given him that charge, his little Clainto would not have suffered this terrible death."

He stopped a moment speaking, and uttering a very loud cry, he exclaimed: "What will Baron Prascurio say? What will his wife say? What will their parents and all their relatives say? That through fault of mine little Clainto is dead. I am the guilty one."

The doctor taking the King by the hands, said to him: "Your Majesty, calm yourself, no one of the Humans is guilty; none but the infernal arms are so. Rather cause to spring forth from your heart the Human hatred against the accursed weapons, and you will see how such misfortunes shall disappear from among the Civilized Humans. Show your courage as a Human member, do not fear any one; become a member of the Civilized Human Society; you will be better loved, and on seeing yourself decorat-

ed with the Human emblem you will be better satisfied with yourself than with having your breast all covered with medals."

King: "But how can I disentangle myself from my present position?"

Doctor: "How have you done to become entangled and enchained, in the same way loosen yourself."

King: "They have made me swear in presence of the whole parliament that I must cause the laws to be respected."

Doctor: "Well, when you take the Human Oath, you do nothing else than observe your Human duties, and obeying your Human conscience. You will rest better than by having people observe the inhuman laws instead of those which produce abundance, and thereby keeping them in a life of misery and wretchedness. Detach yourself from all inhuman bad thoughts, and show that you are one of the first rulers to embrace the Human Doctrine."

The King went near the table, took a sheet of paper and commenced to write, and after a moment he read as follows:

"In presence of the representatives of all nations, and of the citizens of Rosisma here assembled, I renounce to all the rights I have assumed, and which keep me chained as head and chief of the Antolia nation. I abdicate in favor of Creppo, head of the Elephantine religion, and who is recognized and acknowledged by the stupid ones as the second Superior God.

EVOLI GALLONETTI."

When he was through reading he folded this sheet, quickly put it in an envelope, sealed it, and wrote on it: "Creppo."

He came near the doctor, shook hands with him, and looking at him, said: "I have loosened myself

from the infernal chain and I beg you to give it to understand to Creppo."

The doctor took the letter or fold, containing the declaration of the King's abdication, and bending his head before King Gallonetti, and greeting all present, he departed.

The King, turning toward all the representatives of the nations and the members of the reception committee, said to them: "Before going to the hall of the Human Council, it is our duty to betake ourselves to the residence of Baron Prascurio and to express our displeasure at and our sympathy for the death of his little son Clainto."

They all arose, and the King putting himself at the head walked on, the others following him in two lines.

The hall of the Human Council was full of boys of from eight to ten years of age, and Orrento was busy teaching them a little song, entitled:

"ALL WEAPONS MUST BE DESTROYED."

Accursed be the arms of all kind,
Used by degenerate, ignorant mankind
Killing every one be he great or small,
Bringing moans, tears, and fear to all.

"If we wish to live gently and coyed,
All weapons must be destroyed.

Arms have been always the ruin of mankind,
Exciting anger and passions of all kind;
Let human hearts raise up the cry and call,
Human hatred against weapons large and small.

So then together shout, our voices buoyed,
All weapons must be destroyed!

When all the boys had learned this little song well by heart, Orrento and Tremio and some other members of the Civilized Human Society put on them the temporary Human emblem. When the white coccard was waving from the breast of every boy they went out merrily.

The persons who were passing coming from the Scialbina street, when they arrived in front of the hall of the Human Council, stopped, on seeing such a large number of boys, with their breasts decorated with the Human symbol.

Orrento had prepared a small banner on the model of the larger Human banner; he went to take it, and going out together with the others he gave it to one of the boys, leading him to the middle of the street. Tremio and the others commenced ordering and organizing the boys in four lines, two on the right and two on the left of the street.

Orrento said to the one carrying the little flag of *Humanity*, that while he was walking (marching) he was always to be ahead of the procession, and to those who were of the first ones behind the flag to always keep about six paces back of the flag. And taking another boy, he placed him in the center, in front, and told him: "When you raise your right hand all the other boys must commence to sing." Then he went to give the warning to all the other boys, to pay attention to the boy in front.

Orrento went back to the head of the cortege, and went to tell the boy that was carrying the little Human banner, that he was to march ahead and stop only in front of Baron Prascurio's residence, number thirty-nine Volen street.

The boy in the center, at the head of the demonstration against arms, raised his right hand, and all the others answered by entoning the song and setting on the march.

When all the boys had passed by from before the hall of the Human Council, Orrento turning to all the other spectators, said to them: "This is the way to educate boys in becoming Human and Civilized not in playing soldiers or by making soldiers of them, teaching them to fight sham battles."

Tremio said to Orrento: "I would like to go also and see the little Clainto."

Orrento: "Go ahead. I shall remain here in the hall of the Human Council, because I do not know at what time the delegation will be here."

Tremio walked fast in order to notice the effect the demonstration of the little boys was making.

When the abdicated king with the delegation of the representatives of all nations, and the members of the reception committee, arrived in Volen street, they saw that in front of Baron Prascurio's residence there was a great crowd of people, and the King felt a Human compassion take hold of his heart at the thought that he had rendered a whole family unhappy. As they arrived they saw that the crowd was looking attentively towards the middle and the shout arose:

"Go at it strong! Cut it to pieces!"

The abdicated king and the others, imagined that there was question of some fight, and having shouldered their way through the crowd, they saw that it was Arcadio, who on a little anvil was busily engaged rendering the weapons useless and out of service, which, by the way, were the property of and belonged to the delegation of representatives of all nations.

Arcadio knew the abdicated king, and said to him: "Your Majesty, this is a fearful example of the present inhuman system, that all the rulers of our globe, are given the faculty to manufacture arms, which are used to assassinate persons of all classes,

and punish members of the Human Society. If he who assassinated your father had been unable to find arms, he would not have been able to commit the crime. In the same way if Baron Praseurio had not been carrying the arms in his house, little Clainto would not have been assassinated by his own hands."

Baron Praseurio for half an hour since, was sitting on the chair immovable and impassible; he seemed to be sleeping. The duke with the members of the Civilized Human Society were still holding him up, and did not dare to abandon him for fear he might have another nervous fit of violence. They must have been somewhat relax, however, for of a sudden he arose, and threw himself on the floor, shouting very loudly:

"Clainto, do you not come to embrace and kiss your dear papa any more? Why do you not come? What have I done to you? (And with a louder voice still). I have brought you weapons home, and without your will, by my fault you have killed yourself. They are right, the Human propagandists, to say that until we do not all take the Human Oath, and embrace the Human Doctrine, we shall not be civilized. They are right the members of the Human Committee to say that all those who carry arms with the intent of wounding or killing the members of the Human Society, lose their title of Human beings. They are right to wish and demand that all the infernal arms be destroyed."

While the baron was thus raving in his delirium, the abdicated king entered the room, and seeing everything changed and thus reduced to a miserable and wretched condition to cause pity, pointing with his left hand and extending his right hand towards the delegation of the representatives of all nations, and the members of the reception committee, he said to them: "Behold, to what a condition the in-

famous and infernal arms have reduced this family, the arms which you were carrying have brought sorrow and desolation in the home of the most illustrious man in the Business Council of Rosisma."

Scarcely had the abdicated king ceased speaking, when the demonstration of the boys arrived in front of Baron Prascurio's residence, singing: "All weapons must be destroyed."

Duke Galanfroni approached the balcony and when the boys stopped singing he shouted to them: "Do not doubt it; the destruction of arms is easier than their construction and manufacture. All the arms that have been manufactured in thousands of years, we are able to destroy in a few months."

The boys on hearing these words, shouted: "Hurrah for the Modern Human Civilization and Universal Peace!"

Doctor Galento, when he arrived in the Aldochina street, saw a man walking in front of the door of Creppo's palace. He came near him, and saw that it was Onetto, the secret religious spy, and he said to him: "Do you know whether Creppo is within?"

Onetto: "It seems to me that you members of the Civilized Human Society have only a good name but no good deeds."

Doctor: "How is that?"

Onetto: "Why, when a man by divine virtue and power has been raised to occupy the position of second Superior God, he is called His Holiness, and his first name is abolished."

Doctor: "I cannot call him Holiness, if he cannot do anything for the good of *Humanity*. When last month, being sick, he sent for a physician to cure him, why did he do that?"

Onetto: "Of course, the sick can only be cured first by God and then by the doctors."



Crime of the Arms and Weapons.

Doctor: "Consequently, according to what you say, I have more right to be called second Superior God than Creppo has. Well, let that be! I have only been asking you if Creppo was in?"

Onetto: "He is in. But he does not wish to have anything to do with the members of the Civilized Human Society."

Doctor: "Neither we with him." And taking the sealed envelope containing the King's abdication, he said to him: "Take this to him, perhaps there may be something good for you in it."

Onetto took the letter and without greeting him, he went away. Arriving at the secret (private) office, he rang the bell.

Creppo as soon as he heard the ring at the bell, went to the door, asking: "Who is there?"

Onetto answered: "Your secret spy."

Creppo opened the door, and Onetto handed the letter to him. As soon as Creppo had the letter in his hands, he turned towards Onetto and asked him: "Who gave it to you?"

Onetto: "Doctor Galento, and he told me that there is something for me in it."

Creppo opened the envelope and withdrawing the sheet, he commenced to read to himself. When he had finished reading he turned towards Onetto, and said to him: "Well, have you good courage?"

Onetto: "Very much so."

Creppo: "Can you keep a secret which is, however, most interesting?"

Onetto: "I cannot, because if I could, I would not be good for a spy."

Creppo: "Consequently I cannot give you a very high position, but I promote you to the grade of captain, in the assailing batallion."

Onetto: "Thank you, Your Holiness, for your kindness towards me."

Creppo went near his writing table, and sat down to write on a sheet of paper. When through writing, he folded the sheet, put it in an envelope and wrote on it: "To be delivered in the hands of the General Commander of the Zella fortress."

And turning towards Onetto, he said to him: "I recommend you to do honor to yourself, and to fulfill and observe all rules and regulations; in the future, I shall be able in justice to promote you to higher grades."

And giving him the letter, he said to him: "Pay attention that in case they should let you enter the fortress, all you have to do is to show your medalion with the image of the Superior God."

Onetto took the letter and bowing down, kissed the hand of Creppo and left.

The head of the band of the members of the Civilized Human Society happened to pass in front of the office of the embalming company, and saw the white mortuary wagon (*hearse) ready to start for the mortuary house, and he asked the coachman: "Who is dead?"

The coachman answered: "Baron Prascurio's son."

Immediately, on hearing these words, the chief thought that Baroness Prascurio Ugolani was a member of the Civilized Human Society. He hastened to the Concert Hall and informed by every means possible all the members of the band.

Baron Prascurio had calmed down a little, and arising, he went to sit down on the right side of the bed of state where little Clainto was lying, and every once in a while he was kissing the little corpse and bathing it with tears.

*White hearses are used by all Civilized members of the Human Society.

Tremio with a Human emblem on his chest, and a white scarf across his body, arrived at the door, and bending down his head sorrowfully he entered the room, and stopping in the center, with his face turned towards Clainto, he said, with a Human and very doleful voice:

“Accursed weapons,
Infernal engines,
You do nothing else
Than cause tears to Humans.

“But near is the time
When the Humans all,
The Human Oath ’ll take
Down will weapons fall!”

When Tremio was through speaking the band of the Civilized members of the Human Society arrived in front of Baron Prascurio’s residence, and he found the hearse ready. The leader of the band gave the signal and they commenced to play a funeral march.

Five boys of the demonstration against arms, one of them carrying the white flag, went upstairs, and very solemnly entered the room, and the one after the other they went to kiss little Clainto.

The baroness on witnessing the Human act of the boys, arose and weeping, and kissing her little Clainto, she said: “Son, your brothers are here to look at you for the last time and to accompany you to your last dwelling place, the cemetery.”

All the people who were inside the hall came near to the little Clainto, and the one after the other they kissed him, and went to place themselves in a line, one part on the left and the other on the right, leaving a wide passage in the middle.

The four boys taking hold of the casket containing the remains of Clainto, and seizing the handles of it, commenced walking slowly between the two lines of people, went out of the second room, and passing through the first room, they went down the stairs.

The baron and the baroness, as soon as the four boys had commenced marching, followed them, and all the other friends and acquaintances followed in two lines behind these.

Near the hearse there were two members of the embalming company, and when the boys arrived near them, they took hold of the casket and placed it inside the hearse.

The family tomb of the Prascorios was in the Cemetery "Riposeternum," at a short distance of the city.

Tremio quickly placed himself at the head of the boys and made them commence to march and as soon as the music band ceased playing the funeral march the boys commenced to sing: "All weapons must be destroyed."

After the boys came the hearse, and then the carriages with the parents and all the relatives of little Clainto, and after these the members of the Civilized Human Society, and following these an immense crowd of the population of the city.

Creppo had remained alone in his private office and was saying to himself: "Truly, the Human Movement is for the good of the entire Human Society, but in order to convert the ignorant to the Human Doctrine there is still need of arms, until the Human propagandists believe themselves conquered. King Gallonetti has gotten as far as to take the Human Oath without my leave; I shall punish him severely for this breach of manners.

A long time ago already Creppo had sent a circular to all the sacred ministers of the Elephantine

religion, urging them to organize religious circles. He sat himself down near his writing table, took a sheet of paper and commenced to write as follows: "Appeal to the Religious Circles. Faithful of our Holy Elephantine Religion, by the inspiration of our Superior God, I announce to you that our Holy Religion may be fought against, but never shall be conquered."

"I will soon issue bulls of excommunication to all those who have renounced (or abjured) our holy religion; and to you I shall send the arms, for I am sure that not only will you defend our holy faith with all your hearts, but also very willingly with your very lives.

The Humans who call themselves members of the Civilized Human Society are only a branch or sect of infidels.

"The uprising of the present Human Movement, obliges me to invest with my divine authority all the sacred ministers in order that the excommunication may have a greater effect in harming all the members of all the Civilized Human Societies of our globe and must be proclaimed from every church in communion with our Holy Elephantine Religion.

"The day on which the excommunications shall be proclaimed and take effect is fixed on the twenty-fifth of March at two o'clock in the afternoon, and to all the members of the religious circles, who shall be present at the proclamation of the same in the churches, there shall be granted ninety days and six hours of plenary indulgence, and at the hour of their death, they shall be liberated from the pains of purgatory and shall ascend directly into Heaven.

CREPPO, *Second Superior God.*"

As soon as Creppo had finished writing this sheet, he took another one and commenced to write as follows:

“Mr. Editor of the Organ of the Religious Propaganda:

“On receipt of the present, you will immediately have printed fifty thousand copies of the appeals to the religious circles, and as soon as possible, you will have them mailed and reached the hands of all the sacred ministers of our Holy Elephantine Religion.

CREPPO, *Second Superior God.*”

He took an envelope, folded both sheets of paper, and inserted them within that envelope and sealed it. He arose, went to the door and rang the bell.

After about five minutes, he heard somebody come, and from behind the door Creppo asked: “Who are you?”

The person coming answered: “I am Avolino, the second chamberlain of Your Holiness.”

Creppo opened the door and said to him: “Do you know where is the office of our religious newspaper?”

Avolino: “Yes, Your Holiness.”

Creppo: “Very well. You must take this letter to the editor.”

Avolino took the letter and bending low he wished to kiss Creppo’s right hand.

Creppo (withdrawing his hand): “Wait, I want to tell you something else.”

Avolino: “Speak, Your Holiness.”

Creppo: “After you shall have given the letter to the editor you shall go to number 741 Leria street, and there you shall find the chief of the religious armies, you shall tell him that I wish to speak to him immediately.”

Avolino: “Anything else to tell me?”

Creppo: “No.”

Avolino took his hand, kissed it and left.

DOLOROUS EVENT AT THE REPOSETERNUM CEMETERY.

The hearse containing the remains of little Clainto, with all those who accompanied it, arrived at the Reposeternum cemetery.

The two members of the embalmers company, took the little casket containing the mortal remains of little Clainto out of the hearse and carried it in front of the tomb.

All those present formed a large circle. Baron and Baroness Prascurio and Duke Galanfroni knelt down near the casket, and all the relatives of the Prascurio family knelt behind them.

All remained very silent expecting some one to speak to comfort the hearts of the afflicted parents.

The tomb of the Prascurio family was in the form of a chapel, all built in marble. In front of the internal part there was a bust representing a man of middle age with long side-whiskers, and dressed in the uniform of a general.

In front of the pedestal on which the bust was reposing, there was a stone engraved with the following inscription:

“Umbilio Prascurio, a man of very high intelligence, and very valorous. He was commander in several wars, and always distinguished himself by gaining the victory. Finally in the Sorriana war he was wounded by the treacherous act of an enemy, and after two days of suffering, gave up his last breath, among the tears of all his officers, in his own tent, thus consecrating his life to God and his country.”

The tomb was closed with an iron grate.

On top of the tomb there was an angel of marble, in the form of a man in the bloom of youth, looking down on the ground in front of the grate and pointing with his left hand as if in the act of stop-

ping **any demons** that would dare to come out of the abyss. In his right hand he held a sword.

Tremio, stepping forward and extending his right hand towards the remains of little Clainto and in an exclamatory tone cried out:

“Clainto! Clainto! Clainto! Why do you not answer me? Why do you not bid a last farewell to your disconsolate parents?”

“Last night I saw you at the hall of the Human Council, cheerful and smiling in company with your dear mother. This evening the infamous arms have led you to the tomb!”

And looking towards the angel with the sword, he said:

“What do you mean with your sword? Answer me, what do you intend to do with the infernal weapon in your right hand?”

“Oh! What inhuman ideals have come out of the human intellects! Some one has made a description as of having seen the true God of Heaven with a fiery sword in his mouth of fire. Another that Saint Michael, the archangel, chased the rebellious angels from paradise with a sword and cast them into the abyss.

“Well, what good have they done in introducing in our Human Society those inhuman ideals?”

“Every member of our Human Society who is seen to take up a sword or any other kind of a weapon, and have it hang at his side, feels himself swelled with pride, and believes himself a God, and he abuses his neighbors. Those who are or feel themselves abused arm themselves also and our Society instead of being Human, has become a society of assassins. The arms do not defend the Humans, but the assassins; the arms do not produce anything, but they consume a great deal; the arms do not bring order, but disorder among the Humans; the arms do not show

that the Humans are civilized, but that they are without civilization at all."

And turning towards the parents of little Clainto and the other relatives, he said: "Oh! You members of the Prascurio family, what benefit have been arms to you? Yourself, you know it best, that two-thirds of your relatives, buried in this tomb, have died assassinated some way or other by the infamous arms and yet you keep on top of this same and very tomb an inhuman and armed symbol, expecting all the time other victims."

While Tremio was talking all those present were weeping.

Duke Galanfroni arose and climbed up the tomb and addressing the angel on top of it, he said: "In the name of *Humanity*, give me that sword!"

The angel, of course, did not answer.

The duke for the second time said: "In the name of *Humanity* give me that sword!"

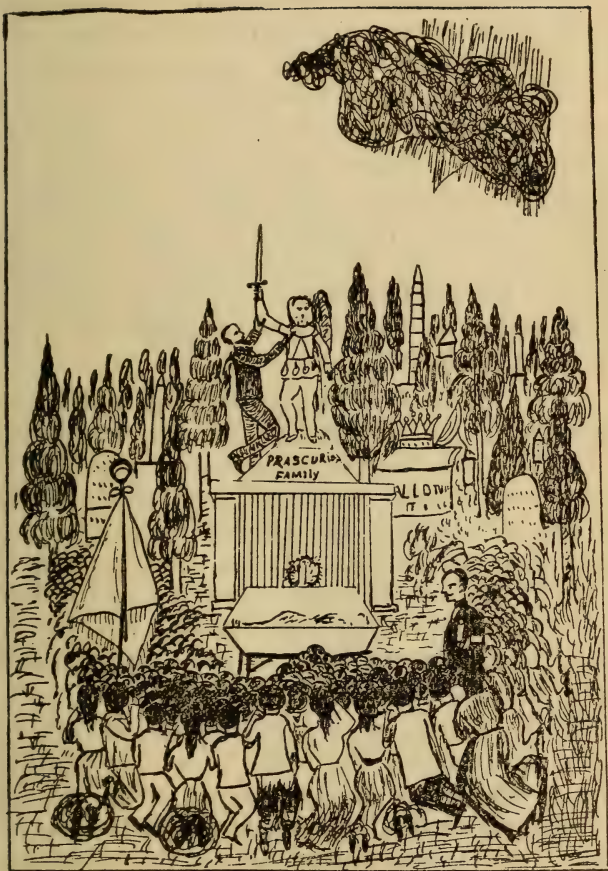
As it was to be expected the angel made himself deaf.

The duke for the third time shouted to the angel, saying: "Oh! Inhuman wretch, either you shall give me that sword that I may destroy it, or I shall be compelled to act not in order to harm you but to save your honor.

"For the sake of the Civilized Humans, I would not like that in future times it should be said that the angels are nothing but assassins, while you are reputed to be more elevated and higher in the scale of creation than the members composing the Human Society."

The angel now understood the Human ideal, and opening his hand, he let fall the sword.

All those who were looking on this scene, so grand and imposing between Duke Galanfroni and the angel, when they saw the latter let fall the sword



Dolorous event at the Riposeternum Cemetery.

all shouted: "Hurrah for the Modern Human Civilization!"

The duke took the sword, reduced it to pieces, and turning towards all, he said: "The Universal Human disarmament, which shall be accompanied with the destruction of all arms and weapons, shall not exempt the statues, which characterize their warlike origin in the highest degree."

As the duke was returning to the place he had occupied before, Tremio pointing at the angel, with his right hand, said: "The ideal of this angel has changed, with his right hand he points towards heaven, and shows that that is only for God and the angels, or for the Divine Society, while with his left hand he points to the earth, showing that this is for the Human Society.

"The Human Society has nothing to do, has no business with the Divine Society, for we members who compose the former, we have no wings, and all that we need comes to us as the product of labor; while the members of the Divine Society, they live by and through divinity. It has gotten to be time that the Human should cease speaking of the Divine Society, for the Human Society has not yet been able to find any means to correspond with the Divine Society, nor the latter with the former."

All those who were kneeling stood up, and Tremio approaching the casket, said: "Farewell, Clainto! The scene of your taking away will serve as an example to the Humans, and will develop more and more the Human hatred against the odious arms. Farewell! Adieu!"

The two members of the embalming company opened the grate of the tomb, and taking hold of the casket, they entered the tomb.

Duke Galanfroni shouted: "Now, all go to the hall of the Human Council."

It was now one o'clock in the afternoon, and the whole crowd that had accompanied little Clainto to his last resting place, arrived in front of the hall of the Human Council, with the band of the members of the Civilized Human Society, who was playing the Human Hymn.

The doors of the hall of the Human Council were opened and Orrento on hearing the Human Hymn went to see if it was the band alone or whether it was bringing the delegation of the representatives of all nations. When he arrived at the door and saw Tremio supporting the arm of Baroness Prascurio and the King in the dress of a Human citizen supporting the Baron, he came near them and showing his discontent and his disgust of the great misfortune caused by those odious arms in the sad taking away of little Clainto, he tried to comfort them in the best way possible with Human words. After having shaken hands with him Tremio led them to a seat, and Orrento placing himself at the right side of the entrance door commenced receiving all those who were entering.

When the hall of the Human Council was packed full of people, Orrento went to take his seat near the little table. On the left side all the reporters of the several journals and newspapers of all parties took their seats, with the exception of the religious organs of which there were no representatives present.

As soon as Orrento saw that everybody had found a place and was seated, he arose and said:

"In the name of *Humanity*, I declare the Human debates opened. Each and every one has the right to ask me any question, and I must answer it, and show to you, how and why the Human Movement does not harm any class or race, but leads the entire Human Society to be governed by Order and

the Purest Civilization, or to the highest pinnacle of Modern Human Civilization.

The member of the delegation representing the great nation of Rumpica arose, and turning towards Orrento, said: "Answer me to the questions I am going to ask you."

"Tell me in what way or how you can improve the conditions of all the rulers, with their families, and all the other members forming the class composing the aristocracy? They cannot do any kind of work, and stand in hopes only of slavery. They are unskilled in taking a brush and brushing and cleaning even their own clothes or shining their shoes, and even when they wish to take a bath they have to be attended by others."

Orrento: "If the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, does not furnish such commodities to all the members of the entire Human Society as are necessary to all, then it would not have any right to bear the name it does, and then we could not reach the highest point of Human Civilization.

"And certainly when the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established, he who works at the tailor's trade cannot go to work at the shoemaker's trade, and such a Human ideal developing itself, the members of our Human Society, we could not expect that all the rulers and the members composing the aristocratic class should go to work and attend to work and labors of production, for they do not know anything about the same; they do not understand them at all. But they are certainly possessed of other virtues.

"The Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, shall establish other offices, which are very necessary; which will keep

accounts of the produce and products, and as all the members of the ruling class and all the other members of the aristocratic class, are all very well educated in accounts as well as in literature, they certainly will have charge of the duties of attending to such offices, and their work shall not amount to so much as what they have to do now.

“Our Human organization becoming perfected, all attending to the labor and the duties imposed upon them and necessary to all, the whole Human Society shall be furnished with all kinds of service and in a better state of perfectability than the ruling class and the members of the aristocracy have it now.

“In every modern palace there shall be on the first floor a department of industries, the different branches being separated the one from the other, as for instance, polishing shoes, cleaning and repairing clothes, tailors, baths, barbers, magazines or stores for the distribution of the articles of food, perfected kitchen, place to deposit and keep automobiles (garage) and all other things necessary. The members of the Human Society by means of the perfectionment of our Human organization, will be able to live in wealth and abundance, in such a way that every one shall be satisfied, in better conditions than at present, and this will be the case above all for the rulers and the members of the aristocratic class.

“Every member shall be furnished or provided with seven suits of clothes, seven pairs of shoes, seven hats, and also in the same way with all the other articles necessary for the covering of the body and other necessities so that you may be sure that each and every one shall be as well provided as any king of the present time.

“Hence from this departure may be seen and understood what perfectionment of the Human organization means. Each suit of clothes shall have

its own little box with numbers from one to seven, and the name of the person to whom they belong. The same for the shoes and hats, etc. One or two from the department for the polishing of shoes, shall go through the palace on a tour of inspection and they will always know what shoes to take that have been used the day before. The next day they take back to their respective places the cleaned shoes, and again take away those used the day before; thus their only work shall be, to furnish clean shoes, polished or shined, to all those who inhabit the modern palaces.

“In the same way those of the clothes department and of the hats department, etc., shall operate. Such organizations shall be very economical, because by maintaining the shoes always clean, they will wear longer, the clothes and all the other objects of wearing apparel by being kept clean and in repair will last much longer.

“At the baths, there shall also be the persons who shall have the attendance of every detail in charge. A man for the men, a woman for the ladies. And this work besides being wholesome, shall also be economical, for in maintaining our skin clean, there will be less work and efforts required in washing the linen.”

The representative of Dalcone, arose and said:

“All the different rulers live in their royal palaces, and hundreds of magnificent rooms are at the disposal of every royal family. It seems to me impossible that the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization should be able to insure them or to provide them with better conditions of existence.”

Orrento: “The Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall furnish to every member of the Human Society more

royal palaces than any ruler now possesses. Because all the palaces shall be royal. The country lands shall be divided into squares of two miles on each side, and in the center of every square there shall be built a royal palace. Every front of each royal palace in each country land, shall have a street, wide enough for carriages and all kinds of vehicles as well as for foot travelers. These streets shall be bordered with trees on both sides; fruit bearing trees being preferred; and thus from one royal palace to the other there shall be a distance of two miles, and the streets shall be equipped with electric cars. All the members of the Human Society, who shall wish to take a vacation or a trip shall be made participants of all the royal palaces and of all the natural and artificial wealth they contain."

The members of the delegation representing all the nations, and all those who were inside of the hall of the Human Council, were listening attentively while Orrento was talking, and when he ceased speaking, they all shouted: "Hurrah for the grand Human phenomenon!"

Orrento: "It is not I who is giving you such an illustration but it is the development of the Human Doctrine, on which the Human Movement is based."

The member who represented the Animecca nation, arose and asked: "How many years will it take to accomplish all that work?"

Orrento: "In ten years everything shall be transformed and our Human Society shall have reached the highest civilization."

Carnesio, member of the group "The Brothers of the Oppressed," arose and shouted to Orrento, asking: "And how many hours shall we have to attend to the necessary daily labor?"

Orrento: "From the rising of the sun till noon, and the double shall be produced from that which is produced now."

Another member who represented the Premia nation, arose and asked: "Shall there be any amusements and recreations, when the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established?"

Orrento: "Our globe shall be transformed in a paradise of delights. Every six thousand members of our Human Society shall have a theatre, where there shall be performances on Human morals to maintain and preserve us within the bonds of the highest Human Civilization, and a music band shall display a fine program of music every afternoon and other means of diversion shall be spontaneously organized."

A man whose exterior appearance showed him to be a mechanic, asked: "What benefit shall inventors get, when the Universal Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established?"

Orrento: "More than they have ever received under the present system. He who shall invent anything that shall tend to the increase of our production with less work, or anything useful to Human progress shall be exempted from taking part or doing his share of the necessary work; he shall have free passage to go anywhere he wishes and the whole federation of industry of which he shall be a member, shall every year, on the anniversary of his presenting the invention, give a feast in his honor. At his death, a monument shall be erected on his grave and his name shall be recorded to be kept in eternal remembrance in Human history."

A young man arose and asked: "What shall be the daily compensation for those who shall attend to the necessary labor?"

Orrento: "Enough clothes to dress with, food in abundance and of the very best quality, a regular supply of things to drink, and houses with excellent conveniences and with the latest improvements. They will always be satisfied because they will always have plenty of recreation."

King Gallonetti now arose and said: "I am convinced that the Human Movement shall not work any harm against any class or race; and all the representatives of the nations ought to aid to the propagation of this Human Movement and Doctrine, they ought to enlist in the Human propaganda in order that we may soon see the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization established."

A little old man representing the Sporia nation, arose and asked: "Tell me in what way all the rulers shall be benefited, when all the other members of the Human Society shall eat the same fare as they? The dining halls which all the rulers have are stupendous in luxury and the food is of the very first quality; the wines and the champagne which they drink are the best to be found, and the fruit they eat at the end of their banquets are of the most excellent qualities that the entire globe produces; and their servants seem angels serving gods."

Orrento: "When the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established, and our Human organization perfected, there shall not be any food of second and third quality or lower, and adulterated like at the present time, but there shall be food of the very first and of the purest quality, the same with the drinks and the fruit. The Human Agricultural Commission or Committee shall watch to the perfecting of agriculture, and where the soil produces excellent wine it shall not be used for the sowing of grain, but

planted with grape-vines, and thus it shall be done for every other kind of product in order that all what the soil produces be always of the very first quality.

“Concerning the dining halls, I am sure that the architects will all vie with each other in designing the finest plans, for each and every one of them will be anxious to have the honor of seeing his name occupy a page in the modern Human history; and they shall be better built because they themselves will be participants in the use of them, knowing that they may be used by all the members of our Human Society.

“The perfected kitchens will be next to the dining halls, and divided into departments, that is to say, that where they are making soup, they shall not be preparing fish. The cooks shall come out of schools and the one who shall have learned how to prepare greens and vegetables shall not have to learn how to prepare fish. The servants shall not be angels, but members of the Civilized Human Society; and everything shall show that the Humans have reached the highest degree of civilization.”

A lady arose and asked: “How will the ladies be treated when the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established?”

Orrento: “If the Human organization of men shall be sufficient to provide to the needs of our Human Society, all the women shall attend to the household duties, moreover every modern palace shall organize a feminine industry to provide to their own needs and of their own sex.

“But the Human Doctrine exempts from their share in the work of the Human organization all the mothers of family, because they must attend to the raising of their children.”

Some one arose and asked: "Suppose that one who has a family does not wish to go to eat in the dining hall, because the children make too much noise, can one eat at home?"

Orrento: "Of course, all what is necessary to do is to go to the distributing store and you shall receive all that is necessary."

Another one asked: "When the Human Government, directed by Order and the Pure Civilization shall be established, what shall become of all the sacred ministers?"

Orrento: "Their condition shall also be improved, they will be respected better than now, for a great many of the members of our Human Society have gotten so as to think that they are an organization of disturbers who paralyze the minds of so many poor unfortunate ones, that they have the authority to send souls to hell or to paradise. Instead of this they may become educators in the modern Human schools after having taken the Human Oath."

An old man with white hair, arose and asked: "How can our Human Society get along without religion?"

Orrento: "With the Human Oath and the Human propaganda, which shall be made by the members who love the Human Society, in the halls of Human harmony, after having attended to the necessary labor or occupation."

The representative of Arrentina, arose and asked: "If some one should commit any crime when the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established, how shall he be punished?"

Orrento: "There shall not be any kind of punishment whatsoever. The only chastisement shall consist in the Human instinct."

Some one, who however was a person of much experience, remained undecided and said: "I do not understand what Human instinct means, and I would like for you to explain it better."

"Well, have you ever seen under the present system, that some one without having committed any crime whatsoever, of his own spontaneous free will presented himself to the representatives of justice and said: 'Put me in prison?'"

That person answered: "No, sir."

Orrento: "Well, I have seen several persons apply to themselves the Human instinct without being obliged by any one to do so. Some months ago, I saw two members of our Human Society, who with the point of a needle were tattooing letters on their arms, and I asked them why they were doing that. One answered me: 'We are two friends who have known each other for a few days past only, and now we must separate, because he is a Sorrian, and as we do not know whether we shall ever see each other again, we have decided as a sign of friendship till death that I shall bear his name cut in the skin of my arm, and he mine.' Thinking that might be the best name to give to this kind of work, I called it Human instinct, because it is not assumed by cruelty but by friendship. Now when the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established, there will be made little machines with initial letters, which shall be kept at the Harmony Hall of the Human Society; and whenever a member whomsoever of our Human Society shall break or perjure his Human Oath, the Human instinct shall be applied to his forehead, and he shall be known by all as a traitor to *Humanity*.

"But crimes will be very rare, because no one can rob, having a perfected Human organization, nor kill, because all crimes that are committed to-day, are only owing to the present system.

"Under the present system, every member of our Human Society knows that life without money is unbearable, because one who works hard and sees the others living without working and with the opportunities of living in better conditions, commences to feel his brain working and thinking, and he soon finds out that he must have recourse to other inhuman means.

"He commences to trace his plans, and in what way he must act and at last he choses his victim. Of course before going to work and acting he analyzes fully all the details; if his victim is rich and he succeeds, he may hope to become rich, and cease to be a slave. The story of the past shows us that two-thirds of the robberies committed have been accompanied with homicide, the reason being in most cases in order not to be discovered by the police. If he who has committed a robbery, followed by homicide, is discovered and caught, and if the amount of money robbed has been quite considerable, he may succeed in being set free, but if it is small he may be condemned for life or to the capital punishment. And you, dear brother, who are a man of great intelligence, just and honest, to all what I have now demonstrated to you, can you answer me: 'What has been the obstacle to deal with the one as with the other in these cases, and condemned all to death?'"

That man answered: "Money."

Orrento: "Bravo! Now I wish to demonstrate to you what money is.

"Money is the value of products and a person who has a hundred thousand dollars in his locked safe, does not keep his money locked, but an amount of production which had such a value. Hence it is evident that a person who succeeds in robbing ten thousand dollars, has done nothing else than becoming the owner of the value of that amount of produc-

tion, and for a long time he has succeeded to live without working, without doing his share of the labor of production. Now, when the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established, no one shall be able to rob another, because any member that shall not attend to the necessary labor in doing his share of it, shall be prohibited from eating by the Human organization and he shall lose all his Human rights."

The representative of Croi then asked: "Whose is the fault of the present system?"

Orrento: "Of the whole Human Society, who is still in the dark concerning many things."

The former said to him: "Explain yourself better, for so far neither myself nor the others here can comprehend such a Human illustration."

Orrento: "Suppose there are four very large halls; the first is completely dark; in the second there is a lighted lamp; in the third two, in the fourth, four. Human Society is still in the first room, where there is a large tablet with the inscription: 'First Vision of *Humanity*.'

"Underneath there are a few letters written in blood, which read: 'Infernal Inhuman System.'

"There is there a woman dressed in white with a blue mantle and she has a white banner thrown at her feet. In the same hall there is a closed door, with a very heavy barrier, and some members of our Human Society, who see that there is light in the second room, are trying to break the barrier and throw the door from its hinges, in order that the whole Human Society may enter that room, while others interpose themselves in the middle and impede the Human progress.

"In the second room there is another tablet whereon there is written: 'Second Vision of *Humanity*.'

“And below:

“ ‘Modern Human Civilization.’

“In this hall there is a woman with a white banner in her hand, and she is shouting: “Why do you not open the door and enter here? That I may consign to you the banner with which you are to re-establish Human brotherhood and the Modern Human Civilization.”

“Between the second and the third hall there is a very large door, open, and one can see that in the third hall there is a tablet on which are written some letters that read: “ ‘Third Vision of *Humanity*.’

“And below this: ‘Complete Perfectionment of the Human Organization.’

“The door between the third and the fourth hall is also open and one can see that the fourth hall is brilliantly illuminated and in front there is a tablet on which is written: ‘Fourth Vision of *Humanity*.’

“And below this: ‘The Highest Human Civilization.’

“So, then, members of the Human family, the greatest efforts we must make, the greatest duty imposed upon us, is to break down that barrier between the first and the second hall, which keeps the whole Human family in the dark; and when we shall all see the light, we shall soon succeed in establishing the Highest Human Civilization.”

Another arose and asked: “In what way shall the necessary work be divided when the Universal Human Government shall be established, which is to be directed by Order and Pure Civilization?”

Orrento: “According to the heaviness, difficulty and mentality. There will be some who can work one hour and remain several days at rest.”

The representative of Dramanta, asked: “How will some Human intelligences be able to develop themselves, in order that we may always have great learned men?”

Orrento: "When the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established, all the members of our Human Society shall all be learned. Because the modern Human schools shall not be established to have the members of our Human Society grow in ignorance, but to have them all become scientific and learned and lovers of the Human Doctrine, and then the whole Human Society will be right in shouting very loud that it is entirely civilized."

A young girl arose and asked: "How will marriages be celebrated when the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established?"

Orrento: "The Human marriage shall be most sacred to the Human Society. From it principally shall derive the principal source of our Human Modern Civilization and of morality. To unite a young man and a young woman in matrimony, it must be known to the bottom whether Human love exists between them, whether they wish willingly to be united, never to separate, except at death.

"Human matrimony shall be celebrated in the Human Harmony Hall, in the presence of the Human banner.

"By Human right he who is to celebrate the union of two aspirants in matrimony shall be the oldest of their parents, because they have their best interest at heart, from any other member of the Human Society. Failing these the ceremony may be performed by one of their nearest relatives or most intimate friends.

"He who is to unite a young man and a young woman in matrimony, in the Human Harmony Hall, shall hold the pole of the banner of *Humanity* with his left hand, and in the right hand he shall hold the little pamphlet containing the Human ceremonies,

and after having read them, he shall call upon them to take the Human Matrimonial Oath.

“All those who shall violate the Human Matrimonial Oath shall have the Human instinct imprinted upon their forehead and thus all the members of our Human Society will be able to know all those who have committed immoral acts and broken the sacred oath.”

A man of middle age arose and asked: “If some man or woman thus marked with the Human instinct would want to marry again, can they?”

Orrento: “Of course, but only with those marked like themselves, because Order must be preserved.”

Immanglas said to him: “When all the rulers pass their troops in review they rejoice at seeing so many thousands of the members of the Human Society subjected to them like a shepherd looks at a flock of sheep who must go wherever he wishes to lead them. Tell me in what way can they still have so much joy when the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established?”

Orrento: “The rulers of all governments are right in having reduced their fellow-human beings to a state worse than that of animals. But let us suppose that the latter remember some day that they are Human just as much as all the rulers; they certainly will no longer consent to be led to the slaughter-house like as many cattle or sheep.

“I cannot here answer you, but I will limit myself to tell you that when the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established, the Humans shall all be civilized on an equal footing with the rulers. But tell me, Illustrious Representative of the great Immanglas nation, if all the rulers instead of passing

in review all their troops, would join the Human organization as it will be perfected, I believe that their condition would be improved, very many times, because they themselves and their families, they could at all times betake themselves to the automobile-garage, and get one to go and take a pleasure trip through the pleasure grounds that shall have been created by the perfected Human organization, of which they would be members.

“I want to give you an illustration of the difference there will be between the inhuman review of troops and the Human review of the beauties natural and artificial under the perfected Human organization.

“When all the rulers on the face of our globe go to pass their troops in review, the name of which I do not know wherefrom they have derived it, which goes to show that they have selected themselves out of our Human Society, because they wished to form those grand organizations and wished to call them Human, though according to the profession they exercised they could not be called so; for, as you well know, when the Humans arm themselves with those infernal weapons and engines of destruction, and provide themselves with the ammunitions of war, with the sole object of killing and butchering the members of our Human Society, they certainly are losing their title and right to the Human name and by assuming it are only taking a surname.

“To give you an illustration, when some members of our Human Society and myself, went some time ago into the country, and organized the Human Committee, the basis of this was only to find a movement that would not harm or injure any class or race, but was to lead our entire Human Society to the highest pinnacle of civilization. And behold! our organization was immediately called and became

known by the name of Human. If instead of having these Human principles we should have concluded and decided to arm ourselves and to go about robbing and killing the members of our own Human Society, even if we should have assumed the name we now bear, we would none the less be known now all over as a committee or a band of assassins and brigands. Consequently it seems to me there is a great difference between the words: Assassins and Humans, and they certainly have quite a different and quite a contrary signification. In order that the members of the Human Society may be called Human, they must certainly act as such.

“When all the rulers go to pass their troops in review, they cannot say that they are going to pass a Human review, neither are they very sure of their lives. But, on the contrary, when the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established, there shall not exist any arms or weapons any more and the lives of all the members of our Human Society shall be secure.

HUMAN REVIEW.

“To give you an exact illustration on the Human passing in review, I would have to entertain you here for several hours, and I may not do this, because we must continue our Human debate. But suppose that I should tell you that when the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established, if all the rulers with their families and all the members who at the present time compose the aristocracy, in case they should not be satisfied, should have the faculty of having built the Divine Ark, and in a short time they could be transported to the celestial paradise and there would become members of the divine society, they would then be through talking about the Hu-

man natural science, which causes me to know that our globe, after so many millions of years that it is in existence, always following the same rotation and revolution, is neither smaller nor larger, neither heavier nor lighter; and why, do you know? Because it generates, and it reproduces itself once more. In fact, if the Human Society wished to prove the truth, they might build an aerial station and place there the Human observers, who should have to write in books (to register) all what they see pass before their eyes, and after a century come down and they would be convinced that they have not written anything. The same Human logic brings this to us, and you can make the experiment of it at any time. Take an elastic or rubber ball, fill it with water and stop the hole carefully, and let it run where it does not meet with any obstacles, and with your watch in hand see how long it will take until it stops at the place you have appointed. Then let out of it some of the water, stop the hole once more with care and let it run like the first time, and you will find out that it will go slower. Now if anything had been taken away from our globe, it certainly would have lost its regular movement. Yet it has never failed in fulfilling its regular duty; as the nights succeeded the days a thousands years ago, they still do the same now and with the same regularity, and this demonstrates that all that which is generated in it, no one has or shall have the faculty of taking it away. Consequently all the members of our Human Society must make a review, and recognize that our globe is our protector, that without it we would not exist. It wants to be worshipped, not with words, but with labor, and then abundance for all the members of the entire Human Society shall be secured."

A woman arose, who was a mother of family, and she asked: "When the Universal Human Gov-

ernment, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established, how shall the schools be organized?"

Orrento: "Men shall be educators for the male sex, and women for the female and the sexes shall be separated in the schools."

Salano, a member of the revolutionary group, "Without God or Religion," arose and said: "Human propaganda seems to me to be one of the most developed of all religions, which you are trying to introduce in Human Society. It has an attraction which breaks the hearts of the greatest tyrants, and neither I, nor any one of all those who are suffering, we do not see with what politics you are to establish the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization. If you are trying with your Human Movement, to make us lose time, we are ready to break it. Creppo has already called upon the chief furnisher of arms of the religious armies and I assure you he has the treachery to make more stupid ones, to cause other massacres, and to do more harm to us all who are only claiming our Human rights. I have been sent here to tell you that we do not wish to hear any more about religions or politics of any kind."

Orrento: "The Human Movement is neither politics nor religion, but instead it is the latest development of the entire Human Society, in order to establish the highest Human Civilization, and I wish to give you an illustration to prove that it is neither the one nor the other.

"The Human Natural Science teaches us that the word politics means nothing than that a few members of our Human Society, with their politics or policy, have succeeded in getting at the low and high offices of city and state, and to improve their condition without taking any interest, whatsoever,

in the improvement of the condition of the other members who have placed them where they are. All those who aspired at being benefited have found themselves like all the others, suffering damage and loss, and they have gone to work and organized other political parties in view of succeeding gradually in throwing down their oppressors and in taking their places.

“While the Human Movement is entirely contrary to all this, for it is based upon the Human Doctrine, this watches to the interest of the whole Human Society, in other words, it protects all the classes without any distinction of race.

“The Human Movement recognizes all the members of the Human Society as Human citizens, and abolishes the spirit of nationality and considers them all as members of one sole nation. Now, as the Human Society, as we now have, is divided in small nationalities, the Human Movement shall have succeeded to its very end, when it shall have united them all in one only nation.

“Every small nation represents the majority and the will of the members which compose it, and in order to establish the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, it is also necessary to have that majority and that will.

“The Human Movement places the ballot box at the disposal only of the Civilized members of the Human Society, elections are to take place every six months, and are to last for fifteen days; from the fifteenth of April to the first of May, and from the fifteenth of November to the first of December. At the elections, there shall be no votes cast for any candidates, but for the endorsement of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization.

“Before the elections every one of the members of the Civilized Human Society, shall be furnished by the Human Council with a ballot on which shall be printed on one side:

“Indorsement of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization. The member of the Civilized Human Society.

“In order to vote the ballot of the endorsement of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, the member shall have to write on it under his name and family name, his age and his directions or place of dwelling, and if he is a head of family, the names of those who compose his family and who have not yet reached the age of twenty-one years completed.

“The husband cannot compel his wife, nor the wife her husband to become a member of the Civilized Human Society.

“When the elections of the members of the Civilized Human Society shall be over, all the ballot boxes shall be taken to the Central Hall of the Human Council, where the votes shall be counted and registered. The register of the Central Human Council shall contain all the votes of endorsement of all the districts and the districts of their organizations.

“Like the Central Human Council, the Human Councils of the districts, shall not only keep an account of the votes, but also of the complexive number of the members of the Human Society, which is affixed on every vote. The members of the Civilized Human Society shall no longer betake themselves to the voting places and ballot boxes, which maintain the present system.”

One among the audience arose and asked: “Why does the Human Movement carry the ballot boxes along?”

Orrento: "For the holy Human reason: Because the Human Movement carries with it the Human Oath, and no one of the members of the Human Society shall be allowed to go and vote at the Human ballot boxes, if he has not already taken the Human Oath, and has not become a member of the Civilized Human Society.

"The Human ballot boxes are at the disposal of all the members of the entire Human Society who shall have taken the Human Oath and embraced the Human Doctrine.

"All the Human Central Councils of the villages, towns and cities, shall send to the National Human Council the detailed results of the elections of the members of the Civilized Human Society, and the whole number of all those who do not recognize any other banner than that of *Humanity*.

"The National Human Council after having received all the results of the elections of all the Central Human Councils, shall form the bulletin of the entire result of the Human Movement. The bulletin shall not only show the total of votes cast, but also the number of the members of the Society, that have grouped together in joining the Human Movement. When the grand Universal Human Office shall have received all the bulletins of the results of the elections of the members of the Civilized Human Society from all nations, it shall in its turn form a general bulletin of the entire Human Movement, and this shall be made public to all the members of the entire Human Society at large.

"As the Human Movement is universal, in order to inaugurate the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, there shall be required the two-thirds majority of the nations which actually divide our Human Society.

“When the grand Universal Human Office shall make public the bulletin by which the movement shall be shown to have reached the majority of the two-thirds of the nations, a Universal Human Congress shall be called together.

“The Universal Human Congress must be represented by all the members of the Human National Offices, including those among the third of the nations which have not succeeded in reaching the majority.

“As a Human rule, the members who compose the National Human Councils, are all those who aspire at seeing the Human Universal Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization established on our globe.

“When the Universal Human Congress shall be in session it will be the Human duty of the same to discuss the course and progress made by the Human intelligence, and from this to formulate the basis of their actions, and to notify all the rulers of all the nations of our globe to withdraw, because the Human Movement has succeeded in reaching the majority.

“As soon as the Universal Human Congress shall be united the members of the Civilized Human Society shall proceed to the nomination of all the Councils of Human Order of the Universal Human Congress of Pure Civilization.

“After the members of the Civilized Human Society shall have universally nominated all the counsels of Human Order and the Human Congress of Pure Civilization, the Universal Human Congress shall recommend them to celebrate in a festal way the days of the great Human Convention.

“The number of days of the great Human Convention are indefinite but shall end, three days

after the inauguration of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization.
EFFECT OF THE FESTIVITIES DURING THE INDEFINITE

NUMBER OF DAYS.

“During the indefinite number of days of festivities, the members of the Civilized Human Society shall make it their duty to bear with each other and to help one another, not only morally but also financially.

“Every day, the streets shall be seen filled with members of the Human Society, of which two-thirds small and tall, men and women, shall be wearing the Human emblem.

“In the afternoon all the organizations of the members of the Civilized Human Society shall go out separately the one from the other, through the public streets, and the Human propagandists, shall have to be most active because during this indefinite number of days of festivities, the members of our Human Society, shall present themselves in very large numbers to take the Human Oath.

“Every evening during the indefinite number of days of festivities, after the Human propaganda, all the organizations of the members of the Civilized Human Society shall unite and parade through the streets in a Human demonstration and shouting: Hurrah for the Modern Human Civilization!

AFTER THE INAUGURATION.

“Three days after the Inauguration of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, the companies of valorous and courageous Humans, composed of mechanics, armorers in chief and persons of high intelligence, shall be seen parading the streets. They shall be provided with hammers, anvils, and other iron and steel tools, and they shall be followed by wagons.

“The companies of courageous Humans shall stop at every house, and the members of the Civilized Human Society who shall be the first to present themselves to perform this Human service, shall be seen wearing the Human scarf across their body, and they shall enter every house and in every family shall ask in the name of *Humanity* to have delivered to them all the infernal engines of destruction of every description, arms and weapons, which they may have in their possession.

“All persons who shall hand over their weapons to the company of courageous Humans, shall be registered in the register kept at the Hall of the Human Council in order that a record may be kept of the same.

“The arms shall be destroyed in the presence of the persons who shall have handed them over for the simple reason that the movement of destruction of arms shall be better believed in and shall obtain a more complete success.

“When the arms shall have been totally destroyed, the entire Human Society shall indeed have established the Modern Civilization of Humans, and will find itself at the stage of the Second Vision of *Humanity*.

PERFECTIONMENT OF THE HUMAN ORGANIZATION.

“The perfectionment of the Human organization is the most necessary basis, for the attaining of the highest Human Civilization, and therefore requires the greatest amount of energy on the part of the Human propagandists, in order to demonstrate to the entire Civilized Human Society the great benefit to be obtained by its success.

“In order to establish the perfectionment of the Human organization, it will take at least five years; because there are some members among our Human Society whose Human intelligence is tied by false

doctrines and would like to establish themselves in isolated groups. Of course, the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, cannot compel them to become a part or members of the perfectionment of the perfected Human organization, and shall let them free to act as they please.

“These isolated groups, when they shall see that all the members of the perfected Human organization, are not thinking of anything else but to attend to the necessary labor and occupation of each day, from the rising of the sun till noon, and that they shall be enjoying all the comforts of life, shall little by little become convinced and shall soon join their ranks.

“The entire Human Society only shall be in charge of the service by means of the perfected organization. In fact, I wish to give you an illustration from among the isolated groups and from the grand perfected Human organization.

“Suppose there be a thousand persons who were to attend to the daily necessary duties of whatever kind, and that there be four thousand to be supported by them through the perfected Human organization, all of the five thousand could live in comfort and wealth, and be provided with all the required service.

“The one thousand persons who should attend to the daily necessary labor, with the aid of the modern machines, shall find their labor increased tenfold; that is to say equal to that produced by ten thousand men, before the invention and introduction of steam engines. From this viewpoint it is easy to see that the thousand working persons, attending to the necessary labor from the rising of the sun till noon, shall produce the four-fifths more, or in other words as much as five thousand persons used to produce.

“Consequently it is not a dream that I am telling you when I say that the entire Human Society, perfected as it should be, would be provided with service of all description, indeed, this is not an utopia but the simple truth. Because while motor force has taken the place of physical force, it was not, indeed, to harm our Human Society, but to raise it to the very highest degree of Human Civilization.

“The eight hundred persons who because of the motor force produced by Human intelligence are put out of work today, are divided in three parts. There are those who cannot find a position to work, those who work and do not produce anything, and finally those who are armed with infernal engines of destruction in order to protect private property.

“In order to reach the perfectionment of the perfected Human organization, every member of our Human Society, should think of nothing else than to attend to his own share of work, from sunrise till noon, in whatever industry he may belong to.

“The principal industries shall be: Production, Collection, Distribution. The Production, or productive industries shall produce all the articles necessary to our Human Society.

“The Collection, or industries of collection or gathering, shall collect or gather together all the portable articles that can be transported and bring them to the magazines or stores of distribution.

“The Distribution, or industries of a distributive nature, shall distribute the article in store, according to rules and regulations set down by Human precepts.

“Of course those who shall manage the distributive industries, shall know very well everything pertaining to the furnishing of necessities to the entire Human Society in the way of royal palaces with

abundance of recreation and everything else tending to the highest ideal of Human Civilization, and the perfected Human organization.

“The isolated groups, who shall have produced cereals, shall need to exchange a great part of it for clothes shoes and other articles and shall go to the distribution stores to get their articles of exchange. The managers of the distribution stores shall answer them that the Human regulations do not allow the exchange, and the isolated groups, without being forced by anybody else, shall find themselves compelled to enter the perfected Human organization.

“And now we shall see the entire Human Society finding itself at the threshold of the Third Vision of *Humanity*.

“From this point we commence to see the great effect of the Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization.

“From morning till noon all the members of our Human Society who shall be attending to the necessary labor and occupations in the great perfected Human organization, shall know very well to what industry each and all shall belong by means of the dress or costume they shall wear, each branch of work wearing a different habit. In the afternoon, they shall all wear the dress suit of an emperor in the Human Citizen's dress.

“Every afternoon they shall all wear the same clothes, and the day of the week shall be known by the dress everybody shall be wearing.

“When Human Order shall have completed its perfectionment, the entire Human Society shall have reached the highest Human Civilization, that is to say, the Fourth Vision of *Humanity*.”

When Orrento ceased speaking, the whole crowd commenced to shout in a common voice:

“Hurrah for the Human Doctrine!”

An old man, who during the whole session of the Human debates, had been listening attentively, as soon as the shouts of the people ceased, arose, and turning to Orrento, he said: “It seems that the problem of the Human Society is solved, but I think that there is a very great question which you cannot remedy. Of course, the Human Movement is the greatest phenomenon presented to the entire Human Society till this day, and which would lead it to the highest Human Civilization. But when all weapons shall be destroyed, and when all the members of our Human Society shall have the opportunity of living in wealth and abundance, during the present century, we would see our numbers very much increased, and the future generations, if they do not wish to run the risk of having to devour each other, shall be obliged to introduce once more the old system. So then, answer me, in what way shall the great Human phenomenon be able to remedy this state of affairs; this ideal has been studied vainly by the most learned members, and men of science of our Human Society?”

Orrento knew that this old man was one of the sacred ministers, perhaps sent on purpose by Creppo, to throw discredit upon the Human Movement, and he answered him: “I am not the God of Heaven, but only a member of the Civilized Human Society; and consequently I am neither more nor less than the other members. You, my dear brother, are asking me something about the infinite; as when some members of our Human Society seeks to know from the most scientific men how our Human Society had its origin. Well, hundreds of thousands of years have passed by, and the Human intelligence has not been able yet to find a precise answer to such a question. So then if you ask me about the

end, it is very probable that you know something about the beginning, is it not so? Then, which was first, the chicken or the egg?"

The Old Man: "Well, of course, the whole Human Society is descended from Adam and Eve."

Orrento: "Tell me, by whom were they generated or engendered?"

The Old Man: "God created them."

Orrento: "And God, by whom was he created?"

Old Man: "By nothing."

Orrento: "Could you tell me what the word 'nothing' or 'nothingness' means?"

Old Man: "Nothing or nothingness is a thing that has neither beginning nor end."

Orrento: "Could you demonstrate to me a thing that has neither beginning nor end?"

Old Man: "Of course, it is a thing without existence."

Orrento: "Can you show me a thing without existence?"

Old Man: "Certainly. But I must deceive you."

Orrento: "In what way would you have to deceive me?"

The old man making a sign with his right hand, answered: "Take that letter which that young man is bringing to you; afterwards I shall tell you."

Orrento turned around but not seeing anybody, turned again towards the old man, and said: "These are not jokes to make here. We here are talking seriously."

Old Man: "I am only demonstrating to you the nothingness which has been the basis of our Human Society. Now you must demonstrate the firm basis of the highest Human Civilization. Not for one century only, nor even for a million of years, but for

eternity, or as long as our globe shall exist, so that the Humans shall no more have recourse ever to means of barbarism to destroy each other among themselves."

Orrento: "When our globe shall have been transformed into a paradise of delights, and nature shall refuse to eliminate what is produced, the responsibility of everything shall rest with Human intelligence. Some one will invent bouquets of roses of several colors to adorn ladies and flowers shall be sought for, and so on, and the equilibrium of our Human Society shall thus be maintained, and the infamous arms shall be abolished forever."

As Orrento ceased to speak the whole population there assembled commenced to shout:

"Hurrah for Human Doctrine!"

"Down with arms and weapons!"

"Hurrah for the brotherhood of man!"

"Hurrah for Universal peace!"

Tremio had been preparing outside for the Human propaganda, because the news of the great debate had been spread throughout the whole city of Rosisma, and in front of the Hall of the Human Council there had assembled an immense crowd of people of all classes and conditions.

The sun had not yet gone down to its western concealment, and the trumpet with its loud blasts was already calling the Humans to go and hear their own Doctrine expounded to them.

Orrento took hold of the banner of *Humanity* and started walking to go out of the hall, and Ales-tro with the emblem of the Human propaganda was following him, while the band composed of members of the Civilized Human Society was playing the Human Hymn.

At the right of the door of entrance of the Hall of the Human Council, there had been prepared a

little table and as Orrento was arriving outside, he gave the banner of *Humanity* to Tremio and he jumped upon that table. Tremio with the Human banner placed himself at the right, and Alestro with the emblem of the Human propaganda at the left of the table on which Orrento had climbed.

Orrento looking around him saw that the immensity of the crowd of people around him was such that it would be impossible for a great many to hear what he was going to say concerning the Human propaganda, so he shouted very loud:

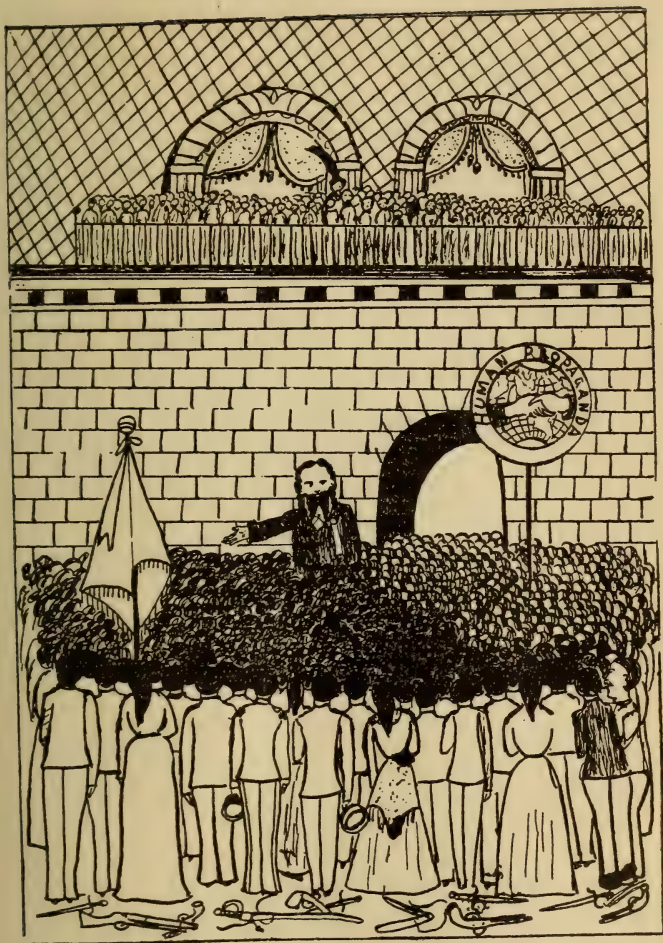
"All those who have already taken the Human Oath will please keep back and let the others come to the front, those who have not yet been converted." After a moment, he said:

PRESENT INHUMAN INFERNAL SYSTEM.

"When the future generations shall read in our modern books the system of our inhuman organization, they will be compelled to say that our present generation has developed nothing else but a confusion of ideals which have succeeded in being hostile, the ones to the others.

"A small fraction of the members of our Human Society have the idea and ambition of becoming the owners of the whole globe, and of all the artificial wealth in it, while they are certainly the patrimony of the entire Human Society.

"Tell me, brothers and sisters of all classes without distinction of race, if all the intelligences the Human minds of all the members of our Human Society, were developed within one month from now, a great confusion would arise because every one would claim his share. Instead of this the Human intelligences are developed gradually and as they go on developing so they go on claiming and asking to be put in possession of that which by rights, by Human rights, they expect to own.



Orrento says: "The false doctrines will bring Humanity to Destruction; Human Doctrine to Salvation."

“Our Human Society is on the eve of a very great catastrophe or at the dawn of a great change in which humanly it will commence to establish the Modern Human Civilization.

“The false doctrines will lead us to destruction. Our Human Doctrine to salvation.

“The false doctrines excite to the taking up of arms in order to destroy our Human Society. The Human Doctrine excites, urges the Humans to the destruction of arms.

“The false doctrines wish to cast us into the abyss of darkness. The Human Doctrine wishes to lead us to the establishment of the highest Human Civilization.

“The false doctrines keep ninety per cent of the members of our Human Society in misery and wretchedness. The Human Doctrine leads the entire Human Society to live in abundance.

“The false doctrines maintain millions of the members of the Human Society enclosed in prisons, deprived of the free air, freely provided by bounteous nature. The Human Doctrine sets them at liberty.

“The false doctrines incite the members of our Human Society to massacre each other. The Human Doctrine educates them to love one another.”

And turning towards the representatives of all the nations, he said to them: “And you, very illustrious representatives of all the nations, when you shall return to the country whence you came, what news shall you carry to your people? What have you accomplished with your coming to Rosisma? Perhaps you have not been convinced by this Human debate? Ask me any questions whatsoever, I am ready and willing to answer you. As the Human Movement does not harm nor injure any individual, class or race whatsoever, but rather leads the entire

Human Society to the highest degree of Human Civilization, ask freely. If our Society is Human, on what motives are based the hundreds and thousands of false inhuman doctrines? If the members composing the Human Society call themselves Human, why must we still be acting like the brute creation? Oh! yes, it is because the Human Society in order to reach the highest pinnacle of Human Civilization must pass through the present inhuman infernal system or in other words through the *first vision of Humanity*.

“Suppose there should be a very beautiful tree, which we would agree to call the Human tree, and that this tree should be loaded with the most excellent kind of fruit, and this fruit should be known as the fruit of the very highest Human Civilization; and that tree should be standing before our eyes, and some members of our Human Society having succeeded in procuring a ladder and lean that ladder against that tree, promising the other members that if they succeed in gathering, in picking any fruit, the whole Human Society shall get some of that fruit to eat. Let us suppose all this. Now they have ascended that tree but have not been able to reach the fruit with their hands. If now, all the ladders they had taken hold of were in one room, and I should say to them: If you wish to have the ladder that was made expressly, on purpose for the Human tree, I have the key to it, they certainly ought to abandon the ladders which instead of affording them the means of plucking the fruits of the great Human Civilization, have done nothing else but injuring the Human tree. So then, brothers and sisters of all classes without any distinction of race, that key is the Human Oath, and the ladder to reach the fruit of the highest Human Civilization is the Human Doctrine.

"All the Humans who take the Human Oath come to abandon the false doctrines and become members of the Civilized Human Society."

Tremio commenced to raise the banner of *Humanity*, while the whole crowd of people were raising their right hand to abandon the false doctrines and taking the Human Oath, they embraced their own Human Doctrine.

The sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society were ready to make the distribution of the Human emblems, and when they saw Tremio raise up the banner of *Humanity*, they spread among the crowd of people, pinning the emblem on the breast of all those who were taking the Human Oath.

Orrento, when he saw all the representatives of all the nations with their breasts decorated with the Human emblem, said to them: "Brothers, behold what a very great difference there is from a moment ago to the present moment. Then you were representatives of small nations, now you are members of the greatest nation that ever was."

The Queen had heard the news that the King had abdicated in favor of Creppo, and that Orrento was speaking in front of the hall of the Human Council. She called the ladies of the court and they all left in haste to go and listen to the Human propaganda. When they arrived at Aldochina street they were very much surprised at the sight of the immense crowd of people that had congregated.

Orrento, turning towards the people, said: "The members of the Civilized Human Society, must now no longer vote for any candidate or system that favors the maintenance of the present inhuman and infernal system of arms and others. We have now instead our own Human duty to have recourse to, the Human ballot box, and vote for the indorse-

ment of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and the Purest Civilization."

Some one from the midst of the crowd shouted to Orrento, asking: "The members who shall represent the Counsels of Human Order and those who shall represent the Universal Human Congress of the Pure Civilization, shall they also have to attend to and do their share of the necessary labor?"

Orrento: "Certainly, because the Human Natural Science demonstrates to us that if one takes a horse who has always worked and who is reduced to skin and bones and keeps him away from all work, and gives him to eat and to drink in abundance and has him well groomed every day for a year, and then tries to ride it, that horse instead of being grateful to those who have fed and groomed it well, shall do everything possible to throw his rider down to the ground. The same instinct governs the Humans; the present inhuman and infernal system has given us very many and sufficient proofs of this, and we do not need any more experience or experiments; for after having sent some workmen to parliament, to congress or to any other charge, it has been proved that it was sufficient for them not to have any longer taken any active part in the accustomed labor, to have been well fed and have lived in abundance on the labor of others, of those who had sent them, they have done afterwards nothing else but oppress the others and treat them with contempt and despise them worse than dogs.

"It will be quite the contrary indeed in our new system, for as the Human Movement has been founded by the Human Doctrine, and the Counsels of Human Order, and the Universal Human Congress of the Pure Civilization shall be developed from it, the members of our Human Society, representing it,

shall have the Human duty to go to work in the perfected Human organization.

“When the members of the Counsels of Human Order, and the members of the Universal Human Congress of the Pure Civilization, in order to fulfill their Human duties shall not have to lose so much time, and the Human organization being perfected, one day in the working days of the week shall be sufficient for them to hold a meeting.”

Another then asked: “And for how many years shall they hold their office?”

Orrento: “For one year, and they cannot be re-elected for the succeeding year.” (They shall only be in office one year at a time).

Another again was asking: “And if the perfected Human organization should be willing to dispense one from taking part in the work, what then?”

Orrento: “When the members of the Human Counsels of Order and those of the Universal Human Congress of the Pure Civilization, should succeed in not taking part in the work in the perfected Human organization, our Human Society could not then say with truth that it has established the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and the Pure Civilization. Because the Civilized Humans shall have for very first Human duty to attend to the labor necessary in the perfected Human organization.”

The same man asked again: “What shall be the qualification required for the members of our Human Society to have the right to vote, when the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be established?”

Orrento: “All the members of the perfected Human organization who do not take part in the necessary labor, shall neither have any right to vote.”

On hearing these words, the whole crowd commenced to clap their hands and to shout:

“Hurrah for the Human Doctrine!”

Orrento came down from the table, and the Duke Galanfroni and many others came near to him and shook hands with him, praising very much the whole Human tenets, which he had upheld and developed during the debates of the Human Congress and the Human propaganda.

The Human propaganda was adjourned for that evening and the Human propagandists with Orrento and others who had taken the Human Oath and wished to become interested in the Human Movement, re-entered the Hall of the Human Council, and commenced to discuss which was the most urgent work they had to accomplish in order to avoid the obstacles that might interrupt the movement.

Orrento said: “Those who might prevent the Human Movement to succeed in humanly establishing the Modern Human Civilization, are the religious circles, for their hearts may be influenced by the sacred ministers. Creppo knows very well what Human Doctrine means, but in order to show his false inhuman science, he shall surely intervene and interfere with treachery to the harm and injury of the members of the Civilized Human Society. The members of the Civilized Human Society, having taken the Human Oath, must keep it as a sacred thing, and never consent to raise their hands to strike their fellow-man, nor take up arms against the members of our Human Society. But if the uncivilized Humans should abuse and ill-treat them it shall certainly be our duty to treat them as inhuman brutes.”

Duke Galanfroni said: “I have already sworn to organize a company of valorous Humans at my own expense, and I declare myself the first member of it.

King Gallonetti added: "And I am the second."

"I am the third," said Baron Prascurio.

Tremio, hearing that they were talking of organizing the company of valorous Humans, as he was returning from having gone to place the banner of *Humanity* at its right place shouted: "And I am the fourth!"

Duke Galanfroni said: "Well, as soon as possible, we must meet and organize the company of the Valorous Humans, and know the least little movement that Creppo is making."

The Queen and the ladies of the court were looking for the King, and when they saw that the crowd had somewhat thinned and disappeared, they thought that he had probably entered the Hall of the Human Council.

As they were arriving at the entrance door, the Queen noticed that the King was wearing the Human emblem; she hastened her steps and went to shake hands with him, and said: "Now I am content, that you have become a member of the Civilized Human Society."

The abdicated King answered: "Not only am I a member of the Civilized Human Society, but I am also one of the founders of the company of the Valorous Humans."

The woman remained like undecided whether to speak or not for a moment, then finally she asked: "And what is the aim of the company of the Valorous Humans?"

King: "Its aim is to destroy all arms, weapons and infernal engines of destruction, which have been manufactured with the purpose of hurting, wounding or killing the members of our Human Society."

The discussion had been terminated and after having shaken hands with each other, and having wished each other good evening and good night, they went out and returned to their different homes and lodgings, satisfied with their day's work in the furtherance and propaganda of the Human Movement.

While they had been in the Hall of the Human Council attending to the Human debates, Creppo and the chief of the religious army had not been idle in their interview and meeting in the hall of the religious arms.

The chief of the Department of the religious army, after having made an inspection of the religious arms, turned towards Creppo, and said: "What does Your Holiness wish to do?"

Creppo: "All the religious arms must be put in perfect order, and by the first of April they must be ready and packed in boxes, for they shall have to be sent and shipped to the different religious circles."

The chief of the Ammunition and Armament Department said to him: "More than one hundred persons shall be needed for the arms are in a very bad condition."

Creppo: "I leave you the responsibility of the whole affair, give them whatever pay they want, all what is necessary is that you know that they are religious persons and opposed to the Human Movement. The work must be done and accomplished secretly, and if possible, the persons working at it shall enter one at a time and not leave here until all the religious arms shall have been put in good condition and ready."

Chief of Armament Department: "I shall do my duty."

Creppo: "And I shall know how to pay and reward you; provided our holy religion triumphs."

The Chief Armorer kissed the hand of Creppo and left.

Three days later, the Chief Armorer of the religious arms had succeeded in gathering one hundred armorers and mechanics in the hall of the religious arms and he was directing all the work.

It was at 9 o'clock in the morning on the twenty-fifth day of March and the temple was filled with members of the religious circles, but no other persons could enter except those provided with a ticket of admission.

Creppo had given strict orders not to give any admission tickets to any one who was not a member of some one of the circles.

The members of the religious circles were piously awaiting the arrival of His Holiness, with the sacred ministers, because the entrance had been forbidden to any but members they imagined that there were going to be some questions to be discussed in regard to the religious movement.

Creppo had prepared two recipients containing a certain liquid prepared by him. One of the recipients was of gold, and the liquid which it contained was perfumed with fragrant odors; the other one was of iron and contained a liquid of so repulsive an odor that one drop was sufficient when thrown in a room, to make everybody inside run away. He had had them sent to the temple.

Towards ten o'clock before noon, Creppo, accompanied by the sacred ministers, entered the temple, and having arrived before the Superior God, they fell on their knees, and carrying each one of them, their right hand to their foreheads, they remained so for a while in the attitude of prayer.

All the members of the religious circles also fell on their knees, reciting in a low voice the principal prayer of the Holy Elephantine Religion.

After five minutes Creppo and the sacred ministers arose and entered the grand hall of the holy vestuary.

There came out of it a youth carrying two vases of silver containing glowing coals and he placed them one at the right and the other at the left of the Superior God and went back immediately to the hall of the holy vestuary.

As soon as the youth had entered in the great hall of the holy vestuary, there came out of it one of the sacred ministers wearing a long vest of red silk and a mantle of yellow silk, all embroidered in gold and carrying in his left hand a little covered vase of silver, and he went to kneel down before the Superior God, carrying his right hand to his forehead.

After a moment he arose and went to the vase on the right and taking the cover from the little vase in his hand, he commenced to take out of it some of the powder or dust which it contained, being some of the divine odors, and he threw it on the glowing coals, and when he thought he had thrown enough he went to that on the left and did the same thing.

At the entrance to the great hall of the holy vestuary, on the right at a certain height, there was a big wheel, on which there were attached hundreds of little bells, and a chain of iron was hanging from it.

Above the entrance door, and inside the temple, Creppo had had erected the Electrical Musical Human Chant, the latest invention of Human intelligence, which furnished joy to the Humans, without the aid of their physical strength.

The first, second and third voice or part of the Human voice was composed of a chorus of fifty persons and when it was put in motion, you could hear the singing accompanied by a complete orchestral music.

From the great hall of the holy vestiary, the same youth again came out, that is the one who had brought the two silver vases with glowing coals, and this time it was very hard to recognize him. He wore a black cassock and a white shirt with very wide sleeves and he went to place himself to the right of the same door and taking hold of the chain that was hanging from the big wheel, he stood ready to put it in movement. The sacred minister who was kneeling before the Superior God arose, and went to press the electric button. It was a big sight. All at once, in the wink of an eye, the whole interior of the temple was entirely illuminated, the youth commenced to pull the chain and the big wheel was set in movement, and all the little bells commenced to ring. It seemed like a very, very large herd of cattle passing, each head shaking a bell. The complete music of the Electric Musical Human Singing commenced to resound and soon the voices commenced to sing:

“Come, come, a second god,
To comfort us, poor sinners;
We have remained faithful
To our Superior God!”

From the two silver vases there came clouds of smoke which waved all over throughout the interior of the temple and entered the nostrils of the members of the religious circles, and the odor which it exhaled made them think of paradise, having come down in their interior, filling their stomachs with suave odors.

Amidst all this noise of sounds and song, Creppo was seen coming out dressed in a long cassock of very white silk, and wearing on his shoulders a red mantle all embroidered in gold; it was very long and wide, and as it was heavy two sacred ministers

were walking a little back of him, one on the right and one on the left, carrying or lifting the ends of it so that it would not drag on the floor.

Creppo was walking with a slow and majestic step, his hands joined palm against palm, on his chest and his eyes fixed on them, and all the sacred ministers were following him in two lines.

When he had arrived in front of the Superior God, he fell on his knees facing the Superior God, and the sacred ministers on the right line went to kneel down on the right and those of the left row on the left side of him.

After a moment Creppo and all the sacred ministers, feigned to be kissing the floor and arose fronting each other.

As Creppo and the sacred ministers were arising, a sudden and deep silence was made within the temple, and he, addressing the people assembled, said: "Members of the religious circles, when a part of the children are rebelling against their own father, those of the children who have remained faithful find it to be their duty to defend him even to the shedding of the last drop of blood.

"The members of the Civilized Human Society are, perhaps, not here with you today, beating their breasts in order to obtain the forgiveness of their sins; no, they have rebelled instead, and stand up against our holy religion.

"They do not wish any longer to hear anything about our Superior God, nor about our holy religion; no, they only believe in the Human Doctrine. Where there is no religion there is no God. You alone can save our holy religion. I have already had all our religious arms put in perfect order, and each and every one of the religious circles must be fully armed and equipped to the last man by the tenth of April next, and you must march

against the Human propagandists, and against the members of the Human Committee. They are those who have stirred up and agitated the people to withdraw and keep away from our holy religion.

“I give you all my blessing and thus you are sure to be fighting for the holy cause of our Superior God; and even if you are destined to die in the struggle you will be received by him in his bosom and enjoy his sight for all eternity in paradise. While the members of the Civilized Human Society, through the excommunication I am going to fulminate against them, when they shall die, shall be doomed forever and ever to the abyss of hell.”

The youth who was wearing the long black vest or cassock, and the little white shirt, had gone to take the two recipients filled with liquid and as soon as Creppo had ceased speaking, he opened the silver one and approached Creppo.

In this recipient there was a sprinkler composed of a little stick, at the one end of which there was a little globe like a ball of the size of a big walnut, hollow and entirely perforated with little holes, and in the hollow of it there was a little piece of sponge.

Creppo took hold of this little sprinkler, by the stick end, and commenced to move it up and down, walking from right to left and from left to right, in front of the sacred ministers, and with his face turned towards the members of the religious circles and blessing them by sprinkling them.

The liquid coming in minute drops from the sponge inside the ball sent a most suave odor all over the edifice, and gratified the sense of smell of Creppo and of all the sacred ministers.

The members of the religious circles saw nothing else than the lifting and lowering of the little sprinkler, and were satisfied also, believing themselves blessed by Creppo; but they did not smell

much of that exquisite odor, because the liquid was mostly all spent on Creppo himself and on the sacred ministers.

When Creppo had finished sprinkling and blessing the members of the religious circles, he turned towards them and said: "Members of the religious circles and faithful children of our Superior God, I warn you that when I shall have issued my bull of excommunication against the members of the Civilized Human Society, you must remain firm where you are, in order that it may have its effect and bear fruit."

Then the windows of the temple were suddenly all shut so that no air could penetrate from the outside.

The youth now took hold of the black recipient, and walked towards the door of entrance or portal of the temple. Creppo, accompanied by two sacred ministers holding up the borders of his mantle, were following the youth, until they all arrived at the entrance door which was well and securely closed.

Creppo said to the youth who had been carrying the recipient: "I wish to have here eight of the strongest men from among the members of the religious circles."

The youth set to work looking for them, and after having chosen eight of the strongest and most robust men in the audience, he brought to the portal where Creppo and the two sacred ministers were waiting.

Creppo, turning towards these eight members of the religious circles, said to them: "Take care that no one gets out of here, for otherwise my excommunication cannot have any effect."

And he made a sign to the youth to take hold of the recipient or receptacle containing the excommunicating liquid.

No sooner had the youth opened it, than Creppo took hold of the sprinkler, and walking hurriedly he commenced to throw right and left of the pestilential liquid contained in the vessel. Having arrived where the sacred ministers were assembled, they all retired in a hurry in the great hall of vestiary, locking the door behind them.

The members of the religious circles sprinkled with that pestilential liquid could not bear the stench filling the place, and were taking hold of their noses and stopping their nostrils, getting up and sitting down repeatedly and crying that they were afraid to die from the pestilential stench which was suffocating them, and they could not move from their places.

A young man, a member of the Civilized Human Society, was passing on the square of the temple and heard the shouts and cries of the people within, and approaching the entrance door, he commenced to listen, in order to make better sure of what was going on.

He immediately smelled coming from the cracks an exceedingly bad odor, and knocking at the door, he shouted: "Come out of there, if you wish to save yourselves!"

One of those inside answered: "We cannot, otherwise the excommunication could not have its effect."

The young man outside set to weeping and went away saying: "I don't know what that inhuman Creppo has made them believe now."

Creppo and the sacred ministers as soon as they had entered in the large hall of the vestiary, commenced to laugh like fools, without anything to be able to stop them at the great farce they had been playing on the members of the religious circles; and the more they heard them shout and cry, the more they laughed.

One of the sacred ministers opened the door of the great hall of the vestiary and shouted to the members of the religious circles: "Open the door and go out, for the excommunication has now had its effect."

The members of the religious circles immediately opened the door, and hastened to get out in great crowds.

The first ones who succeeded in getting out noticed the young man, member of the Civilized Human Society, who was weeping looking at them, and they came near him, and one of them, in a loud voice, said to him: "You are indeed right to weep now for all the members of the Civilized Human Society have finally been excommunicated each and every one of them. Is it not so?"

The young man did not answer. The members of the religious circles asked him: "What is your name? Why do you not answer?"

The young man wearing the Human emblem at last answered, and said: "My name is Human Order and I am weeping because the members of the religious circles are so ignorant; and because they, instead of pushing ahead and helping the Human progress, they do nothing else but impede its movement and trying to make it retrogress.

"The more Creppo and the sacred ministers are leading you by the nose, and make fun of your stupidity, the more you run after them and do their bidding."

The member of the religious circles turning towards the others and addressing them said: "Let us go away from here. We know very well that the members of the Civilized Human Society are always speaking ill of that most holy man Creppo and of all the sacred ministers."

Duke Galanfroni and the ex-King Gallonetti, with Baron Prascurio and Tremio, had organized a very large company of Valorous Humans, and also a Vigilance Committee, in order to make sure that the revolutionary groups in their destructive march should not impede the Human Movement by having recourse to violent means, and also with the aim of annihilating the great and destructive social revolution.

The financial conditions of the majority of the population were too, very bad, and the reason of this, of course, was because the produce and products and the money were controlled by a very small number of the members of the Human Society."

The Vigilance Committee met in the Central Hall of the Human Council building, and Mr. Emilio Santrelli, after each member had reached his place, said: "Brothers and members of the Vigilance Committee of the Human Movement, our mission is one of the most important for and which interests the most, the Human Movement, for it is left with us to lead the entire Human Society to that point where the Modern Human Civilization can be and shall be humanely established. But I am and you are aware that there are two things for which the members of our Human Society do forget, that they are Humans. These are: Too much wealth, and too much poverty. Tell me how we can best remedy such obstacles. Daily a great many persons cannot find the needed work and their number goes on increasing all the time. As there are very few members of our Human Society who have succeeded in controlling the productions and the money, the work of production and of distribution goes on, all the time diminishing until at last it will stop altogether."

Clavio had become very much interested in the Human Movement and he was also a member of the

Vigilance Committee, and when Santrelli was through speaking, he said: "Do not fear, and do no doubt at all but everything shall be remedied. We are informing by letter all the members of the unproducing class that they must not forget that they are members of the Human Society, and that as such, it shall be their duty to help along by any possible means, morally and financially, the Human Movement. Then we make an appeal to all the sisters, members of the Civilized Human family, to come out two by two, taking up the collections which they will receive from the Humans, not as alms, but as a Human due and duty; and every day in the Human Counsels, the distributions of the products shall be made to supply all the members of the Human Society who shall make a demand for the same. Part of the amounts collected by the sisters of the Civilized Human Society shall go to the work of Human propaganda, in order to spread more vigorously the movement of propagating the Human Doctrine; for we know very well, and all the members of the Civilized Human Society know it also, they are not obliged to pay any monthly dues, and the expenses are covered by means of voluntary dues and donations by the members themselves for the progress and advancement of their organization."

It was now about nine o'clock in the forenoon of the twenty-ninth day of March, and the company of the Valorous Humans was going out and was passing through the Aldochina street. At their head were Duke Galanfroni, with the ex-King Gallonetti, Baron Prascurio and Tremio, and at the tail-end of the procession there were six wagons, each one drawn by a team of two strong horses, and in the center was the banner of *Humanity*. All the members were wearing the badges or Human emblem, and the four gen-

tllemen at the head were wearing scarfs across their bodies, said scarfs were bearing a printed inscription, saying:

“We are the enemies of arms, and brothers of the Humans.”

When the company of the Valorous Humans arrived in front of Creppo’s palace, they stopped, fronting it.

The four gentlemen at the head of the procession, entered the palace of His Holiness. Having arrived at the entrance door of the second floor, they found the doorkeeper and they asked him: “Where is His Holiness?”

The doorkeeper answered: “In his private office.”

The four members above named of the company of the Valorous Humans betook themselves to the office, and one of them rang the bell.

Creppo went to the door and asked: “Who is there?”

“Duke Galanfroni.”

On hearing such a name pronounced, Creppo opened immediately and on seeing the four members of the company of the Valorous Humans wearing the Human badge or emblem, and with their white scarfs across their bodies, he grew pale.

As soon as Creppo had opened the door Duke Galanfroni raised his right hand and said to him: “In the name of *Humanity* we summon you to deliver to us all the arms, that have been made and manufactured with the intention of harming, wounding or killing the members of our Human Society! It is our duty to destroy them and render them unserviceable!”

Creppo with a very loud exclamation answered them: “What do you say! What! You wish to destroy the holy religious arms?”

Duke Galanfroni: "Infernal religion. Do you not wish to understand that it is time to put an end to it? Why do you not read the Human debates, you will see how the Human Doctrine leads the whole Human Society to the very highest degree of civilization, and this shall be accomplished when all the arms shall have been entirely destroyed."

Creppo: "In destroying the arms you also destroy God."

Duke Galanfroni: "The false one, yes. May it be so. But the true God, if he exists, after all the arms shall have been completely destroyed, if he wishes to come and visit our Human Society, you may be sure he shall find it civilized."

Creppo: "As far as I am concerned, I do not give you any permission, nor do I allow you to destroy the divine arms."

Duke Galanfroni: "What is that you say? You are a learned man and yet you lose yourself in your talk."

Creppo: "I am telling the truth. The Humans with the invention of arms have created a power superior to ourselves. It is certainly the duty of all rulers to believe themselves to be the heads, each one of them, of his own nation. Now is it not true, as demonstrated by all past history, that when some ruler has been applauded and acclaimed in grand festivities by his own people as their head, arms have shown to be superior to him, and in many cases have taken away his life. So then, the arms are a god, or rather a power superior to the whole Human Society. Tell me how can you hope to succeed in destroying such a power?"

Duke Galanfroni: "With much more facility and with much less trouble than it took our Human Society to create them."

Creppo: "For what concerns myself, I shall not consent to the destruction of arms, which have

always and everywhere been used to defend our holy religion."

Duke Galanfroni: "We do not need your consent. I am only telling you that the company of the Valorous Humans in whose name we are here, is founded with the avowed purpose and aim of destroying all arms and weapons and that having come here with that purpose and aim we shall not leave the premises before having accomplished our end; we mean to destroy all the infernal engines of destruction that may be found within this building, and we shall commence by making the visit and search of this very room and so go on from the one to the other."

So saying, he advanced farther inside of the private office. Creppo ran to his writing desk, on which there was a big book open, and which he shut putting it under his left arm.

Duke Galanfroni looked at him in his face and asked him: "What is in that book?"

Creppo: "It is none of your business. You do not have to know my private or secret affairs."

Duke Galanfroni looked at the writing desk and saw on it a key with a little copper plate, to which it was attached, and on which were engraved the following words: "Hall of the religious weapons."

He took it with haste and turning towards Creppo, he said: "Well, you may keep your secrets to yourself, but without arms you cannot accomplish your betrayal."

Creppo: "Later on I will give you an answer."

Duke Galanfroni without answering anything, went out of the private office and turning towards the others, he said: "Let us go and accomplish our Human labor."

Tremio went to call the members of the company of the Valorous Humans, while Duke Galan-

froni with ex-King Gallonetti and Baron Prascurio went to the hall of the religious arms, having them accompanied by the head-servant.

As soon as Duke Galanfroni had opened the door of the hall of the religious arms, Tremio arrived with the members of the Valorous Humans.

All the religious arms were packed in boxes ready to be shipped to the members of the religious circles.

All the members of the company of the Valorous Humans set to work, opening the boxes and taking away the religious arms, throwing them away outside in the public street.

The work of destruction was getting along with order and towards eleven o'clock in the forenoon, the hall of religious arms was entirely cleaned out of any kind of infernal weapons.

An immense crowd of people had congregated in Aldochina street, in front of Creppo's palace, and were looking at the work of destruction of the infernal weapons and engines.

The members of the company of Valorous Humans had ten anvils, at each of which a member was accomplishing the work of destruction with a big hammer, which rendered every one of the arms unserviceable.

Duke Galanfroni had the work stopped for a moment in order to demonstrate to the people the destruction of arms. And climbing upon a box which was still full of arms, he said: "Brothers and sisters, the destruction of all the arms is a necessity for the dignity of the entire Human Society. His Holiness has already confessed with his own mouth, that the Humans by having created the arms had created a god, or an inhuman power superior to the whole Human Society. Every member of our Human Society may ask of his own intelligence—of a Human being—and will know that what His Holi-

ness has said is true, or in other words, his intelligence will give him an affirmative answer, as the Human Natural Science would give. Well, this is the reason our present system is being called inhuman. It is because the Human Society is in possession of a power superior to itself, as I wish to give you an illustration, as an example of this power superior to the whole Human Society. In the present inhuman organization of our Human Society we have as heads of nations, seven presidents, seven kings and seven emperors, and His Holiness, who represents, as he believes it, the head of the entire society. But if these were in truth true heads, they should not need to be afraid of any one. Instead of this and very contrary to this they are more afraid, every one of them, of the inhuman superior power, than any other member of our Human Society.

“If any one of these heads of nations wishes to go out or go on a visit to some city, they must make preparations, in order not to be caught or touched by that inhuman superior power. But even then, their preparations are not always sufficient, because there are no means of knowing in what way that inhuman superior power is going to act; neither how, nor when, nor where.

INHUMAN SUPERIOR POWER.

“All the infernal engines of destruction which have been created that is invented, made, and manufactured by the members of our Human Society, constitute the inhuman superior power, or in other words, a god of oppression to the entire Human Society. When some ruler goes out from his palace, he is not afraid of the Humans, but of the inhuman superior power, because his own Human instinct makes known to him that he is inferior to it.

“So then, on this globe our Society of Humans alone must be at the head, and, therefore it is nec-

essary that all the Humans should do their share in the destruction of the inhuman superior power."

When Duke Galanfroni was through speaking, the members of the company of Valorous Humans resumed their work, and a great number from among the assembled crowd commenced to pick up the destroyed arms and to throw them into the wagons, and in a short time they had finished filling them.

The wagons commenced to move towards Leria street while the crowd was shouting:

"Long live the Modern Human Civilization!"

From the time that Creppo had been reproved by Orrento during the great triumphal procession, all the leisure time he could find he had spent it in his private or secret office, and every person that approached him or were in his surroundings thought that he was studying how to find means to cause the Human Movement to retrogress. He wanted to know the details of everything, and he put secret persons or spies to gather the most minute information. He wished to know all the names of the members of the Human Committee, and those of the Human propagandists, and those who were aiding financially the Human Movement, finally the names of all the traitors.

He was working without cease because he knew that nobody had the knowledge necessary to form the basis of a very precious Human record, and that no one could do it better than he himself. What was contained in the book which he had shut with such haste, taking it from his writing desk and putting it under his arm, in order that no one and least of all Duke Galanfroni should know anything of what was written in it?

This book contained the foundation of the Modern Human History, and when Duke Galanfroni went out of the private office, Creppo stayed in it, locked

the door and sitting himself at his writing desk, he opened the book of the Modern Human History and commenced to write in it.

Duke Galanfroni deserves praise for having distinguished himself and shown his courage as a Human by asking the religious arms from His Holiness, for having rendered them unserviceable, and consequently destroying the infamous inhuman superior power. Ex-King Gallonetti, Baron Prascurio and Tremio also deserve praise. They were the founders of the company of the Valorous Humans, together with Duke Galanfroni.

Creppo got up while Duke Galanfroni was talking to the assembled people in the street about the necessity of destroying all the arms, and said: "The Humans in order to call themselves valorous must not kill the members of their own Society, but they must educate them to destroy the inhuman superior power."

In the evening after having finished the Human labor, Tremio went home. Mr. Alsenzio was expecting him in the reception room, in order to praise him for his Human deportment and behavior.

As Tremio was ascending the steps and entering into the reception room, he saw his father; he went towards him, bent down, took his right hand and kissed it.

The father said to him: "I have just read the last edition of the *Human Guide*, and have seen with pleasure that the company of Valorous Humans has obtained a grand success in the destruction of the religious arms."

Tremio: "That could not fail. We have resolved to destroy tomorrow all the destructive revolutionary arms."

Mr. Alsenzio: "And do you think that the destructive revolutionaries shall deliver their arms to you with good will and voluntarily?"

Tremio: "They are in favor of destroying the arms entirely, but they have taken it into their heads to do that after the great destructive social revolution. While the Human Movement wishes that terrible destruction not to succeed, never to happen. For it would be the destruction of all artificial wealth and of the whole Human Society. The machines and presses of our great journals, *The Human Guide*, *The Modern Human Civilization*, *The Human Intelligence*, are in the movement with all speed; and by eight o'clock this evening a million of copies shall be distributed."

"*The Human Intelligence* makes a strong appeal to the Humans capable of breaking the hearts of the greatest tyrants. At the Human Council there arrived telegrams from all parts, and from the smallest village to the largest city, companies of Valorous Humans have already been organized everywhere, and these are working with great success, and everything leads us to hope that the Modern Human Civilization shall soon be established."

Mr. Alsenzio: "I would like to get a copy of *The Human Intelligence* to see what it says."

Tremio: "If I am not mistaken I have one of the proofs in my pocket."

And searching in his pockets he withdrew a paper from one which he handed over to his father.

At the moment when Mr. Alsenzio was taking the newspaper proof from the hands of his son, Crelia and Ainetta entered into the room, and on seeing Tremio, they shook hands with him.

Mr. Alsenzio turning towards Ainetta and Crelia, said to them: "Listen, let us hear what *The Human Intelligence* says!" And he commenced to read:

APPEAL TO THE HUMANS.

"*The Human Intelligence* makes an appeal to the Humans to enquire and know by whom we are harmed. *The Human Intelligence* affirms all what has already been said during the Human Council by Duke Galanfroni, member of the Valorous Humans. The Duke said that in creating arms we have done nothing else than create an inhuman superior power ruling over the whole Human Society. *The Human Intelligence* makes known that if the Humans take a basket and fill it with most excellent fruit of all kinds and qualities, and having done this, they commence to think that in order the basket be complete, they would like to get a watermelon, and after having gotten it, they would put it on top, what would be the result? That instead of completing the basket they would be ruining the whole contents, indeed. So then, they would very quickly take the watermelon away. Now, if instead of taking it away they would leave it on top, how would the matter end? The most excellent fruit which the basket contained would be completely mashed and ruined, while the watermelon would remain unhurt.

"The arms and weapons have reached their last development in infernal force, in quantity and weight. If every single Human being would wish to be armed there would be arms for all and there would be a considerable number to spare.

"If there were here a very large scale and on the one side you would put all those infernal weapons, and on the other side the Humans, the weight of the former would by far surpass that of the latter.

"The principal industry of the last two centuries has been the manufacture of arms, of those infernal engines of destruction which are classified as old and new models. These infernal objects of

the new models are known as of first, second, third, fourth, fifth model, and so on.

“The arms of old model, and a great many of those of other models, are in the hands of the Humans as individuals or private citizens, while those of the later models are to be found in the hands of all the organized armies and societies.

“It is the great weight of either the one or the other of these classes that weighs upon the whole Human Society. *The Human Intelligence* in the same way that it acknowledges that leaving the watermelon on top of the fruit ruins the whole basket full with the exception of the melon itself, so the great weight of the inhuman superior power of the arms left upon the Humans, if left there, shall finally destroy the whole Human Society.

“*The Human Intelligence* informs and begs all the Humans without any distinction of class or race to give up and deliver all the arms and weapons in their possession to the members of the companies of the Valorous Humans. The Humans must not expect that the great weight of the inhuman superior power is going to fall off from on top of them, for *The Human Intelligence* knows what will be the final result. If some member of our Human Society finds himself armed with or in possession of any kind of those infernal engines, and has some words with his own brother, or with any other member of the Human Society, and should happen to make use of that arm (as most probably he will) what would be the result after having used it? Why weep after it is done? Why run wild for a doctor with the hope of saving the brother you have wounded? The doctor may encourage you and tell you that he hopes to save him. But it is not so. This is only blind-folding you; and at last he has to tell you that the wound is mortal and that there is no help.

“*The Human Intelligence* warns the Humans, all of them, without any distinction of class or race, that the time has come now to make use of their intelligence; this is the acceptable time. After the great weight of the inhuman superior power shall have crushed and smashed you from on top, there shall be no longer any remedy.”

READ THE HUMAN GUIDE.

When Mr. Alsenzio stopped reading, they heard voices of men and boys shouting:

“*The Human Guide!*”

Tremio ran quickly to the balcony, and called: “Nomaro!”

After a few moments Nomaro entered the reception room with a pile of newspapers under his left arm, and carrying one in his right hand.

Mr. Alsenzio and Tremio came near the boy and after having each taken a copy of the newspaper, Mr. Alsenzio asked him: “How many copies have you left?”

Nomaro: “I had taken one hundred, and with these two I have sold forty-eight.

Mr. Alsenzio putting his right hand in his pocket pulled out a piece of money, and said: “Take this, and you don’t need to shout any longer; go and distribute these copies on Scialbina street. Commence from your house and leave one for each family as you go; and tell your father that he should no longer read revolutionary newspapers.”

The revolutionary press had reached the very ultimate development, calling upon all those who had been robbed or expropriated from their own products or productions to yield their weapons under no considerations whatsoever, and to keep themselves ready and on the alert for the great and destructive social revolution.

Nomaro was the son of a cobbler, Scarpellino, one of the founders of the revolutionary circles, of the Brothers of the Oppressed. He was a very honest and intelligent man, and he understood very well that he had been working for the embellishment of the superb palaces, while all what he could expect was to live in a poor little wooden hut.

When Nomaro had left Tremio commenced to read as follows: "*The Human Guide* makes an appeal to all the Humans and especially to the members of the revolutionary groups, and recommends them to go and take the Human Oath, and to become members of the Civilized Human Society. Election time is very near in Human circles, and when the members of our Human Society go to the ballot box to lay down their vote in the Human election, let them endorse strongly the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, and then they shall have accomplished their Human duty, and the present inhuman system will be humanely abolished forever.

"The accomplishment of the Human Movement shall terminate with the very great inauguration of the universal joy of the entire Human Society. The termination of the universal destructive social revolution would be the signal for the destruction of the entire Human Society."

"Read the *Modern Human Civilization*."

When Tremio was through reading, a member of the Civilized Members of the Human Society entered the reception room with a bundle of newspapers under his arm, and taking two of them he threw them upon a chair and said: "*The Modern Human Civilization*. Excuse me for not stopping, I cannot, this is the time of Human agitations. Good evening, brothers and sisters."

The people in the house answered: "Good night, brother."

Creliia ran to pick up the newspapers and gave one of them to Mr. Alsenzio and the other to Tremio. Mr. Alsenzio commenced to read as follows: "*The Modern Human Civilization* demonstrates to the Humans of all classes, without any distinction of race, the fall of the present inhuman and infernal system and the great inauguration of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, or the beginning of the Modern Human Civilization.

"Such an inauguration will not be like those that have occurred when some member of the Human Society reached the position of Emperor, but it will be quite different, because it will be the triumph of the whole Human Society for having reached all, each and every one, the high position of Emperor. All the inaugurations that have occurred heretofore in our Human Society, put together, will not be able to compare with the magnificent and superb inauguration of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization.

"Three days before the date all works and labor shall stop, as well production as distribution, for all those who shall still have remained without taking the Human Oath because as the Human Movement prescribes for the members of the Civilized Human Society, the celebration of the indeterminate days will be sacred up to three days from the inauguration of the Universal Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, and they shall not take part in any work whatsoever.

"The inauguration of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization shall be made universal, that is in all places where members of the Human Society are to be found. It shall take place for the entire Human Society on the same day, and if it were possible at the same hour. For such an inauguration all the

members of the Human Society shall certainly have reason to be satisfied, because the accomplishment of the Human Movement, will not harm nor injure any class or race whatsoever, but will lead the entire Human Society to establish the Modern Human Civilization.

“For the inauguration of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, all the sisters of the brother-members of the Civilized Human Society shall take part in the festivities wearing a white dress of Human Queen.

“The Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, shall not be inaugurated with any shooting of fire-arms or infernal engines, nor even with any kind of ‘fire-works, but all the members of our Human Society shall appear wearing the Human badge or emblem. No other flags or banners shall wave but that of *Humanity*. During the inauguration the bands shall play nothing else than the Human Hymns, and the whole Human Society shall shout:

“Long live the Modern Human Civilization!”

When Mr. Alsenzio finished reading, Ainetta and Crelia retired, and Tremio turning to his father, said to him: “Father, the work of Human propaganda goes on increasing daily, and I have decided to marry Crelia on the fifth of April.”

Mr. Alsenzio: “Where are you going to get married? Creppo has excommunicated all the members of the Civilized Human Society, and according to the Human Doctrine it is our duty not to go to the temple.”

Tremio: “Neither I nor Crelia are wishing to be married by Creppo, nor by any one of his sacred ministers, but it shall be you who shall bind us in the bonds and ties of matrimony.”

Mr. Alsenzio: "And where?"

Tremio: "In the Hall of the Human Council."

Mr. Alsenzio: "It is time and necessary to make preparations then, because the celebration of the first Human wedding shall be looked upon with great interest by the whole Human Society."

Tremio: "All I have to do tomorrow morning is to go to the offices of the Human newspapers, and make up a general invitation to all the members of the Civilized Human Society, and they will know what they have to do. I am certain that my wedding will be a success and that the enthusiasm shall be greater than in all the former weddings taken together that have been celebrated in this city of Rossisma."

Mr. Alsenzio: "Well, do not fear or doubt but I shall know how to join you in Human matrimony, better than Creppo or all his sacred ministers. After all Creppo is not any better than I, because when we used to go to school together, he was always trying to beat me with some trick or other, but he never was able to succeed, I was always the first one of my class."

Crelia and Ainetta had prepared supper while Mr. Alsenzio and Tremio were talking, and now that everything was in readiness, Crelia came back to the reception room and said to them: "Supper is ready."

They all went to supper and when they had finished, they retired to sleep.

The next morning early Tremio arose and went to the office of *The Human Guide*. He took a sheet of paper and commenced to write as follows:

HUMAN WEDDING.

"On the fifth day of next April, at two o'clock in the afternoon, at the Hall of the Human Coun-

cil, shall take place the first Human Matrimonial celebration between Tremio and Crelia, who shall become united by the ministry of Mr. Alsenzio. All the members of the Civilized Human Society are cordially invited to attend."

When Tremio was through writing, he turned towards the publisher of *The Human Guide*, and said: "I beg of you to please to send a copy of this announcement to all the Human newspapers, not only of Rosisma, but all over where there are any, and let it be published until the day of the wedding."

The publisher of *The Human Guide* took this announcement of the first Human Wedding and answered: "I shall do my Human duty."

Tremio shook hands with him and went out, to go and join the company of the Valorous Humans.

The company of the Valorous Humans had met in front of the Hall of the Human Council and had decided to go and destroy the arms, to the south of the Scialbina street, where there lived a great many of the members of the destructive revolutionary circles, and they started on their way.

Tremio was walking with a quick step, and when the company of the Valorous Humans were starting he arrived.

To the south of the Scialbina street, there was a fine tract of ground without buildings of any kind, and there, there had gathered about three hundred members of the revolutionary groups to deliberate and discuss whether they were going to give up their arms to the company of the Valorous Humans.

Alborio Nomaro was ready to commence to speak, but when he saw the company of the Valorous Humans appear, he kept back his speech.

The company of Valorous Humans, when being at a short distance from the revolutionary circles, stopped, only Duke Galanfroni went to the front with ex-King Gallonetti, Baron Prascurio and Tremio.

Alborio Nomaro went to meet and received and welcomed them with great honors.

Duke Galanfroni said to him: "This is a fine opportunity to find ourselves here gathered together and I shall have the honor to say a few words to you concerning the Human Movement."

A. Nomaro: "The honor is ours. We allow willingly that you should speak, provided you do not want us to surrender our arms to you."

Duke Galanfroni: "We do not compel you to do it, but only we tell you that we shall act with our Human intelligence, and if you acknowledge that you have not as yet any faith in the Human Movement, keep them back."

A. Nomaro: "I am sure that I can convince you, as a member of the destructive revolutionary groups, that we cannot surrender the arms to you. Do not speak about that, but if you are clever enough to convince us, we ourselves, we shall help to render them unserviceable."

Duke Galanfroni, stepping forward and turning towards the members of the revolutionary groups, said to them: "Members of the revolutionary circles (pardon me for calling you so) you know that the Human Movement is the intermediary between the two parties that are threatening the destruction of all artificial wealth and of the entire Human Society.

"The Human Movement is the intermediary between the oppressor and the oppressed, between the expropriators and the expropriated, between those who cause harm and injury and those who are suffering by them, between the strong and the weak, be-

tween the rich and the poor, between the just and the guilty, between the satiated and the famished, between the members of our Human Society who live in the paradise of wealth and luxury and those who live in the hell of wretchedness and want.

"The Human Movement is the doctrine of the great Human phenomenon. The great Human phenomenon is not the spirit of war, but the spirit of Universal peace among our members of the Human Society.

"The great Human phenomenon is not the spirit of tyranny but that of *Humanity*. The great Human phenomenon is not the spirit of cruelty, but the spirit of brotherhood and fraternity.

"The great Human phenomenon is not the spirit of the cruel *Inhuman Justice*, but the spirit of our sister, *Human Justice*. The great Human phenomenon does not wish to destroy our Human Society, but only the accursed arms and weapons which constitute and compose the accursed inhuman superior power which threatens the destruction of our Society.

"The great Human phenomenon wishes only to lead our Human Society to the very highest Human Civilization. And you, members of the destructive revolutionary circles, you do not bend down before the great Human phenomenon? You will not surrender your arms to the members of the Valorous Humans? Speak, what is the reason why you do not wish to give up those infamous and infernal engines of destruction, which you have in your possession? Oh, if I could only remedy this I would do all possible in accordance with my Human duty."

Alborio Nomaro (the cobbler) answered: "We cannot for the present."

Duke Galanfroni: "Perhaps you do not know that yesterday we have destroyed the religious arms?"

A. Nomaro: "We know it very well. But if first Creppo and all the sacred ministers do not take the Human Oath and embrace the Human doctrine, we shall not surrender our arms. Because Creppo and the sacred ministers with their diabolical doctrine, even without arms, are capable to cause the Human Movement to lose time and fail in its progress. Their words are worse than cannon shots, because while it is true that they do not kill outright the members of our Human Society, yet they paralyze their Human intelligence, insomuch that they no longer know which are the Human rights. I know how much trouble I had to succeed in converting to the spirit of liberty some of the members of our Human Society, because their Human intelligence was paralyzed by the false inhuman doctrines.

"The Human phenomenon is very great, indeed. Its doctrine is natural and Human, and it is therefore that we promise you that our weapons shall be destroyed as soon as the inhuman doctrines shall have been abolished."

Duke Galanfroni: "I recommend to you to act as Humans, and do not doubt at all but the first duty which we all have as interested in the Human Movement, is to abolish and throw down all obstacles which might impede in any manner whatsoever the progress of the Human Movement. Pardon me that I cannot shake hands with you until you have taken the Human Oath."

All four went back to join the company of the Valorous Humans and then they all decided to go back to the hall of Human Councils.

When the company of Valorous Humans arrived in front of the Hall of the Human Council, Duke Galanfroni spoke and said: "Brothers, composing the company of the Valorous Humans, let

us rest today. But tomorrow at sunrise, let us meet here."

The members of the company of Valorous Humans went away while Duke Galanfroni and ex-King Galonetti with Baron Prascurio and Tremio entered the Hall of the Human Council.

When these four members of the Valorous Humans Company had entered the Hall of the Human Council, Duke Galanfroni said: "The most terrible obstacles to remove are the false doctrines, and we are compelled to have recourse to Orrento."

Tremio: "I must go and see him and I shall speak to him about it."

Duke Galanfroni: "All right. Then for the present we have nothing to do any more. Good-bye."

And shaking hands with one another they went away.

In the afternoon the Human newspapers came out with a conspicuous announcement of the publication of the first Human Marriage between Tremio and Crelia, which was going to take place on the fifth of April at the Hall of the Human Council.

As the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society read this publication of the first Human Wedding, they commenced to talk the ones with the others, and after a while altogether they went to the Hall of the Human Council.

After about half an hour's time, there were gathered together about fifty sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society, among which was the wife of the ex-King Gallonetti, who arising went to place herself in front and said: "Sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society, the first Human Wedding means to form the basis of a new modern departure, which shall be added to the Modern Human History. There must be a difference be-

tween the present matrimonial celebration and that of the Modern Human Civilization. Now, if the Human Movement represents the development of the Natural Human Science the basis of the Human Matrimony must also be a part of this.

“We know that when two Human beings are to unite in Human Matrimony, the day which has been set by them is expected and wished for with great anxiety. For the Humans there are no days of joy which can be greater than the one in which two Human hearts are being united in Human Matrimony. Human love is bound, tied, and united to Human thought. If a young man loves a young girl, when he does not see her with his eyes, he sees her in his thoughts; and it is the same with the young woman.

“Human love has furnished millions and millions of examples. There have been young men who having given their hearts with all their Human love to some young person, who on hearing that she had died, took their own life with their own hands. And the same case has occurred with young women. Hence it can easily be seen that among the Humans, as well of the male as of the female sex, there exists a Human love, which causes them to unite in Human Matrimony, and that if they love each other reciprocally no power whatever can separate them except death.

“It is a shame for the whole Human Society that some men who believe themselves to be learned, have characterized woman as a thing partaking of the devil. We sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society, we protest against these false prophets. We are the daughters of men, and the men are the sons of the women. We are not devils, but Human. We do not wish to have marriage abolished, but perfected. We and our daughters, we do not wish to be a merchandise for men to be used at their good pleasure, but we wish to be their Human

legitimate wives. The men cast the blame upon the women for the present abominable system of corruption; while the fault lies entirely with them. It is the men who have traced and paved the way for the present system, not the women. It is the men who have written the false doctrines, not the women. And that which can save the female sex is alone the Human marriage.

“The Human Marriage does not destroy the family but on the contrary remodels it to the highest perfectability. The day of a Human Wedding is not a day of tears, but of joy, and all the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society must come to this Human Wedding in a white dress as a Human queen.”

As the wife of the ex-King Gallonetti ceased to speak, all the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society commenced to clap their hands, and arising they went out of the Hall of the Human Council.

Towards evening the members of the Civilized Human Society commenced to gather together in the Hall of the Human Council, and when a large number of them had congregated they appointed a matrimonial committee, composed for the most part of mechanics who were to interest themselves in the good success of the festivities contingent with the first Human Wedding; after which they departed.

April being the season of flowers, so the committee the next day commenced to make grand preparations for this first Human Marriage. The Hall of the Human Council, by the fourth of April was entirely decorated with artistic designs of roses and other flowers and everything was in readiness.

On the fifth of April towards one o'clock in the afternoon, the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society all dressed in white as Human

queens, commenced to gather at the Hall of the Human Council.

Crelia with the assistance of some sisters of the Civilized Human Society had finished dressing herself. She was dressed in a robe of very fine white silk, and wore a white veil of exceedingly fine silk on her head, which veil was hanging down and covering her whole body, leaving only her face uncovered; on her head above the veil, she was wearing a crown of white roses, which terminated in six points. She wore also a pair of gloves of a very white texture, and in her left hand she was carrying a magnificent bouquet of white roses. On her feet she wore a pair of very beautiful shoes of white silk, and she had taken her seat in the Hall of joy.

On the right of Crelia, Ainetta was seated, on her left Santrelli's wife.

Tremio was sitting in the reception room, dressed in a black dress-suit and was carrying a bouquet of white lilies in his left hand.

The sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society were commencing to arrive and also the members of the Civilized Human Society. The sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society were entering the Hall of joy, and every one of them, as she was entering, kissed Crelia and went to take a seat.

The members of the Civilized Human Society, on entering the reception room, went to shake hands with Tremio and congratulated him on his wedding.

The sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society were wearing white dresses like Crelia, but with the exception of the veil; and instead of a bouquet of white roses, they had one of flowers of different kinds and colors, and every one of them was wearing the Human badge or emblem.

Towards two o'clock in the afternoon, all the rooms and halls of the second floor were crowded to

overflowing with members of the Civilized Human Society, and sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society.

The band of the Brothers of the Civilized Human Society, arrived in front of the Hall of the Human Council, and placed themselves at the right of the entrance door.

The Scialbina street was crowded with people who had gathered to see the pageant and exercises of the first Human Wedding, and a great many among them were of those who had not yet taken the Human Oath. The balconies and the windows on the south and north sides of the Scialbina street, as far as the entrance door to the palace of Mr. Alsenzio could be seen were also crowded with people, looking towards that door.

The hour announced in the Human journals for the exercises and ceremonies of the wedding was passed, and every one outside was asking, the one of the other: "Whom are they expecting before they start?"

All of a sudden, some one on horseback came in full gallop from the west side of the Scialbina street, and having arrived near the crowd of people, stopped. He alighted from his horse and giving the bridle to one of the members of the Civilized Human Society, he went very quickly and entered the palace.

He who had just arrived on horseback was Alestro, and when he reached the reception room he went to shake hands with Tremio, and said: "Orrento is not coming."

Tremio: "And why?"

Alestro: "When I told him that the members of the revolutionary circles, on account of Creppo and his sacred ministers, had refused to surrender their arms to the members of the Valorous Humans, he became very sad. I begged him to come, together

with the members of the Human Committee, and he told me that he would not take part in any joyous festivities as long as the present inhuman system should not be humanely abolished."

Mr. Alsenzio was in the Hall of the Human Council to prepare everything and see that everything was in order.

Tremio arose and said: "Forward, all ready."

The matrimonial committee went down into the street, and commenced with Human words to have people back on both sides of the street to leave room in the middle for the matrimonial cortege from the door of the palace to the entrance door of the Hall of Human Council. Crelia arose and commenced to walk slowly, followed at a short distance by Ainetta and Santrelli's wife; and the latter were followed by all the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society in two lines. The lines on the right carried bouquets of roses and other flowers in their right hands, and the line on the left carried them in their left hand.

As Crelia was descending the steps and came outside, walking with a slow and regular step, the crowd of people holding their breath were looking at her, and when she arrived at the entrance door of the Hall of Human Council, all the people that were standing in front of the door, on seeing the beautiful arrangement and order of the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society, all dressed in the robes of Human queens, all commenced to clap their hands and to shout:

"Long live the Modern Human Civilization."

Mr. Alsenzio was at the end of the Hall of Human Council, wearing the Human scarf across his body, and taking his place in the center, with his face turned towards the entrance door, he awaited the arrival of the cortege.

On his left there was a member of the Civilized Human Society, who was holding the banner of *Humanity* in his right hand.

All the seats inside of the Hall of the Human Council had been taken away on this occasion of the first Human Wedding.

As Crelia entered the Hall of the Human Council, she went to take her place in front of the banner of *Humanity*, at a short distance from it, and standing still and bowing down, she saluted it. Ainetta and Santrelli's wife placed themselves on her right and the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society went and placed themselves on the right side of the Hall, behind the former, and when they had all entered the entire right side of the Hall was taken up and occupied by them.

Tremio was walking at a short distance from the last sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society, carrying in his left hand a bouquet of white lilies, and all the members of the Civilized Human Society were following him in two rows. When he entered the Hall of the Human Council, he went and placed himself to the left of Crelia, and bowing down he saluted the banner of *Humanity*. The members of the Civilized Human Society, as they were entering went to place themselves on the left side of the Hall, so that between them and the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society there was a space of about two meters in width.

Mr. Alsenzio, when he saw that everybody was standing still and that everything was ready, said:

HUMAN LOVE.

"Tell me, brothers and sisters, does this Human love exist among the members of our Human Society, or not? If it does not exist, then why do the Humans make use of such expressions that would have no signification or meaning whatsoever? Here we are ready to perform the first Human marriage,

and it is necessary that we should find a firm basis for this event, otherwise, I do not take the risk upon myself to unite this couple."

Although the Hall of the Human Council was entirely filled, there were still persons entering who were not members of the Civilized Human Society, and one of these answered Mr. Alsenzio, saying: "Human love has always existed and will exist forever, but it must be free."

Mr. Alsenzio: "What do you understand by free love?"

That same person answered: "When two Human beings are getting united in matrimony, they should live together as long as they love each other, and when they do not love each other any longer, they ought to be free to separate without being prevented from it by any one whatsoever. The two persons thus separated should not look upon themselves nor be looked at as guilty of anything; they should be free to unite themselves with others in the same bonds of matrimony and on the same conditions and as often as they can find some one whom they can love forever."

Mr. Alsenzio: "If you have an idea that free love means all what you have just been telling us, it would be much better to abolish Human Matrimony altogether. The Human Matrimony is only for the members of the Civilized Human Society, and free love has a quite different meaning, and I wish to give you a proof of it, not a theoretic one, but a very practical one."

He made Tremio and Crelia step forward a little, making them turn their faces towards the members of the Civilized Human Society, and he said: "Brothers and sisters, members of the Civilized Human Society, you see that Tremio with his left hand is holding a bouquet of white lilies, and Crelia a bouquet of white roses. These two bouquets in the Hu-

man Matrimony are being called 'Pure Human Love.' Pure Human Love only can be given in the presence of the banner of *Humanity*, and of the members of the Civilized Human Society.

"The Human Matrimony must not be celebrated with closed doors but with doors wide open.

"The Human Matrimony must not be celebrated secretly but very publicly.

"The Human Matrimony is not instituted to render Humans unhappy, but to make them happy."

And turning towards Tremio, he said to him: "My dear son, is it with your own spontaneous will that you wish to give your Pure Human Love to Crelia?"

Tremio: "Yes, sir."

Mr. Alsenzio, turning towards Crelia, said to her: "Crelia, do you wish, of your own spontaneous will to give your Pure Human Love to Tremio?"

Crelia: "Yes, sir."

Mr. Alsenzio, turning towards the members of the Civilized Human Society, said to them: "Do, perhaps, these questions I have asked of Tremio and of Crelia not indicate pure love? Free love? Certainly, no one compels Tremio to give his Pure Human Love to Crelia, but he is giving it, because his own Human intelligence has chosen her as his own Human spouse. Neither is Crelia compelled by any one to give her own Pure Human Love to Tremio, but she gives it to him, because her own Human intelligence has chosen him as her own Human husband. When Tremio has given his Pure Human Love to Crelia, he is no longer master of it, but she has become the owner of it. And in the same way with Crelia, who after having given her own pure love of a Human being to Tremio, is no longer mistress of it, but has made him the owner of it. Hence it results that Crelia has become the possessor of Tremio's

Pure Human Love, and that he has become the owner of her Pure Human Love. The Human husband and the Human spouse must both think that if by any combination of causes, their Pure Human Love should be asked of them by others, they must refuse to give it. Because the members of the Civilized Human Society, and the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society, who are receiving the Pure Human Love in the presence of the banner of *Humanity*, must keep it as dearly as they love their own life.

“It would be a fearful shame that two Human beings, members of the Civilized Human Society, should unite themselves in the bonds of matrimony, in the presence of the banner of *Humanity* and of all the members, and with great honors, and they should afterwards separate from one another with great dishonor.

“If you cut off a branch from a tree laden with unripe fruit, the branch alone will not suffer, but the fruit also, which will be unable to reach perfect maturity. The entire Human Society represents the Human tree, the family its branches, and the children of the family, the fruits. Now, if one member of the Civilized Human family would make free to put in practice the so-called system of free-love, as it is interpreted and understood by some members of the Human Society, how would all this end? The members of the Civilized Human Society must make use of their Human intelligence, and must know and acquaint themselves with a thing before putting it in execution.

“If we wish to build a house, why do we wish to make sure that the base be strong and firm, that the foundations be solid? Because we know that building on the surface of the flat ground would be nothing else than useless labor; the house would be scarcely finished before it would tumble down to

ruins, destroying all the fine work done and, perhaps, hurting or killing people that might happen to be inside. Now if two Human beings, after having been united in the bonds of matrimony of their own free will, should possess the faculty to separate at their own free pleasure, it would be just the same thing as if they had not been united. If we adopt the dissolution of the bonds of Human Matrimony before death, in other words, divorce, we do nothing better than inflict upon our whole Human Society one of the most terrible wounds and plagues. Because we, as members of the Civilized Human Society, we must recognize what effect the separation by divorce or otherwise of two Human beings that have been united for some time, would have upon the family and hence upon the whole Human Society.

“It is certain that if Tremio gives his Pure Human Love to Crelia, that means that he loves her with all his heart, and if she gives her Pure Human Love to him, it means again that she also loves him from the bottom of her heart. Now after they shall have taken the Matrimonial Human Oath, and after they shall have lived together for some years, and love should commence to fail on Tremio’s part, and he should fall in love with another woman, and he should appear here and ask for a separation or divorce from Crelia, if such a separation were granted him, what would be the results? The destruction and ruin of a family and broken hearts. It is true the wish of Tremio should have been satisfied, but if Crelia loves him now and will love him forever in the future, this separation would certainly make her unhappy for her whole life. And if on the other hand it were Crelia who should demand the separation, Tremio would be as just expressed in Crelia’s case, unhappy for the remainder of his life.

“And if they had children and if Tremio should abandon mother and children, what would be the re-

sult when the children would have grown up and would be asking: Mamma, where is our father? She certainly would have to answer: Your father is dead.

“And if it were Crelia who should abandon husband and children, he would answer that question, Where is our mother? by: Your mother is dead.”

The same man who had said what is free love, now said: “The children will no longer ask about father or about mother, because they shall be considered children of all.”

Mr. Alsenzio became very pale in the face, and answered him: “You are speaking thus because you are not yet a member of the Civilized Human Society, and you have not yet read any Human literature. Perhaps you do not know that the only kisses which can warm up with love the lips of the children are those of their own parents? Our Human Society shall never reach the highest degree of Human Civilization with such an ideal which probably some of you owe to false doctrines.

“The very highest Human Civilization means that it must be like a very large organ well perfected in which every single tone corresponds to its natural Human voice.”

D. Sarvelli, known as one of the most celebrated lawyers, but not a member of the Civilized Human Society, turning towards Mr. Alsenzio, said: “We cannot go against nature, the past and the present have given a great many proofs of this, and with all the suppressive laws in existence, it has not been possible so far, to prevent the separation of two Human beings who had been legally united in the bonds of matrimony. In several cases the law has refused to grant them the separation, but in the face and in spite of the law they have separated all the same.”

Mr. Alsenzio: “You are a lawyer and an advocate of the present system, not from profession

but through education, and you are worse than I was when I opposed the Human Movement, but what would you have, you know that a single little spark is sufficient to set fire to a house and cause a great conflagration. My son, Tremio, was the first of us both to understand the Human ideal, and when I became convinced and converted and set to reading Human literature, I became more enthusiastic even than he. The members of the Civilized Human Society have nothing in common whatsoever with the present inhuman organization, but we are going forward, forming the basis of the Modern Human Civilization.

"Tell me for what reason have the majority of those who were united in the bonds of legal matrimony separated?"

D. Sarvelli: "A great many are the wives of the poor laborers who accuse their husbands of not being able to support their families. Husband and wife present themselves at court, before the judge, and when the latter asks the husband why he does not go to work he answers that he cannot find work.

"There have been women who have asked separation or divorce from their husbands, because they were drunkards. Others have accused them of being gamblers. Indeed there has been a case which lasted for two years, among the aristocratic class, in which the wife was asking for a divorce on the plea that her husband had gambled away all his patrimony and now wanted to gamble her own fortune. There have been women who have demanded a divorce and have had it granted them, because their parents had compelled them to marry some one on account of wealth and without their having love for them."

Mr. Alsenzio: "From what you have said, it is proven that the Human Matrimony or marriage shall be an inseparable contract, because when the

Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, shall have been established, all those obstacles shall be abolished."

Tremio extending his left arm towards Crelia, and turning towards the members of the Civilized Human Society, said: "Brothers and sisters, members of the Civilized Human Society, in the presence of the banner of *Humanity*, and of you here assembled, I give my Pure Human Love to Crelia, of whom if she accepts it, I shall declare and recognize myself as her own Human spouse."

Crelia immediately walked two steps towards Tremio, and extending her right arm to him, accepted his Pure Human Love, and grasped his left hand; then walking back three paces he placed himself at his place.

Then Tremio, turning towards the members of the Civilized Human Society, said to them: "Brothers and sisters, members of the Civilized Human Society; if I, in the future should fail to fulfill my duties as a Human husband, and I should not come myself of my own free will before this body to have the stigma of Human Matrimony branded on my forehead, do you come to me and brand it into me. This is the only way to educate husbands or wives to act in a Human manner with their Human consorts."

When Tremio ceased speaking, Crelia said: "Brothers and sisters, members of the Civilized Human Society, I here, of my own free will, give my Pure Human Love to Tremio, and if he accepts it, I declare myself once and forever, in your presence and before the banner of *Humanity*, his Human spouse and wife."

Tremio walked two paces towards Crelia and with his right hand took hold of her left hand, and accepted her Pure Human Love.

Crelia turning towards the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society, said to them; "Sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society, should I ever fail in fulfilling my duties of Human wife and I should not come here of my own free will and accord to be branded on my forehead with the stigma of Human Matrimony, it shall be your duty to come and brand me with it and to regard me and look upon me as a traitress of *Humanity*. But I hope that we, the first ones that have been united in Human Matrimony, will be an example and a model to all the members of the Civilized Human Society."

At the last words uttered by Crelia, the whole agglomeration of people congregated and packed in the Hall of the Human Council, commenced to clap their hands and to shout:

"Hurrah for the Modern Human Civilization!"

The music band of the members of the Civilized Human Society commenced to play the Human Hymn, while Mr. Alsenzio took hold of the banner of *Humanity* with his left hand. Tremio and Crelia, turning towards it and raising their right hands took the Matrimonial Oath.

The Matrimonial Committee now went out of the Hall of the Human Council, and while they were away, the band of the members of the Civilized Human Society commenced to march towards the west of the street of Scialbina, at the distance of about fifty meters and formed in two lines, one on the right extending from the band to the right side of the entrance door of the Hall of the Human Council, and another on the left and leaving a very wide space between the two lines.

Tremio and Crelia after having taken the Matrimonial Oath, took each other's arms while all the members of the Civilized Human Society, walking two steps to the right were side by side with the sis-

ters of the members of the Civilized Human Society.

Tremio and Crelia commenced to walk arm in arm towards the right where a space had been left open in order to go out. The two central lines, the one composed of the Civilized members of the Human Society and the other composed of the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society commenced also to walk, following Tremio and Crelia and arm in arm.

The Scialbina street in the vicinity of the Hall of the Human Council was filled with an immense crowd of people, the windows and the balconies of all the houses were entirely filled with spectators, awaiting the exit of the couple of the Modern Matrimonial subjects.

As Tremio and Crelia reached the outside, there was a great sight. From the balcony over the front door of the Hall of the Human Council where the newly married couple were coming out, two sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society commenced to throw roses and other flowers on the heads of the Human spouses. The band of the members of the Civilized Human Society commenced to play the Human Wedding March, and started on marching. All the persons leaning out of windows and balconies had all been preparing themselves for the occasion, in order to do honor to the Modern Human spouses, and they were throwing bunches of nosegays and bouquets of roses and other flowers on the passage of the couple, and it seemed that the air was impregnated with all the sweetest odors and perfumes in honor of the first couple united in Human Matrimony.

The Matrimonial Committee had decided that the inauguration of the first Human Matrimony should take place in a procession which should start from the Hall of Human Council, going west on Scialbina street, north on Leria street, south on Al-

dochina street, east on Scialbina street and to the residence of the newly married couple.

When this cortege of the inauguration of the first Human Wedding reached Leria street, it made a very enchanting effect. All people who had the opportunity of seeing it from beginning to end, thought they were dreaming. Their hearts were beating with joy on seeing that long procession from the Hall of the Human Council to Leria street, quite a considerable distance, they could behold in one long stretch of participants the perfectionment and perfectibility of the inauguration of the first Human Matrimony. There was seen two lines, on the right the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society all dressed in white robes of Human queens, each one carrying a bouquet of roses and other flowers in her right hand; and on the left side the members of the Civilized Human Society, also carrying a bouquet of roses and other flowers in their left hands, and all of them, in both lines, men and women, wearing the Human emblem or badge.

Leria street between Scialbina street and Aldochina street was the central point of the city of Rossisma; there lived the richest people in the town, and it had always been the most frequented by the Human propaganda, and a great many of the people of that quarter had already taken the Human Oath.

As the inaugural procession of the first Human Wedding took that street, the storm of roses and flowers increased considerably and all the people commenced to shout:

“Hurrah for the Modern Human Civilization!”

The widowed mother of the ex-King Gallonetti, also had come to the balcony of their residence and looking towards the south on Leria street she saw that the inaugural procession was coming, and all the honors paid to the first Human Matrimonial

couple, and she exclaimed: "Oh! What a difference there is between the old tradition and the Modern Human Civilization!"

Creppo, on hearing the band of the members of the Human Civilized Society, and the shouts of that mass of humanity, crying: "Hurrah for Modern Human Civilization!" went to place himself behind a window of the balcony in the center of it, so as to be able to see without being seen.

The inaugural procession of the first Human Matrimony, was beginning to go down Aldochina street, and when it was about to reach in front of Creppo's palace, the people noticed that from the northern part of the town, there came a balloon in full speed. On it were printed very large letters, which read:

"If you are Humans be converted to the Human Doctrine."

As the couple of the Modern Human spouses arrived in front of the central balcony of Creppo's residence, the balloon was found to be quite vertically above their heads, and it opened a volley or a shower of roses and flowers which fell like an avalanche upon them. There was spread at the same time a large white flag which remained hanging and waving. Some letters were also printed or painted in it on both sides, and they read:

"Hurrah for the Modern Human Civilization!"

The members of the Matrimonial Committee commenced to look at one another rather anxiously, as if wishing to enquire who had done this piece of work. The balloon seemed to have come as by magic and in the air there could not be seen any signs of any wire, and yet they naturally thought that it was a work wrought by Human intelligence.

This was a great encouragement for the spectators, because the balloon seemed to them as having been sent by Nature itself, as if to reprove

Creppo, and all those members of the Human Society who had not yet taken the Human Oath.

Creppo was glad to see the great development the people had made by means of the Human propaganda; he said: "In order that the Human Society may succeed in establishing the Modern Human Civilization, it would be necessary that the members should no longer listen to the false doctrines. Otherwise every one will go the contrary, for as soon as I shall have the religious propaganda commenced to be preached in the public streets and squares, I am certain that there are many among those who have taken the Human Oath who will break it and come back to the practice of their religion."

The inaugural cortege of the first Human Matrimony arrived at the east of Scialbina street, and the streets through which the procession had passed were strewn with roses and flowers.

Mr. Alsenzio was at his balcony looking at the pageant and very much pleased to see his son married to Crelia, at the first Human celebration of matrimony, and of receiving such great honors at the hands of the Civilized members of the Human Society. As the band of the members of the Civilized members of the Human Society was arriving in front of Mr. Alsenzio's palace, they placed themselves at the right side of the front door, and kept on playing the Human Matrimonial March.

The members of the Matrimonial Committee formed in two lines, one on the right and one on the left of the front door, facing each other. The Modern spouses, followed by the members of the Civilized Human Society and the sisters of the Civilized members of the Human Society, entered the palace.

Mr. Alsenzio was in the reception room, and as the new couple were entering, Crelia took his right hand and kissed it; Tremio did the same thing, and

they entered into the Hall of rejoicings, and went to sit down in front of the entrance door.

Every couple of the members of the Civilized Human Society and of the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society, which was entering the Hall of rejoicings, went each in their turn, the women to kiss Crelia, and shaking hands with Tremio, leaving their bouquets of roses and other flowers at her left side; while the men shook hands with Tremio and Crelia by turns and left their bouquets of roses and other flowers at his right side, and turned around and went to their respective places.

When all the members of the Civilized Human Society and all the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society had finished paying their homages of honor to the Modern Human spouses, the members of the Matrimonial Committee met at the Hall of the Human Council in order to enquire who among them had done the magnificent work exhibited at Aldochina street.

Fristo, a member of the Matrimonial Committee commenced by asking from every one in turn, and each one answered that he did not know anything about it.

Arcadio said: "There are some who to us seem to be contrary to the Human Movement, but in reality are not. I think that that balloon was the work of Creppo, for he is a man of very high and superior intellect and a very great mechanician, being well versed in mechanics."

Fristo: "What are you talking about? Creppo is an oppressor, a tyrant, and a man without Human conscience."

While Fristo was talking, the cries of boys were heard, shouting:

"The Divine Voice!"

Fristo went out immediately and bought one of the newspapers, a religious periodical, and came

back looking in it, and said: "I was not mistaken. This is something else than Creppo helping the Human Movement, and he commenced to read as follows:

SACRED MINISTERS.

"You are very well aware that the Human propaganda threatens the total and complete fall of our Holy Religion. The faithful have strayed away from it, and are still doing so. The churches and the temple seem to them as if they were going to tumble down on top of their heads. They listen to nobody but the Human propagandists; because the Word of our Superior God is far from them. Consequently it is necessary to make an excessive religious propaganda in the streets and public squares.

CREPPO, *Second Superior God.*"

The day after the wedding (the ceremonies of the first Human Matrimony) in the afternoon, the sacred ministers went out and took possession of all the best corners of the streets long before the Human propagandists were wont to go out.

Every sacred minister was provided with a table, on which there was a chair and a picture of the Superior God, hung to a stick nailed on the table; and a boy with a bell was ringing it every now and then, in order to call the attention of the passers-by and have them stop and listen to the holy religious propaganda.

The Human propagandists went out of the Hall of Human Council, and when they found all the best corners of the streets in possession of the sacred ministers, they were satisfied with taking less favorable positions.

During the religious propaganda the sacred ministers demonstrated to all who were listening to them, the Elephantine Doctrine, promising that after the Human had lead a life of suffering and poverty,

at their death they should be admitted in a future eternal life, to the joys of Paradise.

The Human propagandists were demonstrating the Human Doctrine, or rather all what the Human Society could create or bring about.

Santrelli had become a famous Human propagandist, and this time had gone also with the other members of the Civilized Human Society to place himself at the corner of Aldochina and Leria streets, in front of the sacred minister who was carrying on the work of religious propaganda at that place. When he heard the sacred minister educating the poors to suffer, if they wished to go to Paradise, he cried to him: "Lying man, why do you not want to suffer yourself? Why do you promise that which neither you nor all the sacred ministers, nor even Creppo himself, know anything about? Why still spread the false doctrines among the people? If they are not entirely abolished, it will be impossible for us to establish the Modern Human Civilization upon earth."

The time for the Human elections was at hand, and the Human propagandists were becoming aware of the fact that the religious propaganda was a very great obstacle to the Human Movement.

The religious newspapers and periodicals were announcing that on the fifteenth day of April, the Superior God would be exposed in the temple until the first of May, when He would be carried in triumphal procession through the streets of Rosisma, in order to have all the faithful who had gone astray return to their faith and the practice of their religion.

Every evening, the few who were listening to the religious propaganda were going together with the sacred ministers to the temple to pray and sing to the glory of the Superior God.

Tremio, some three days after his wedding, seeing and thinking that the religious propaganda might work much harm to the Human Movement, went to Alestro and said to him: "Brother, I went to the Hall of the Human Council, and found quite a number of telegrams coming from all parts, and bringing the news that religious propaganda is getting so that it may cause the destruction of the entire Human Society. Creppo and the sacred ministers, I believe do not know what Human Doctrine means; but they are abusing it in such a manner that ever so many poor fellows have not yet their Human intelligence developed."

Alestro: "Of course, the Human Movement has two great obstacles to overcome, in order to reach to the complement and completion of its works, viz: Ignorance and Rascality. If the Human propaganda succeeds in educating people and overcoming the first, the second will fall of itself."

Tremio: "Well, it is necessary to go and see Orrento, and you tell him in what shape the Human propaganda is now."

Alestro: "Tomorrow morning I shall go, there is not so great a hurry."

Tremio: "The Human propagandists hope that Orrento, with the other members of the Human Committee, will come on the first day of the Human elections, and thus the Human propaganda will be spread vigorously."

Shaking hands they separated. Alestro went home and the next morning, quite early, he left.

Orrento and the members of the Human Committee were very well aware of the obstacles which were to present themselves to impede the cause of the Human Movement, and they knew also what means to use to put them out of the way without doing any harm to the members of the Human Society.

Alestro, before sunrise, was with the members of the Human Committee, and was telling to Orrento in what shape were the circumstances and conditions of the Human propaganda.

Orrento asked him: "Tell me, brother, are there any members of the Civilized Human Society that have broken their oath."

Alestro: "Until yesterday there was no one yet; but rather they looked upon the sacred ministers as traitors to *Humanity*."

Orrento: "This evening, when you shall go to the Hall of the Human Council, tell the Human propagandists, that by the first day of April all the members of the Human Committee shall be in the city, and that the religious propaganda shall be destroyed completely, and the Elephantine Doctrine will be dead forever, never to be resurrected again."

Alestro shaking hands with Orrento and with all the members of the Human Committee, took leave of them and returned to the city.

At the temple they were making grand preparations, the whole fronting space or square was magnificently decorated and splendidly illuminated.

Creppo had made the people believe that the elephant was the true Superior God, and he himself the second one. But one part of the people who had their Human intelligence developed soon came to the knowledge that he and his Superior God were false gods, because every time that he ventured to expose him to the people, he immediately shut him up again in his little house in the centre of the front of the interior of the temple for fear that some members of the Human Society, who did not believe in him, might come and steal him.

The Human propagandists had finished forming the organizations of the members of the Human Society, of the Civilized portion. In all districts of the city the different organizations were formed in

good shape and were provided with the banner of *Humanity*, and with meeting halls. The same was the case in all other parts of the globe.

Onetto had become a famous captain of the fourth company of the assailing batallion.

Creppo, the day before exposing the Superior God, had informed the general commander of the fortress, that at the rising of the sun he should have him start with the whole company in grand uniform, and with their arms in perfect order, and provided with ammunition, as the military rules and regulations prescribe it; that they should direct themselves towards the temple of the Superior God in order to attend to the religious services.

It was the morning of the fifteenth of April, before the dawn of day, and at the temple everything was in readiness and everybody pertaining to the details of the services was ready.

The bell-ringer was ready with the rope in his hand ready to ring the big bell. On the right of the entrance door was standing the municipal band and on the left two drummers with big drums and their drum-sticks in their hands. On the right at some distance from the temple the fire-works artist, who had placed a certain number of bombs on a line, was standing with a cane in his right hand, at the end of which there was a lighted wick.

The doors of the temple were still closed, and inside all those interested were putting and placing everything in order, decorating the Superior God and putting on their vestments.

Orrento arose very early that morning and awoke all the members of the Human Committee and said to them: "Brothers, I am starting, and I recommend you to follow me within half an hour from now, and you shall find me on the piazza or square of the temple. You must not forget that as soon as you enter the city, you must commence to sing the song,

‘The Strength of the Human Doctrine,’ and that you must carry on high the banner of *Humanity*.”

A small number of the faithful had arisen early to enter the temple as soon as the doors should be opened.

As the dawn of day broke, the bell-ringer commenced to ring the bell, the drummers beat the drums, and the band in its turn commenced to play, finally the fire-works commenced to be displayed and all the shots were flying in all directions; at the same time the doors of the temple were opened and the faithful commenced to enter.

There were seen to enter the temple persons with very pale faces and badly dressed, and with old features, prematurely become so by the heavy work they had accomplished during their lives, and from time to time, some one somewhat better dressed entered also; these were fat and plump and could hardly walk.

Somewhat later Creppo arrived with the sacred ministers and entered the temple; the trumpets were sounding and marking or beating the steps. The fourth company of the assailing battalion was coming, commanded by Capt. Onetto, and as they arrived on the piazza in front of the temple, he gave them the command: Two by two.”

The municipal band had stopped playing, the drums had ceased beating, and the fire-works artist was no longer displaying anything. The bell alone continued ringing, calling the faithful to the divine services.

The trumpets which were being blown at the head of the fourth company of the assailing battalion were four in number, and when they arrived at the entrance door of the temple, they placed themselves on the right side and continued playing until the entire company had entered the temple, and then they entered in their turn.

As the fourth company of the assailing battalion entered the temple, all those who had gathered on the piazza in front of the temple followed them and entered also.

Creppo and all the sacred ministers were in the hall of the holy vestiary (otherwise called sacristy), and were putting on the exquisitely rich vestments, and when they were all ready they commenced to come out, singing as they were marching the hymn: The Love of the Supreme God, as follows:

“Oh! God of Love, whose power,
So great, O source of our life;
Preserves our honor; Tower
Of strength, e’er with us in strife.

“Oh! do abide forever
In this temple of Thy Love;
We’ll cease to praise Thee never,
O Supreme God from above.

“Through Thee, may we enjoy life;
Through Thee, may we be content;
May we live long without strife;
Others be ’neath labor bent.

“Oh! do abide forever
In this temple of Thy Love;
We’ll cease to praise Thee never,
O Supreme God from above.

“Thee forever, we shall love
With all our mind and whole heart.
Thee, we call the God of Love;
May work never be our part.

Oh! do abide forever
In this temple of Thy Love!
We’ll cease to praise Thee never,
O Supreme God from above.

While Creppo and the sacred ministers were singing 'The Love of the Superior God' within the temple, Orrento arrived on the piazza of the temple, and approached the accursed tree he fell on his knees. He listened for a moment in order to hear what Creppo and the sacred ministers were singing. He finally arose and looking towards the temple, he exclaimed: "Oh! traitors; in order not to have to attend for a few hours each day to the necessary labor which should fall to your share you are opposed to the Human Doctrine."

Creppo and the sacred ministers having finished singing the hymn, 'The Love of the Superior God,' withdrew to the hall of the holy vestuary.

Captain Onetto, also went there in order to receive his orders and find out whether he was to return to the fortress or no.

Orrento entered the temple and walking with a regular step directed himself toward the Superior God.

The soldiers were looking at him, but did not know who he was, and some of the faithful who knew him, thought that he had been converted to the Holy Elephantine Religion. Orrento when he had arrived at a short distance from the Superior God, walked with a slower step and went to the left of the place where the God was and stopped there, turning his face towards the entrance door, and raising his right arm with closed fist, he gave a very hard blow on the forehead of the animal, which fell dead on the floor, and shouting very loud, he said: "I have taken away from you your false God, in order to deliver the whole Human Society. The true God inhabits heaven, and no Human being till this day knows what form he has."

All of the faithful saw the Superior God fall on the ground and uttered a great shout and the soldiers rushed upon Orrento.

Captain Onetto, on hearing the shouts and the noise, came out running, and as he saw the Superior God dead, and the soldiers in possession of Orrento, some by the arms, and some by the legs, holding him a prisoner, he shouted: "Take him outside."

Creppo and the sacred ministers also came out, and seeing that the soldiers were going to ill-treat Orrento, Creppo said: "Do not pierce him here within this holy place."

Orrento looked at him in his face, and Creppo, lowering his eyes and turning towards the sacred ministers, said to them: "Go and take the ropes."

And turning towards the captain, he said to him: "And you, Captain Onetto, watch and take care that Orrento be well tied to the accursed tree."

The soldiers went out first dragging Orrento as far as the accursed tree. After them, Captain Onetto went out also and immediately unsheathed his saber.

After the Captain, Creppo and the sacred ministers came out, two of them carrying the ropes in their hands, and they all approached the soldiers.

Orrento was not making any effort for resistance whatsoever, thereby proving to them that he was a member of the Civilized Human Society.

The soldiers commenced to bind him very tight to the accursed tree.

When the soldiers were through binding him fast, Orrento did not say a word nor make a move; and Captain Onetto placed his soldiers in a square, and gave them the command of charge bayonets.

Creppo, turning towards Captain Onetto, said to him: "Captain, I recommend you not to cause Orrento to be molested in any way, until you receive my orders."

Onetto: "I am ready to obey your command, Your Holiness."

Creppo and the sacred ministers went away to the large hall in order to hold a council to determine what shall be done. As Creppo and the sacred ministers were arriving at the large hall, and as soon as they had taken their places, they commenced immediately to discuss the ways and means and all what was to be done in order to remedy and repair the loss of the false Superior God.

Creppo said: "Everything shall be remedied. I have for a long time been thinking that this would be the end of our Superior God. When Orrento shall be dead, we shall write down his doctrine and we will say that he is the true Spirit God, the second religion shall be the Orrentine, and the ignorant people shall continue to believe us."

All the sacred ministers approved the counsel given by Creppo.

No one of the members of the Civilized Human Society knew that Orrento was bound to the accursed tree, because the Human propagandists had told him that even if it were possible they should however not approach the piazza of the temple.

Creppo, turning towards the sacred ministers, said: "I am going to my private office, and I shall write the Orrentine doctrine, and I shall come back immediately."

Creppo, knowing the Human intelligence of Orrento, was very sure that the members of the Human Committee were to follow him, and would liberate him, and instead of going to his private office, he went to the west side of the palace and commenced to look from a window which looked upon Leria street.

He saw the members of the Human Committee, and heard them singing "The Strength of the Human Doctrine." They were followed by an immense crowd of people, entirely formed of members of the

Civilized Human Society, and of the sisters of the members of the Civilized Human Society.

He waited in order to see them pass by, and then he returned to the grand hall of the Council.

When Creppo entered the Hall of the Council, he rang the bell and hastily took a sheet of paper and commenced to write as follows:

“Captain Onetto: When you shall have received this order, you must wait five minutes after having read it.

“When the five minutes shall have expired, you will command your soldiers to charge and fire and thus put Orrento to death.

“I recommend you not to act yourself with your own hands, in order not to stain your honor. Respect my orders, otherwise it will go bad with you.

CREPPO.”

When Creppo was through writing, he took an envelope and folding the order he had just written, he placed it inside the envelope, closed it and sealed it and wrote on it: “Captain Onetto.”

The second servant had presented himself, and Creppo turning towards him, said: “Take this order to Captain Onetto on the piazza of the temple.”

The second servant took the order and left on a run, and having arrived before Onetto, he handed it to him.

Captain Onetto having received Creppo’s order, as soon as he had it in his hands, opened it and commenced to read it, and as he was through he hurriedly took his watch out of his pocket and looked at it attentively to enquire what time it was.

The piazza of the temple was filled with people, among whom were those who had been in the temple, and others who at every minute were arriving and increasing the number of spectators and not all of them, of course, were satisfied to see Orrento

suffer the penalty of death. There were those who, although they had not taken the Human Oath, had, however, the Human intelligence somewhat developed, and they were asking themselves and each other, saying:

"If Orrento has killed the Superior God, this means that he is superior to him."

While Captain Onetto was looking at his watch, the crowd of people and the soldiers heard the singing of the "Strength of the Human Doctrine," and they commenced to turn towards the direction whence the sounds were coming.

The Captain put his watch in his pocket, and shouted:

"Company, attention!"

"Carry arms!"

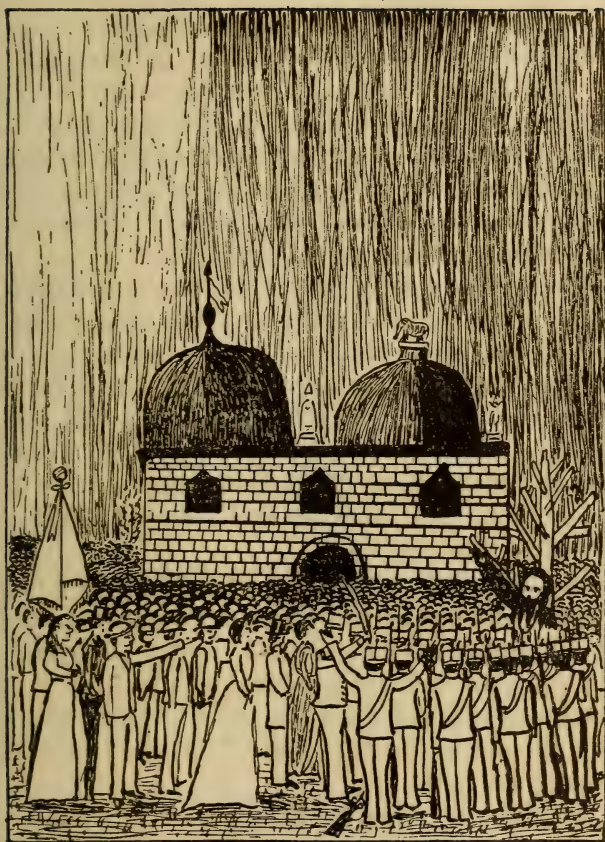
The soldiers although they carried arms, were still turning around, because the singing now seemed to be very near.

While Captain Onetto was shouting: "Attention! Fire!" one soldier cast his eyes upon the banner of *Humanity* and throwing down his gun and extending both arms, he shouted: "Stop! Stop!"

And with his left hand he pointed towards the banner of *Humanity*, the banner of peace. With his right hand, he made a sign to the other soldiers to lower their weapons.

Captain Onetto was still shouting: "Fire! Fire!" The soldiers made rest arm and the one who had thrown his gun on the ground, reproving him, said: "Captain, you do not know anything of what the rules and regulations prescribe in military affairs. When the white banner is raised it is forbidden to fire."

The crowd of people were trying to make room for the members of the Human Committee, and when the one who was carrying the banner of *Humanity*



Orrento liberated from death by the Flag of Humanity.

arrived near the soldiers, they also made room, placing themselves in an attitude of prayer.

The members of the Human Committee approached Orrento, snatched and untied the ropes that were binding him and set him at liberty.

The news had spread about throughout the city of Rosisma that the great defender of the whole society (the Human Society) was to be put to death by orders of Creppo, because Orrento had killed the god of Creppo's own farce and of that of his sacred ministers, and from all parts they were coming running, in order to see and protest in favor of the great Human phenomenon, Orrento.

Nearly the three-fourths of the population of Rosisma were present when Orrento was being liberated by the force of the Human symbol. As soon as Orrento was free, he stepped a few paces forward towards the banner of *Humanity*, and fell on his knees, thanking it, and saying: "Symbol of peace among the Humans as thou hast liberated me from death, so shalt thou liberate and free the whole Human family and Society."

He arose and commenced looking around him.

The members of the Human Committee, understood immediately that Orrento was wishing to speak, and they quickly procured a table.

Orrento climbed upon the table and had the banner of *Humanity* brought near him, then in a very loud voice he said:

HUMAN SOCIETY.

"The members who form part of this great and grand society, are of all races, and are composed of all those who are endowed with Human intelligence and intellect. All these united, we call ourselves Human!

"The word 'Human' means Civilized. 'Civilized' means that the members of the Human Society,

from the age of eighteen years, must know their moral and material Human duties.

“The Moral duties are, as is said in the first part of our Human Arcanum, which says: ‘The members of the Human Society, in order to call themselves civilized, shall never raise their hands upon their fellowman, in order to wound or do him any injury whatsoever.’

“Whether individually or organized in small or large bands, they shall never be armed with any of the infernal engines of destruction, weapons of whatever description, intended to wound or kill the members of their own Human Society.

“Such members of the Human Society, when, whether individually in organized societies, of a smaller or larger number of members, who shall be found carrying arms of destruction shall lose their title of Human beings and shall be designated as animals without any civilization; because animals, those which have been domesticated by Human intelligence, do not fight among themselves, nor do they kill each other, that is the members of the same society, which we call kinds or species.

MATERIAL HUMAN DUTIES.

“The members of our Human Society do not feed on grass like the ox and cow. Our food, and all that is necessary to any member of our Society, are produced by the Human labor; and as each member wishes to be participating in those benefits, it certainly follows that it is his duty as a Human, to attend to his share of the necessary work, in the perfected Human organization.

“Tell me, brothers and sisters of all classes, without any distinction of races, with what courage can we say that the members of the Human Society are civilized, when our entire Human Society, every single member of it, is sunk deep, from his feet to

his head, in the mire of prostitution, of massacre, of usurpation, of scandal and of ignorance?

“If the Humans were not ignorant, they would have their Human intelligence developed, and they would know the truth. That is to say, we would all believe in one only God in Heaven, who lives by divinity, and that we all, the members of the Human Society, we are one single people and our banner is the banner of *Humanity*.

“Our Human Society cannot establish the Modern Civilization among the Humans, unless they, the Humans, abandon their false doctrines.

“The Humans must recognize here below only our Human banner, which assures to every one peace and the universal brotherhood of man, and the highest Human Civilization, and above us all, believe that there is one God, Creator of the Universe.”

When Orrento had finished speaking, he came down from the table, and approached the banner of *Humanity*, and taking hold of it, he raised it on high, at the same time shouting:

“To the Human polls, if you wish that the banner of the Humans should wave over us!”

And commencing to march the members of the Human Committee set to following him and at the same time, were singing:

“This alone is our banner,
Which all Humans must revere;
For us in ev’ry manner,
’Tis the banner without peer.

“Let us cry loud! Let us shout!
All of us, with all our might:
The white banner wave about,
For our Peace, our Hope, and Light.”

In the afternoon, the Human polls were open for the members of the Civilized Human Society. The Human propagandists were increasing exceedingly in numbers, and demonstrating to the people that in order to establish the Modern Human Civilization, it was necessary that the Humans should take the Human Oath, and come to the polls and vote, as one man, the ticket of the endorsement of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization.

Creppo and the sacred ministers received the news that the banner of *Humanity* had saved Orrento from death, and that he and the members of the Human Committee were converting the people at wholesale to the Modern Human Civilization.

One of the sacred ministers arose and turning towards Creppo, said to him: "Your Holiness, as far as I am concerned, I do not understand what is meant by Modern Human Civilization, because Your Holiness has forbidden us to read any Human literature."

Creppo: "In order to know what is meant by Modern Human Civilization, it is not necessary to read any Human literature, because it is a very natural thing. Modern Human Civilization means that the whole present organization of the entire Human Society shall become completely abolished, to be re-organized on a Human scientific basis, in such a way that we shall no longer need to be afraid of being robbed, calumniated, killed, disgraced, hated, vilified, despised, ill-treated or imprisoned, and we must love one another like true members of one sole family.

"The members of the Civilized Human Society will no longer be led by the nose by their fellow-beings, they shall believe only in the God of Heaven; and every and each member must attend to some nec-

essary work in the perfected Human organization, and he shall venerate the banner of *Humanity*."

On the second of May, the National Human Office of Antolia published the bulletin of the Human elections, giving as a result that four-fifths of the population had indorsed the ticket for the establishment of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization.

On the fifth of the same month, the Universal Human Office made known to the entire Human Society, the bulletin that the Human Movement had obtained the majority in sixteen from the twenty-one nations.

Then the Universal Human Congress of all the representatives of all the National Human Offices were called together at Rosisma.

Creppo and the sacred ministers were meeting together every day in the large Council Hall, with the hopes of finding some point for a basis to establish a new religion which might be adapted to the Modern Human Civilization, but it was impossible for them to find any.

As the Universal Human Congress met in the Central Hall of the Human Council at Rosisma, they called upon all the organizations of the members of the Universal Civilized Human Society to celebrate on a grand scale the intermediary days.

During the intermediary days, the Human propagandists were working hard from the rising of the sun until noon, forming the perfected Human organization, and putting all the roles, etc., in perfect order.

The Universal Human Congress of the Pure Civilization and all the Human Counsels of Order were appointed by the Industrial organizations.

On the fifth of June, eighteen of the twenty-one nations, had sent telegrams to the Universal Human Congress. They were congratulating them upon the success of the Human Movement in accomplishing such a development in so short a time.

The three nations whose governments would not yield were Antolia, Rumpica and Gianconi. The cause of it was that they had by their false doctrines made the people believe that by the will of God they had been created Emperors, Superior Gods over the Humans.

The members composing the Universal Human Congress decided to take counsel with Orrento about the way in which they should act and they advised him of the fact.

When Orrento received the notice that the members of the Universal Human Congress wished to speak to him, he went immediately to the Hall of the Central Human Council.

The members of the Universal Human Council told him that the rulers of three nations, who had assumed two authorities, a temporal one and a spiritual one, were not yet entirely convinced and were not willing to establish the Modern Human Civilization.

Orrento thought for a few moments, and then he answered them: "In this case, the three rulers and second gods, as in the past, have been recognized by their fellowmen as superior to them; they consequently are forcing the Civilized Human Society to act with a Human siege. The city of Rosisma is divided into thirty districts, each district has not less than five thousand members of the Civilized Human Society; the fifth of them, commencing from tomorrow morning, shall go and besiege Crippo and his sacred ministers until they shall be convinced that they shall not receive from Heaven any-

thing with which to still their hunger; then they will be compelled and willing to take the Human Oath, and the same thing will happen with Emperor Nottolo and Emperor Miccan."

On the morning of the sixth of June, the members of the Civilized Human Society, from six districts, lead by the Human propagandists, and some members of the Human Committee organized.

Orrento at the head of the organization of the first district, and with the banner of *Humanity*, was the first to arrive at Creppo's palace, and he went to place himself in Aldochina street to the right of the entrance door.

After Orrento, Grandinello and the members of the Civilized Human Society of the second district arrived, and they went to place themselves in front of Orrento, to the left of the entrance door, and when all of the six organizations had arrived they were all placed, three on the right side and three on the left, surrounding the whole palace.

Creppo's servants early in the morning, had gone to make the necessary purchases of provisions for their master and all his sacred ministers, and on coming back when they saw the palace besieged by the members of the Civilized Human Society, they were very much surprised, indeed.

Tremio and Santrelli were posted at the entrance door with orders to prevent any food to be carried inside, or any other kind of goods that had been produced by labor.

The servants continued on their way up to the door; Tremio and Santrelli stopped them and inspected their parcels to see what kinds of goods they were carrying in their large baskets.

Santrelli said to them: "Leave everything here, and go and report to Creppo and to all the sacred ministers that the only religion that they can adapt

to the Modern Human Civilization shall be, that he himself and all of them, shall have to live through divine power, and that from this very day on they are completely excluded from any participation in anything produced by the labor of the Civilized Humans."

The servants left everything outside and went in.

Creppo and the sacred ministers had gone to the large Hall of Council, and were deliberating since early morning.

One of the servants entered this great hall and presenting himself before Creppo, he said to him: "Your Holiness, the members of the Civilized Human Society have besieged the palace and do not allow anything to be brought in any more of what has been produced by labor. But one of them has told me that if Your Holiness is willing to adapt a new religion to the Modern Human Civilization, the first basis you must find for it, is that you shall have to live by means of divine power."

Creppo was listening attentively to what the servant was saying, and turning towards the sacred ministers, he said to them: "Sacred ministers, you have understood what the members of the Civilized Human Society are saying? For me it is nothing new, for I know very well that the Humans only can live by the product of labor. The Human Doctrine does not exempt any one of all the members of the Human Society who is capable and able to take upon himself and do his share of the necessary labor in the perfected Human organization; it does not oblige anybody to this either, but he who does not work cannot partake of the products of the fruits of labor."

One of the sacred ministers asked him then: "Consequently, what the Human Doctrine demonstrates, means that we are compelled by our Human

duty, to go and take the Human Oath, and to go and attend to some necessary labor, is that it?"

Creppo: "Certainly. But what of my shame?"

Sacred Minister: "Concerning what?"

Creppo: "That I have been recognized as the second Superior God, and I shall now be compelled to come down so low as to be a member of the Human Society, like every other."

Sacred Minister: "That is a matter of course. For the members of the Civilized Human Society, notwithstanding that Your Holiness has not yet taken the Human Oath, do not look upon you as anything more or less than all the other Humans."

Creppo: "I shall starve rather than take the Human Oath."

The sacred ministers arose and approaching Creppo, one of them shouted: "Your Holiness, it is time to establish the Modern Human Civilization."

Two of the strongest ones, took hold of his arms and set on walking away with him and leading him outside, in order that all of them might take the Human Oath.

As soon as the servants had entered the palace, Orrento stepped forward and said: "Members of the Civilized Human Society, we are not here at this Human siege, because we wish to cause any harm to Creppo or to the sacred ministers, but rather in order to lead them to the highest Human Civilization.

"The Human Doctrine does not benefit one part of the members of the Human Society only, but the entire Human Society."

While Orrento was speaking Grandinello noticed that Creppo and the sacred ministers who were following him, were coming; he himself being led between two sacred ministers.

Orrento stopped speaking, withdrawing aside, in order to leave them free passage.



Completion of the Human Movement.

As Creppo, supported under his arms by the two sacred ministers, arrived outside, on seeing Orrento, he felt something like a stroke of fainting; the two ministers who were supporting him were obliged to seat him down in front of the entrance door.

Orrento ran quickly to kneel down at the side of Creppo, and taking hold of his right hand he felt his pulse, and in so doing, he shouted to the members of the Civilized Human Society: "Quick, quick, get the physician of the members of the Civilized Human Society."

And then he asked of the patient: "Brother, what do you feel?"

Creppo opened his eyes and said in a very low voice: "It is better to die than to have to suffer this terrible shame."

Orrento: "There is no shame at all for any one; you have done your duty."

Creppo closed his eyes and did not answer anything.

The doctor of the members of the Civilized Human Society, accompanied by the Duke Galanfroni arrived and went hurriedly near Ceppo, felt his pulse and looked at his face, and called him: "Brother! Brother!"

Creppo without moving his eyes and like in a fit of delirium, said: "The book! Where is the book?"

Duke Galanfroni understood that he was delirious about the book he had seen in the private office, and which Creppo had put under his left arm and pressing it very strongly to his body; and he said: "I know what he means in his delirium; he is raving about a book which certainly contains all his secret manuscripts against the Human Movement."

Doctor: "Quickly go and get it, and have also a stretcher brought here."

After a while Duke Galanfroni returned, bringing the book, and he gave it to the doctor. The

doctor felt the pulse of the patient for a second time and calling Creppo, he said: "Brother, brother!"

Creppo opened his eyes and asked: "Where is the book?"

Doctor: "The book is here. Have no doubt whatsoever, but we are here Civilized Humans around you, and we do not wish in any way to know your secrets. Tell me, brother, do you wish us to burn it, so that they may remain buried forever?"

Creppo, raising his voice, said: "No, no, no."

And opening his eyes and stretching out his arms, he snatched the book from the doctor's hands and pressed it very closely to his heart, and returned to his first state or position, seemingly preparing himself to pass over to the great beyond of eternity:

The two servants arrived with the stretcher, and a sheet of very white linen stretched upon it. Six members of the Civilized Human Society approached and took hold of Creppo, with the greatest Human tenderness and placed him upon the stretcher, which was on the steps.

The doctor said: "Carry him quickly to his room."

The six members of the Civilized Human Society, bending down took hold of the stretcher and raised it up.

Creppo, as soon as they were lifting up the stretcher, opened his eyes, and with a quick movement, put himself in the midst of them, and said: "Pardon me, pardon me, O members of the Civilized Human Society."

Orrento approached Creppo and answered him: "The members of the Civilized Human Society do not hate any one, but we love each other as members belonging to one sole family."

Creppo jumped from the stretcher on the steps and putting the book under his left arm, and raising his right hand, shouted:

"Long live the Modern Human Civilization! Whosoever claims to be Human, let him take the Human Oath!"

All the sacred ministers and the servants raised their right hands and took the Human Oath.

Orrento approached Creppo and shook hands with him; and Tremio went to fasten the Human emblem or badge on his chest.

The sacred ministers on seeing Orrento and Creppo shaking hands, shouted:

"Long live the Modern Human Civilization!"

Grandinello went to shake hands with Creppo, while Tremio was fastening the Human emblem or badge on the chest of all the sacred ministers.

Creppo standing between Orrento and Grandinello, said: "The members of our Human Society who have been interested in the Human Movement, and have educated the people to the Modern Human Civilization, deserve all praise from the present and from all future generations, for having accomplished a work for the benefit and welfare of the entire Human Society.

"I have shown myself opposed to the Human Movement, but I was compelled to be so. Because should I have risked myself to take the Human Oath at the time when the Human Movement started, I would have caused it very great harm, indeed, for a great number of the people would have imagined that my aid to the movement was nothing else but deception. My heart is Human, and during the Human propaganda, I have not taken any rest, and taken all possible pains to demonstrate to you that I also was one of those interested in establishing the Human Civilization of these Modern times."

(Taking the book he had under his left arm with his right hand and raising it on high):

“Here I consign to you the History of its foundation.”

Orrento took the book from Creppo, and all the others raising their right hand, shouted:

“Long live the Modern Human Civilization!”

The band of the members of the Civilized Human Society commenced to play the Human Hymn.

The members of the Civilized Human Society of the first district, with the one who was carrying the banner of *Humanity*, set on marching.

Orrento cried: “To the Hall of the Human Council!”

Creppo with Orrento at his right and Grandinello at his left side, followed the banner of *Humanity*.

After them came all the sacred ministers, and after these the members of the Civilized Human Society of the first district, and behind these all the other organizations according to their numerical order, and all continued shouting:

“Long live the Modern Human Civilization!”

Telegrams were speedily sent to all parts of the globe, carrying the news that Creppo with all his sacred ministers at Rosisma had taken the Human Oath, and embraced the Human Doctrine.

The Congress of the Pure Civilization met immediately and decided that the next day, at noon, all the members of the perfected Human organization should take part in the grand inauguration of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization.

The next day, in the afternoon, all the industrial organizations of the perfected Human organization commenced to meet in Scialbina street, and soon filled the adjacent streets.

Every industrial organization was provided with a banner of *Humanity* and a cartoon or sign to make known to what industry they belonged.

Creppo and the sacred ministers had assumed civilian's clothes, and a part of them had entered to make part of the perfected Human organization.

At two o'clock in the afternoon, the grand inauguration of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, started from the Hall of the Human Council.

The band was playing the Human Hymn and the crowd of people was shouting:

"Long live the Modern Human Civilization!"

A long line of Human banners was seen waving through the streets, carrying aloft the good tidings that Human Society had at last succeeded in recognizing what was the symbol which was to lead them to the highest Human Civilization.

The grand inauguration of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, universally ended amidst the shouts of joy and jubilation of the whole Human Society.

The following day the Congress of the Pure Civilization met again and decided that the first and most important work was to complete the entire destruction of all the infernal weapons and arms, and they sent notices to all the Human Counsels of Order, to increase the companies of the Valorous Humans, and that the industry of fire-arms and other weapons was to be entirely abolished.

Three days after the inauguration of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, the companies of Valorous Humans set to work destroying and rendering unserviceable all arms and weapons and engines of destruction from the largest to the very smallest, and also all the machines for the manufacture of the same.

The Human Counsels of Order commenced everywhere to establish industrial establishments, and all those members of the Human Society who had worked at the unproductive industries, went there to learn the art of producing something necessary to themselves or their fellowman.

All the newspapers became Human, and were educating the members of the Human Society into the Modern Human Civilization, and into the ways of attending to the necessary work in the perfected Human organization.

The Congress of Pure Civilization at their third meeting, decided that all the infernal books and literature which were corrupting the hearts to the level of brutes and poisoning the minds of the Humans should be burned, and all the schools were to be based upon the Human Doctrine.

The Human Counsels of Order organized examining committees or boards and all the books and other literature which they found written in an infernal spirit of corruption, were all burned.

After three months had passed since the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization had been established, the Human Society had the Modern Human Civilization organized everywhere.

The perfected Human organization in all lines of production was producing abundance for the entire Human Society.

The works of construction or remodeling were proceeding with energy, and the Modern palaces which had already been finished were the admiration of everybody.

After five years the perfected Human organization had already arrived at the greatest refinement, because every member of the Human Society, from the age of eighteen to fifty years, who was able to work, was doing his share. .

The inaugurating of the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, was repeated or celebrated every year, on the eighth of June. The members of the great perfected Human organization alone took part in it, demonstrating to all the others that it was they who were providing all the things necessary and all the necessities for the entire Human Society.

When the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization, had been established ten years, Orrento proposed to celebrate a country feast or picnic of joy and mirth on the day following the anniversary; this was of course, agreeable to all the industrial organizations of the perfected Human organization.

This rural feast was to take place on the heights of Mount Varnon.

In the same year in Rosisma a young man had succeeded in completing the invention of the Sole-scope, the most perfected instrument of observation ever imagined. The observer looking at another planet was able to see people as naturally as we see them on the stage.

On the top of Mount Varnon they were making great preparations and the Human journals were announcing everywhere the rural feast projected by Orrento.

The Solescope was to be one of the greatest attractions at this rural feast.

On the day after the anniversary of the inauguration there arrived on the heights of Mount Varnon people from all parts. Orrento and all the industrial organizations of Rosisma were there already before sunrise.

As Orrento and the industrial organizations arrived, the bands commenced to play in the vicinity of the place where the Solescope had been erected.

All the persons on the heights of Mount Varnon on hearing that Orrento had arrived, came near, because they knew that he was to speak about the progress the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization had made in ten years.

Mount Varnon was a very elevated point from which one could see at a very great distance.

Orrento approached the Solescope and pointed it towards our planet, the earth, and commenced to observe. After something like ten minutes of observation, he turned towards the assembled crowd, and cried out, saying: "Poor Human Society inhabiting the earth; they are still uncivilized; come, O members of the Civilized Human Society, and observe in what manner they are massacring and killing one another and how they are destroying all the artificial wealth."

Creppo was near Orrento and he approached the Solescope and commenced to look through it and he saw two very large armies facing each other, and composed of the flower and bloom of youth. On both sides they were enveloped in clouds of smoke. After a while, he saw that the two armies were attacking and falling upon each other, killing and wounding as many as they could until more than two-thirds of the Humans of which they were composed remained dead or wounded on the field of battle, while those who were yet able were running to re-occupy their first position and the ones as well as the others were raising the white flags. After a while he saw that from both sides, members of the Human Society on horseback were running in full gallop, and on meeting dismounted, shook hands and placed themselves in a circle. After some twenty minutes he saw them shaking hands once more, remount their horses and return whence they had come.

When on both sides they arrived at their first starting point, he saw that the white banners were lowered, and the soldiers again commencing to be enveloped in clouds of smoke, and again were beginning to march one side against the other, and when they were quite near each other, they commenced again killing and butchering with great carnage until all that tract of land was strewn with corpses, and very few of those great armies remained alive.

Turning to the assembled crowd, he shouted with all his might: "The members of the Human Society who are inhabiting the earth, are not making any use at all of their Human intelligence; instead of attending to the necessary work, they remain armed all the time with infernal weapons, killing each other, and showing that they are still on the first and very lowest step and degree in the scale of humanity, where the word 'Ignorance' is written in great letters."

When Creppo had finished speaking, Orrento said: "Members of the Civilized Human Society, let us rejoice that we have arrived at the highest degree of Human Civilization.

,"Look at Rosisma, ten years ago that city was enveloped in clouds of darkness, now that town is joyful and smiles are on all faces.

"Ten years ago there was inhuman disorder, now there is Human order.

"Ten years ago ninety-five per cent of the inhabitants were living in miserable huts and unhealthy cabins amidst wretchedness and misery, now they all inhabit marvelous and superb palaces.

"Ten years ago they were afraid of being robbed, now there are no longer any thieves.

"Ten years ago they were hating each other worse than cats and dogs, now they love each other like members of one and the same family.

“Ten years ago there were homicides, suicides and other misfortunes, owing to the existence of the diabolical, infernal engines of destruction, now all this has disappeared and does never occur again.

“Ten years ago the streets of Rosisma were crowded with disgraced, unfortunates fallen young girls and women, now every one has her own Human spouse.

“Ten years ago all those who were attending to the labors of agriculture, who were producing the greater part of our daily food were living in wretched thatched huts or cottages, now they all live in magnificent palaces.

“Ten years ago all the members of our Human Society were literally and figuratively speaking, in hell, now they are in a paradise of delights; and if the Human Society that inhabits the planet called Earth, do not embrace their own doctrine, the false doctrines shall lead them to their entire destruction.

“Tell me, dear brother, perhaps are we not members of the Human Society that inhabits the planet Earth? Now then, if your heart is Human, it is your duty to become a Human propagandist. Now that you have listened to my Human story show the Human courage of Orrento, educate the members of our Human Society in the Modern Human Civilization, because as you know that what can save our Human Society and lead it to the highest pinnacle of Human Civilization, is only the Human propaganda.”

As *Human Justice* ceased speaking, *Humanity*, who had been very attentively listening all this time, asked: “So then, there is hope of saving our Human Society and lead it to the highest degree of Human Civilization?”

Human Justice: “When my Human story shall have been made public to the members of our Human

Society, I am sure that all those who shall feel a human heart beat in their bosom shall organize Human Committees. When the Human Committees shall have been organized, the basis of the movement shall, of course, already be established; and all those who like and love to see our Human Society raised up to the highest possible degree of Human Civilization, will of their own accord join our Human propagandists and they altogether shall save our Human Society."

The Ark of Humanity commenced to move, and we entered the city of Order and Purest Civilization.

All the streets were in a straight line and very wide; the palaces were white and exceedingly large; and all well built and in the same style of architecture and of the same height.

All of the people were elegantly dressed, and everything demonstrated that the Human Society at that place had reached the very highest point of Human Civilization.

When we had reached the opposite side of the city from where we had entered, the Ark of Humanity commenced to rise on high, and *Human Justice*, taking me by the hand, said to me: "Look, brother, what a difference there is between this Human Society, which has reached the highest degree of Human Civilization and our own, which still slumbers in ignorance. Observe very closely in what way and manner the agricultural industries are organized here."

The Ark of Humanity was moving along in a regular way and I was noticing the great perfectionment and perfectability of the agricultural industry. The land was divided into sections of an equal size, and of about two miles square. Between two sections there was a movable lane or narrow

street with fruit bearing trees planted on both sides.

In the center of every section there was a very large palace of the same kind of architecture as those in the city, and painted snow-white as were those in the city of Order and Pure Civilization.

The palaces of the agricultural sections were on a straight line from east to west, and from south to north, and also from southeast to northwest, and from southwest to northeast. From each palace there started four streets which were provided with moving mechanism and commenced at each one of the four fronts of the palace and were bordered on both sides with fruit-bearing trees, and ended at the lanes which divided the several agricultural sections from one another.

Groups of members of the Civilized Human Society were seen, and one could hear them sing Human songs. They were wearing the same kind of clothes that were worn by the people dwelling in the city of Order and Pure Civilization.

The Ark of Humanity increased suddenly the velocity of its movements and in a very short time we were once more at the point whence we had started.

When the Ark of Humanity had stopped, *Human Justice* said to me: "Brother, come down and do not go to sleep until our return."

After I had alighted, it seemed to me as if I found myself in an abyss of darkness, and I could not see any one any more; only I heard the cries of *Human Justice*, who was saying: "Let us awake the Humans who inhabit the Earth, and let us make use of our Human intelligence, if we wish to succeed in establishing the highest Human Civilization. It is necessary that we should recognize and revere our banner of *Humanity*."

While *Human Justice* was thus shouting, I heard millions of voices crying very loudly and repeatedly:

“Long live the banner of *Humanity*!”

“Down with the infernal banners!”

“Long live Universal peace!”

On hearing those shouts my heart was jumping for joy, because I was thinking that the members of the Human Society who were inhabiting the Earth would in a very short time also reach and enjoy the highest degree of Human Civilization. The cries seemed to be nearing all the time, and as if they were approaching me, and when all of a sudden a ray of light seemed to me to be falling from heaven and illuminating the earth as by magic, I saw *Human Justice* holding the scales in her left hand and with her right hand she was handing over the banner of *Humanity* to the members of our Human Society, who did not cease to shout at the top of their voices:

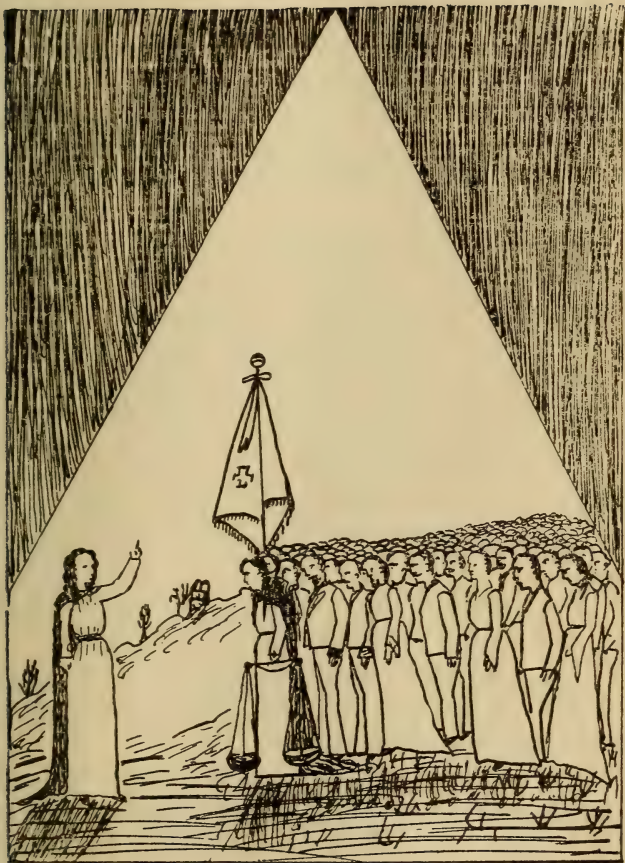
“Long live the banner of *Humanity*!”

“Down with the infernal flags!”

“Long live Universal peace!”

I tried to shout with the others and I awoke with my heart full of joy and the vision disappeared from before me.

I noticed that it was daylight, and I arose, and commenced to gather together all the different parts of this vision, to see whether I could bring back to my mind all I had seen and heard, and taking hold of my pen, I wrote on a sheet of paper, the most important and interesting points in this marvelous vision, because I thought that I might some day be useful to the whole Human Society by bringing this to light.



Second Vision of Humanity.

SECOND VISION OF HUMANITY.

Three days and three nights had passed since I had seen the first vision of *Humanity* just narrated, when, while I was sleeping suddenly *Human Justice* again presented herself to my sleeping sight. She stood near the banner of *Humanity*, and the members of our Human Society were standing silently near her.

Humanity, with her left arm raised on high towards heaven, and with the index of her left hand extended as if pointing at something, the other fingers being closed, was shouting: "Our Human Society shall be able to call itself Civilized only when we shall acknowledge one only God in Heaven, and that we are one single people under the protection of our Human banner. Our Human Society was not designed to be divided in hundreds of nations, nor either to be protected by the accursed infernal banners.

"The infernal banners do not protect the Humans, but on the contrary they destroy them..

"The infernal banners cannot give us Universal peace, but on the contrary war, which threatens the total destruction of our race.

"The infernal banners are not white like ours, but of several colors. Our Human Society has one single banner only which is called the banner of *Humanity*."

When *Humanity* had ceased speaking, I saw a very fine youth approaching and when he had arrived before *Humanity*, he genuflected.

Humanity made him a sign to rise and asked him: "What is your name?"

The youth answered: "Mario Peace."

Humanity: "Whence do you come?"

Mario: "I come from London."

Humanity: "You are also one of the brave members of our Human Society, and certainly you are bringing us some good news."

Mario: "I, with my Human Intelligence, have sought to get acquainted with and know everything that is useful to our Human Society. There took place at London the great council of all the representatives of all nations and they have reported that two-thirds of the members of the armed hosts or armies of the earth, on hearing the news that a Human banner had been raised, had thrown down their weapons not to take them up any more again.

"After three days of deliberations the council finally decided that all the rulers of the nations should dress themselves in their most splendid costumes, and with their chests decorated with medals, etc., should come here and ask of *Human Justice*, in case the Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization should come to be established with the modern armed hosts, they would like to become grand generals."

While the youth was talking with *Humanity*, *Human Justice* was listening attentively, and as she heard the last words, she stepped quickly a few paces forward and shouted: "The Universal Human Government, directed by Order and Pure Civilization has no need of armies, but of the perfected Human organization, which will provide abundance for the entire Civilized Human Society.

"Artists need to change their ideals sometimes; if in the past I have been painted and described as an assassin, I hope that in the future they will paint me in other colors and as a Human."

Humanity: "My daughter, calm yourself. It has not been your brothers' fault, but *Brutal Evil* is

the guilty one. With his diabolical arts he has taken possession of their Human intelligence."

Human Justice: "And is there no remedy against that *Brutal Evil*?"

Humanity: "There is one single remedy. We, Humans, we must make use of our Human intelligence until *Brutal Evil* shall finally be chained down in the abyss, and we must lock up there with him all the accursed infernal spirits that are on the face of the earth, and who threaten the destruction of our entire Human Society."

Human Justice, turning towards the members of our Human Society, cried out: "Step forward, you Humans, who are still in possession of your Human intelligence."

The members of our Human Society stepped some paces forward, showing thus that they were still masters and in possession of their Human intelligence.

Humanity went to take the Human banner and *Human Justice*, turning towards the members of the Human Society and addressing them, said: "*Brutal Evil* with his infernal intelligence, has planned and projected the destruction of our entire Human Society, in order that the infernal spirits might take possession of the face of the earth. If the infernal spirits are endowed with infernal intelligence, the Humans are endowed with Human intelligence, which we must use. Because by Human right, the earth is the patrimony of our whole Human Society. Go, then, and do not return until you have chained them."

The members of the Human Society departed and I saw now coming a quantity of soldiers, wearing red jackets and caps and blue trousers, and were not wearing any weapons. As they arrived before *Humanity* who was still holding the banner of *Hu-*

humanity in her hands, they knelt down, and one of them who was weeping was wiping his face with a white handkerchief.

Humanity speaking to the one who had his face bathed in tears, asked him: "Why do you weep?"

Soldier: "I have thrown away my weapons, but with the clothes I am wearing I am still looked upon as an inhuman character."

Humanity: "You are right. The Humans, in order to be recognized and acknowledged as Humans, must wear Human clothes. The fault is not to be laid at the door of the Humans, but rather to the accursed *Brutal Evil*, who succeeded in introducing the infernal doctrines among our Human Society."

While *Humanity* was talking with the soldier, I saw several persons coming, one of them marching ahead and the rest coming behind him in two rows. The first three were wearing the robes of emperors, eight were dressed as kings or rulers and four wore civilian clothes. All of them had their chests entirely decorated with medals.

When *Humanity* noticed their coming, she recognized them as being the rulers of all the nations, and she said to the soldiers: "Go and put on the Human dress, and come back here then."

The soldiers departed.

The rulers of all the nations of the earth were walking with their heads raised on high, and with slow steps, and when they arrived near *Humanity*, they stopped, placing themselves in front of her.

When the emperors and the other rulers were facing *Humanity*, they quickly carried their right hands to their crowns and the four wearing citizen's clothes, took off their hats and thus they all saluted her.

Humanity, seeing herself thus face to face with all the rulers of the earth, commenced to laugh, while *Human Justice*, who was at her right side, was wiping her tears from her eyes with a white handkerchief.

The emperor who was standing at the extreme right side was wearing the richest uniform; upon his head he wore a heavy golden crown, and he had on a long waistcoat of green broadcloth, entirely embroidered with very beautiful designs in gold; on his chest, there were so many medals and decorations stuck all over that they covered the entire cloth. From his neck there hung golden and silver strings, and from his belt above his waistcoat a large tassel of silk of three colors. He wore trousers of black cloth with golden stripes or galloons on each side. On his shoulders he wore a long mantle or cloak which hung down to his feet. After having saluted *Humanity*, he with a quick movement came to present himself before her at two paces distance and in the position of the "attention command."

Humanity looked at him from head to foot and said to him: "I do not know what courage possessed you, and your brothers here, to present yourselves before me."

The Emperor: "Do we perhaps bring you some dishonor?"

Humanity: "No, but the Humans should not in the least let themselves be seduced by an accursed infernal spirit."

Emperor: "By what infernal spirit?"

Humanity: "You know it. *Brutal Evil*, who has taken possession of your intelligence in order to destroy our Human Society entirely."

Emperor: "That is not so. We always make use of it."

Humanity: "It seems so to you. But nevertheless you have been using the infernal intelligence. For, if you had made use of your own Human intelligence, our Human Society should have long since reached the highest degree of Human Civilization.

"*Brutal Evil* has lead you so far as to cause you to forget that you are members of our Human Society. If you were masters, owners of your own Human intelligence, there should no longer be any harm planned against our Human Society. But you study nothing else than how to accomplish in the shortest time possible the destruction of the whole Human Society."

Emperor: "In what way can our Human Society be destroyed, when we have enough intelligence to manage it?"

Humanity: "You have the infernal intelligence, and all you do is all the time to plan some new damage, some harm to our Human Society. You do not only not attend to the necessary labor, but moreover you destroy that which has been produced by your brothers at the sweat of their brows."

Emperor: "That is not so. We are not planning or causing any harm to our Human Society, on the contrary, we have always raised it up to a high standard of civilization."

Human Justice on hearing such words, stepped forward and turning towards the emperor, and with a very reproving tone of voice, said: "Oh! you wretch! How dare you say that you have raised our Human Society to a high standard of civilization, when with your infamous, infernal engines of destruction, you have always striven to destroy and succeeded in doing so, all the wealth produced by your poor unfortunate brothers, destroying thus more than one-third of the fruits of their labors? You have had hearts of brass. Human mercy was entirely unknown to you, and instead of putting in practice our beau-

tiful Human Doctrine, you have made use of the infernal ones."

The emperor, while *Human Justice* was speaking, was standing with his eyes cast down on the ground.

Humanity turning towards the emperor, said to him: "We Humans, who are making use of our Human intelligence, are not telling lies, neither do we cause any harm to the members of our own Society, and we do all that is possible in order to avoid anything that might harm any one of us. Is it not so?"

The Emperor: "Yes."

Humanity: "Well, then, if it is true that you are using your Human intelligence, you must answer me to all the questions I am going to ask you."

The Emperor: "All right."

Humanity: "Well and good."

And turning towards the other rulers, she said to them: "Listen also, you."

At the same time that *Humanity* was turning towards the rulers, I saw His Holiness, the Pope, come accompanied by twelve cardinals in full regalia of very rich robes, and singing:

"Oh! God, You whom we magnify,
Whose splendor, now, we glorify!
Our prayers ever to You arise,
On earth to grant us Paradise.

"Glory! Glory to You forever,
Happy our lives, if we work never!"

His Holiness was walking ahead and the cardinals following him in two lines, carried their hands with their palms united on their chest, and continuing singing the last part of the strophe repeatedly; they went to place themselves on the right side of *Human Justice*, facing the rulers.

Humanity and *Human Justice* were looking at them very dryly, listening to all they were singing. As they ceased their chant *Humanity* said to them: "Hurrah! Hurrah! I am pleased to hear that you know that the paradise of the Humans is here on earth."

His Holiness suddenly stepped to the right side of the emperor, who was standing just in front of *Humanity*.

Humanity, turning towards the emperor, asked him: "Tell me, whose heavy crown is that which you are wearing upon your head?"

Emperor: "Mine."

Humanity: "You know that gold and diamonds do not fall from heaven; they are extracted from the bowels of the earth by Humans, who are known by the name of miners. In order that the crown be yours, you should have had to go and work at the mines yourself, in other words, be a miner, is it not so?"

Emperor: "I am of pure royal blood, and a miner cannot be an emperor."

Humanity: "So, then, you see that you have no Human intelligence. This means then that the crown is not yours?"

Emperor: "It was left me by my father."

Humanity: "Well, then, you are not of pure royal blood, but a descendant from a miner."

Emperor: "I am a descendent from a royal family."

Human Justice, pointing at the crown, shouted: "That crown is the very blood of our poor brothers."

The emperor cast his eyes down to the ground without answering a word.

Humanity again asked him, saying: "Tell me, what do all those medals mean, and all those decorations on your breast?"

Emperor: "I have won them on the field of battle in the wars I have fought."

Humanity: "Medals are not won with wars. Dead bodies only are the gains of war. Your Human intelligence has been trodden under foot by *Brutal Evil*; and as long as the Humans are not making use of their Human intelligence, we cannot establish the Modern Human Civilization. You should wear corpses on your breast not medals and decorations."

The emperor returned to his former position, and with a very melancholy step.

Humanity now looked at His Holiness, lowering and raising her head, and laughing, said: "Ah! What ideal have you introduced in our Human Society? We, Humans, are of two sexes, male and female; while you with your inhuman doctrine have made it of three sexes. With the robes you are wearing you do not seem to me to be either men or women. Tell me, what do you represent, with that mitre so elaborately enriched which you wear on your head, and with that long white robe hanging down to your feet, and with that crozier you hold in your right hand?"

His Holiness: "I represent the God of Earth, and I have the power of sending men to Paradise or to hell. He who believes in me shall be saved, otherwise he shall die condemned and shall go to hell, where he shall be tortured by the demons for all eternity."

Humanity: "So, according to what you say, you have at your disposition angels and demons?"

His Holiness: "Certainly."

Humanity: "Could you show me how the ones and the others obey your commands?"

His Holiness: "I cannot show you the angels, because on earth there are not any; but I can show you some demons."

Humanity: "And where are they?"



Triumph of Humanity.

His Holiness, turning around, and pointing with his left hand towards the rulers and the cardinals, answered: "These have incorporated and embodied in themselves the infernal spirits and they act against the Humans worse than demons would."

The emperor who had just spoken with *Humanity*, shouted towards the last speaker, and said: "And this one has embodied within himself the spirit of *Brutal Evil*, the worst and most malignant of all the infernal spirits."

Human Justice on hearing such language, fell on her knees and holding her scales before her on high and extending her hands towards heaven, exclaimed: "Oh! God of Heaven, if the Humans are truly your children, grant that all those who are still in possession of their own Human intelligence, may succeed in binding *Brutal Evil* fast and strong with chains, and that we may destroy all the accursed infernal spirits that are infesting the face of the earth."

While Human Justice was thus speaking, the rulers and His Holiness and the cardinals were not listening at all to what she was saying, but were talking to each other in a low voice, making signs with their hands among themselves.

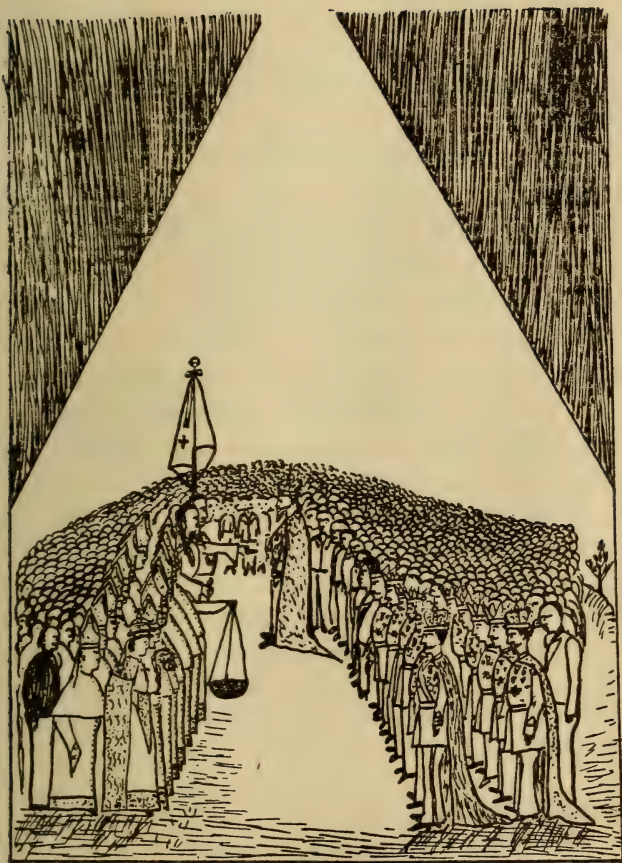
When *Human Justice* was through exclaiming, I heard cries of:

"Long live the Human Society!"

And after a while I saw a large number of persons coming. They were carrying a sign on which was printed or painted some letters which read:

"*Brutal Evil* is chained in the abyss, and locked up at the four principal gates."

One of those persons who was marching ahead of the rest was carrying in his hands four very large keys and as he was approaching, he cried, repeating the words which were printed or painted on the sign, and having arrived in front of *Humanity*, he fell on his knees and offered her the keys.



Human Universal Judgment.

As *Humanity* was taking the keys, a terrible scene took place.

His Holiness threw his crozier and his mitre on the ground, the cardinals also threw down their head-gears. The rulers threw down their crowns, and in the wink of an eye, they tore off all their medals; and raising altogether their right hand they commenced to shout:

“Long live the Human Society!”

After having shouted this several times, *Human Justice* cried at the top of her voice, saying:

“Let us shout for the Humans!”

“Down with the infernal spirits!”

“Long live our Universal peace!”

While they were shouting, I heard the sound of trumpets, and all at once all the voices were silent.

Humanity said: “Listen how the Humans are playing: ‘The Glory of the White Banner.’”

They all listened very attentively and after a moment I saw appear twelve ladies dressed in white, playing on long guilt trumpets. As they were arriving they placed themselves in front and when they were at the end of the musical piece, they were playing, they stopped and they commenced to sing on the same air of the music they had been playing, the following hymn:

“O sons of *Humanity*,
Her inheritance let's save;
Founding dear Fraternity,
Let now, the White Banner wave.

“One sole banner do we know;
Which the Humans all enfolds;
May winds of abundance blow
Under our white banner's folds.

“We have found out, in the past,
When it was rais’d, war did cease,
It has been call’d, first and last:
Holy White Banner of Peace.

“The sign of the cross it bears,
Christ, the innocent it bore;
Though we hail now, freed from care,
The White Flag forevermore!

“The flag of *Humanity*!
Emblem of Equality!
Without Partiality,
Protecting Divinity!”

As the ladies ceased singing, all present clapped hands and shouted:

“Hurrah for the banner of *Humanity*!”

For a moment I did not see anything any more, only it seemed to me that a brilliant light was passing before my eyes, and after a while I saw a very large field covered with flowers; and the more I was looking at it the more beautiful they seemed to me.

My desire was to see again the vision, and indeed, presently it occurred to my sight again just as before.

Suddenly I saw several persons, men and women, coming. They were of all sizes, large and small, and badly dressed, with pale faces, and they stopped at a short distance from *Humanity*.

As soon as *Humanity* saw them, she said to them: “Approach, my children.”

As they were near, and on seeing them bearing the marks of most squalid poverty, she raised her eyes to heaven, and exclaimed: “Oh! Creator of the Universe! My mother is so rich, while my children are suffering in misery and wretchedness.”

Then turning towards them, she said: "Come forward you all, little ones."

A large number of small children came forward, with dirty faces and torn clothes and shoes.

Humanity set to kiss them all and said to them: "My children, from your most tender infancy, you have been raised in misery and poverty. Tell me, have your parents been working?"

The children answered all together: "Always, always, but of all what they have produced, those who did not work have taken the largest part, and so the latter have accumulated riches while we were living in wretchedness."

Human Justice on hearing these words spoken by the children, stepped a few paces forward, and raising her left hand with which she was holding the scales, she shouted, saying: "Did you think that I was dead? I was only sleeping!"

And turning towards those who had put *Brutal Evil* in chains, she said to them: "Brothers, although our Human banner is waving yet, I cannot do or administer justice until *Inhuman Justice* is arrested also. Go, then, and get all the Humans who wish to see our Human Society freed from all the accursed infernal spirits, to help you, and do not return until you have arrested her and brought her into my presence."

From all parts persons were coming out volunteering to go on the search for and to arrest *Inhuman Justice*.

After a while they returned bringing with them a woman dressed in a suit of several colors. On her head she wore a chair, on her right shoulder a club of iron; in her right hand she held a sword all covered with blood, and in her left she was carrying a gun of which the barrel and bayonet were all covered with blood also. From her left side hung a big

bunch of keys, and from the right a revolver. In her teeth she was holding a rope. They led her before *Human Justice*, and as she arrived, she threw down the rope she held between her teeth.

When *Inhuman Justice* was in front of *Human Justice*, she commenced to tremble.

Human Justice asked her: "What is your name?"

She answered: "*Inhuman Justice*, daughter of *Brutal Evil*."

Human Justice: "You have an ugly name. You ought to call yourself the Queen of the True Brigands. Of course the disguise you wear, may make you pass for Human, but nevertheless you are nothing less than an accursed infernal spirit. Throw down your mask, which makes you pass as Human, while you are an accursed infernal spirit!"

Inhuman Justice (trembling, caused the mask to fall from her).

Human Justice: "Tell me, in what way have you administered justice?"

Inhuman Justice: "I have done my duty; I have always punished the innocent and I have let the guilty ones go free."

Human Justice: "Before making your deposition to me, you must first swear to tell the truth, in the name of *Humanity*."

Inhuman Justice: "I swear in the name of *Humanity*, to tell nothing but the truth."

Human Justice: "Tell me, what were you doing with the chair on your head?"

Inhuman Justice: "This was the latest invention I made in hell, with which I have killed thousands and thousands of your brothers and it is called the electric chair."

Human Justice: "You are a contemptible liar. You told me that you had punished all the innocent;

now, I know that all those that you have killed on the electric chair have been found guilty of having committed terrible crimes."

Inhuman Justice: "If they were guilty, I was not killing them."

Human Justice: "Well, tell me in what way were they innocent?"

Inhuman Justice: "If the Humans had made use of their Human intelligence, instead of punishing the Humans like themselves, they should have punished all the infernal engines of destruction, and thus there would have been an end to the commission of crime."

Human Justice: "Well, shout it in a loud voice that all those that you have killed on the electric chair were all innocent."

Inhuman Justice, shouting: "All those whom I have killed on the electric chair were all innocent!"

Human Justice: "What were you doing with that sword all covered with blood, clutched in your right hand, and with that gun in your left?"

Inhuman Justice: "With these I killed millions of your brothers in the wars."

Human Justice: "Was it necessary to have those wars?"

Inhuman Justice: "No, because after each one of them was ended the rulers of the countries who had been at war were shaking hands and feasting, eating and drinking together."

Human Justice: "Shout it in a loud voice, in order that you may be heard by all."

Inhuman Justice: "The wars were not necessary!"

Human Justice: "What were you doing with that bunch of keys hanging from your left side?"

Inhuman Justice: "With these I kept locked up in prisons and jails millions of your brothers and sisters."



**Inhuman Justice, under a human disguise,
standing in front of Human Justice.**

Human Justice: "Well, were they not guilty of robbing and killing so many others of my brothers and sisters?"

Inhuman Justice: "No, for my father and mother told me to be very careful not to punish any of the guilty ones, but only all of the innocent. This was the first thing they recommended me to do."

Human Justice: "What were you doing with that iron club which you carry on your right shoulder?"

Inhuman Justice: "With this, I have tortured your innocent brothers and sisters, which I held locked up in prisons."

Human Justice: "What were you doing with that rope you held between your teeth?"

Inhuman Justice: "I have hanged thousands of your brothers and sisters with it."

Human Justice: "Well, were not all my brothers and sisters who have been condemned to the gibbet, guilty?"

Inhuman Justice: "No, because if the Humans had made use of their Human intelligence with which they have been endowed, instead of losing their time with our infernal engines of destruction, they should have employed it in educating themselves in the Human Doctrine, and there should not have been any crimes committed among them."

Human Justice: "Do you believe that there are Humans who have embodied within themselves infernal spirits?"

Inhuman Justice: "Fifty per cent of the members of the Human Society are not acting with their own free Human spirit or mind or intellect, but with the co-operation of an infernal spirit which is embodied within them."

Human Justice: "How can the Humans who have embodied an infernal spirit within them be known?"

Inhuman Justice: "All the Humans who are causing directly or indirectly any harm to the very members of the Human Society have an infernal spirit embodied within them.

"In our infernal society not one thinks of causing any harm to the members of their own society; and we all love each other like brothers and sisters belonging all to one single family."

Human Justice: "Accursed infernal race; you love each other among yourselves, while you are such terrible enemies of the Human race. Throw down those accursed, infernal engines of destruction, and I shall have them destroyed and broken to pieces."

Inhuman Justice, all trembling, threw down the sword and the gun, and taking off all the other infernal weapons which she was carrying, she threw everything on the ground.

Human Justice, looking at those who had put *Brutal Evil* in chains, shouted: "Come, brothers, and take these infernal weapons, these accursed engines of destruction by which the destruction of our Human Society has been attempted, and render them unserviceable forever."

Four men in the dress of Human citizens, stepped forward, picked up all those infernal weapons, and carried them away in order to destroy them.

Human Justice, turning towards *Inhuman Justice*, asked her, saying: "Although you are ugly if you had presented yourself thus, I might have told you that you were an honest woman."

Inhuman Justice: "You may think so, but I feel as when one catches a bird and clips its wings; although lighter, it can no longer fly."

Human Justice: "Do you remember all what you have said?"

Inhuman Justice: "Yes."

Human Justice: "All right, you are intelligent."

Inhuman Justice: "I have no intelligence, for my father is in possession of it. If I had any intelligence of my own what has happened to me should not have occurred. My father is a tyrant, a usurper of the blood of the Humans. He thought it was my duty to destroy the whole Human Society; now instead of this, the destruction will fall on myself, and he shall not see me any more."

Human Justice: "He shall see your ashes."

Inhuman Justice (Very much frightened): "What do you mean? Are you going to burn me?"

Human Justice turning towards those who had chained *Brutal Evil*, shouted to them: "Brothers, bring me a board and a ladder, quickly."

Inhuman Justice: "What, do you intend to have me nailed to a board?"

Human Justice: "No, you will have to write your deposition."

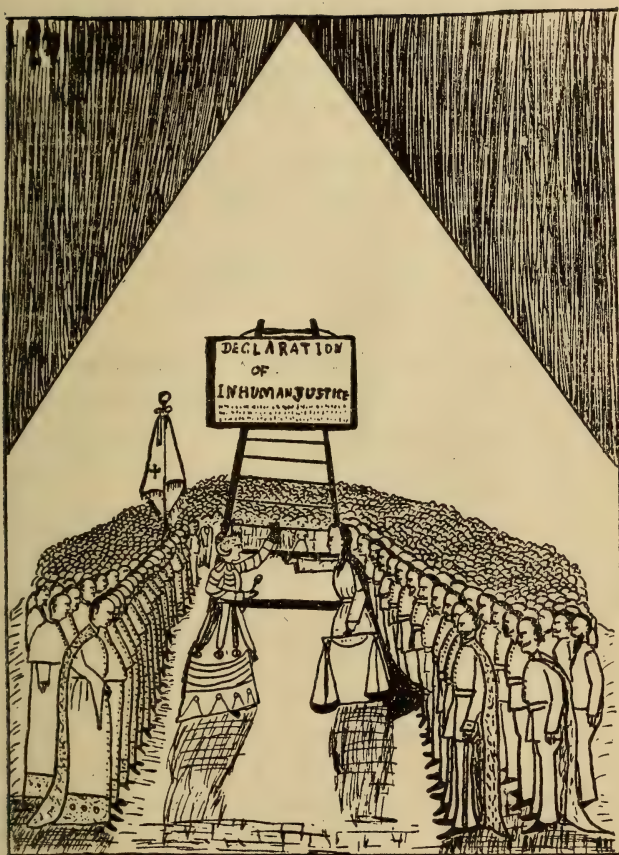
Inhuman Justice: "That's all right. I will do that."

Two strong fellows soon brought the board and the ladder.

The board was red on one side and black on the other, and *Human Justice*, as soon as the two young fellows arrived with it, said to them: "Put the ladder standing, and on the top of it tie the board with the red side out, so that it can be seen by all, and wait a while for *Inhuman Justice* is going to write her deposition."

In a few minutes the ladder with the board tied on top was ready. *Human Justice* extended her right arm towards *Inhuman Justice*, giving her with her right hand a long piece of chalk, and said to her: "Halloo! ungrateful woman, take this chalk and climb on the ladder, and write your deposition."

Inhuman Justice, looking at *Human Justice*, said "I have all that is necessary."



Inhuman Justice after having written her Declaration.

She climbed on the ladder and taking from her pockets a little recipient or vessel and a small brush, she commenced to write on the board; but the letters that she was writing were not apparent."

Human Justice, looking at the board, said: "Tell me, cruel woman, are you joking or writing?"

Inhuman Justice (coming down the ladder and turning towards *Human Justice*), said: "I have written it."

Human Justice, looking at her with anger, said: "Tell me, inhuman woman, with what kind of ink have you written?"

Inhuman Justice (shouting): "I have written with the blood of your innocent brothers and sisters whom I have killed!"

Human Justice (weeping): "Inhuman woman, you are worse than the accursed infernal spirit, the *Reptile-Serpent*, engendered by the accursed money. To write with the blood of my brothers and sisters who were innocent."

And turning toward the two young fellows, she said to them: "Brothers, turn the board with the black side out."

The two young men quickly changed the side of the board, putting the black side in front.

Human Justice, turning towards *Inhuman Justice*, said: "Go and write, tyrant, even with the blood of my innocent brothers and sisters, and that board written on by you, shall be placed in the modern schools where my little brothers and sisters shall come to be educated, and it will serve as an example of your inhuman justice, and it shall be preserved even to the very end of the world."

Inhuman Justice climbed the ladder and wrote:

"Declaration by *Inhuman Justice*:

"All those Human beings that I killed on the electric chair, were all innocent.

"The wars were not necessary among the Humans.

"All those whom I have locked up in prisons were innocent.

"All those I have killed on the gibbet were innocent."

After *Inhuman Justice* had written her deposition, she came down from the ladder and came in front of *Human Justice* and said to her: "My deposition is written."

Human Justice: "Well, prepare yourself, for the fatal moment for you has been reached."

Inhuman Justice: "But what do you intend to do with me?"

Human Justice: "I told you to prepare yourself."

And turning towards the two fellows who had brought the ladder and the board, she said: "Brothers, go and fetch a rope, and make haste."

Then shouting to those who had chained *Brutal Evil* in the abyss, she said to them: "And you, brothers, prepare quickly the fire in which we will reduce to ashes this accursed infernal spirit, who had planned and projected the destruction of our entire Human Society."

Inhuman Justice on hearing her utter those words, fell on her knees and beating her hands on the ground, she exclaimed: "You tyrants, my father and mother, you who have had me educated in the School of Tyranny, which you did with the thought and intention that I should have some day to destroy the whole Human Society. You told me that *Human Justice* was dead, while she was only sleeping; and now, behold, I have fallen in her hands. Beware, beware, O infernal spirits, you who talk so much about taking possession of the face of the earth!"

Scarcely had *Inhuman Justice* uttered these invectives against her parents, than the two robust young fellows were returning carrying a strong and long rope, and handing it over to *Human Justice*, one of them said to her: "Sister, the rope is ready, and we are prepared to follow and execute your orders."

The other men had lighted the fire and the flames were ascending in the air.

When *Human Justice* saw that everything was in readiness, she turned towards the two young men who had brought the rope, and answering them while pointing towards *Inhuman Justice*: "Bind that crocodile, *Inhuman Justice*, without touching her with your hands, for the very clothes she is wearing are maculated with the blood of our brothers and sisters."

The two young fellows took hold of the rope by both ends and shouting to *Inhuman Justice*, said to her: "Get up, crocodile, execrable woman, it is no longer the time to pray to your false gods."

Inhuman Justice arose, and on her arising, the two young men who held the rope by both ends, turned around and she found herself tightly caught in the coils of the rope and she commenced to shout, saying: "O, accursed infernal spirits, the Humans are right, in exterminating our infamous race."

The two young men having tied her securely, were dragging her now towards the fire in order to throw her in the flames.

Human Justice cried in a loud voice towards the two young men: "When you have burned her completely, place her infamous ashes in a little box without touching them with your hands."

Inhuman Justice was now very near the flames, ready to be thrown into the fire, and *Human Justice*, uttering a loud cry towards the two who were dragging the former to the fire, said to them: "Be firm,

brothers, be firm, that crocodile has the blood of our innocent brothers and sisters within a recipient about her."

And running quickly to *Inhuman Justice*, she apostrophized her again, saying: "Impious woman, where have you that blood still remaining of what you kept after having written your deposition with it?"

Inhuman Justice (looking at *Human Justice*): "Here in my pocket in a little leaden receptacle."

Humanity, on hearing these last words, ran up to her, and while weeping, said: "Accursed be the lead that has contained and carried about the most terrible harm to our Human Society."

Human Justice (turning towards those who were near her) said: "Brothers, take a small piece of board, for the lead has been accursed by our mother, and the Humans cannot any longer touch it with their hands."

Some one of them soon brought a small board.

Human Justice (turning towards *Inhuman Justice*) said to her: "Here, ungrateful one, take that receptacle and lay it on this little board."

Inhuman Justice: "My arms are tied, I cannot take it."

Human Justice: "Your hands can reach your pockets. Be quick about it, we have no time to lose."

Inhuman Justice took the little receptacle out of her pocket and laid it on the small board or tablet.

Human Justice, turning towards the man who held the tablet on which the little recipient had been laid, and which contained the remainders of the blood of the innocent Humans killed by *Inhuman Justice*, said to him: "And you, brother, go and pour that blood in a vase of marble and bring it back here to me; and take good care not to touch that accursed lead with your hands."

When *Inhuman Justice* had laid the little receptacle upon the tablet of wood, the two young fellows who had her in charge, threw her into the fire.

When *Inhuman Justice* was completely enveloped in the flames, she shouted and cried with all her might: "Oh! Infernal Spirits, if you wish to save yourselves from the anger of *Human Justice*, have some regards for the members of the entire Human Society."

While *Inhuman Justice* was being consumed by the flames, *Humanity* and *Human Justice* returned to place themselves in front of all the rules of the earth, and of His Holiness and the cardinals.

Human Justice, turning towards *Humanity*, said to her: "Mother, *Inhuman Justice* has now been exterminated never to reappear again upon the face of the earth. Now, we must arrest all the accursed infernal spirits; tell me where my brothers can go and find them."

Humanity: "Call on your brother, Pius the Ninth, for he knows the whole infernal Arcanum. Because Corrello carries the letters of the School of Tyranny, and has visited him every morning, leaving him a letter, informing him where the infernal spirits were to be found, while he has made believe to all the members of our Human Society, that it was the angel, the messenger of God, that left those letters with him."

Human Justice, turning towards Pius the Ninth, said to him: "Brother Pius the Ninth, come forward."

Pius the Ninth, walking with a very slow step, went to present himself before *Human Justice*, who asked him as follows: "Tell me, brother, how many infernal spirits are there upon the face of the earth?"

Pius the Ninth: "I remember to have read in the infernal books that when *Inhuman Justice* came

upon the face of the earth, there were ten with her."

Human Justice: "And what are their names?"

Pius the Ninth: "*Inhuman Justice, Pride, Tyranny, Cruelty, Falsehood, Misery, Immorality, Prostitution, Corrello (Quarrel)* and *Professor Cannon*."

Human Justice, turning towards all and shouting, said: "Ten accursed infernal spirits have had the audacity to harm our very large Human Society. Is it not a shame on us, who are boasting of being endowed with Human intelligence? It is time for the Humans to stop and arrest all those who do and work us harm. Let us go ahead and forward, we Humans, and let us make the right use of our Human intelligence, and soon all the infernal spirits shall be stopped in their nefarious work, and sent back to the abyss and thus our Human Society shall become free, from harm, and we shall establish the most high Human Civilization."

Some persons were coming out from all parts of the large congregation of people and following *Human Justice*, they went away shouting as they went: "

"Down with the infernal spirits!"

"Long live our Human Society!"

After a while *Human Justice*, accompanied by three other persons, came back bringing with them a man of tall stature, and a young man, and as they arrived near *Humanity*, they stopped.

Human Justice raised the Human Scale and the two fellows that had been brought along commenced to tremble from head to foot with fear and anxiety, and *Human Justice* asked of the tall one: "What is your name?"

That fellow answered: "*Professor Cannon*, director of the infernal school of *Tyranny*."

Human Justice: "Throw down your mask, you accursed infernal spirit."

Professor Cannon, still trembling all over, caused his mask to fall.

Human Justice: "What have you been doing upon the face of the earth?"

Professor Cannon: "I have come in aid to *Inhuman Justice*, in order to accomplish the soonest possible the destruction of the whole Human Society."

Human Justice: "In what way have you helped her?"

Professor Cannon: "I have introduced my infernal spirit into a Human being, who has invented the most terrible infernal weapon or engine of destruction and who gave it my name, being still called by all the Humans: 'Cannon.'"

Human Justice: "Do not doubt at all that all of you, infernal spirits, you shall all be dealt with according to your deserts."

While *Human Justice* was talking with *Professor Cannon*, *Corello* noticed Pius the Ninth and went running to him, taking his right hand which he wished to kiss.

Pius the Ninth pushed him back in such a way that he was thrown behind him, and he said to him: "Get away from me, accursed infernal spirit, I am master now of my own Human intelligence."

Human Justice noticed that the little infernal spirit had gotten away at a certain distance, and raising her Human Scale, she called him to her and said to him: "Throw down your mask, accursed spirit; the Humans do not want any longer to be directed and led by the Infernal Arcanum of Secrecy. Go and place yourself alongside of your *Professor Cannon*."

Corrello, trembling, caused his mask to fall down and went to take his place where he had been sent.

While *Corrello* was going to place himself on the left side of *Professor Cannon*, other persons arrived,

bringing with them some five other infernal spirits, under the mask of Humans, and the one who was walking ahead, was wearing exceedingly rich clothes. As the infernal spirits saw *Human Justice*, they all commenced to tremble with fear.

Human Justice, as soon as the infernal spirits had stopped near her, raised the Human Scales, and asked of the one who was wearing those very rich clothes, saying to him: "What is your name?"

That person answered: "My name is *Pride*, mother of *Inhuman Justice*."

Human Justice: "And what have you been doing upon the face of the earth?"

Pride: "I have been the model for and an example to the women and wives of the rulers, and of the members of the aristocracy."

Human Justice: "Throw down your mask, accursed infernal spirit, you have been the ruin of all the Humans of the female sex, for even when they should have spent one million on one single dress, even then, and on your accursed account, they could not be satisfied or contented yet."

Pride, trembling, made her mask fall down from her face, and went to place herself on the left side of *Corrello*.

Human Justice, turning towards another of the infernal spirits that had just been arrested and brought in, said to her: "What is your name?"

That one answered: "*Cruelty*."

Human Justice: "Tell me what have you done upon the face of the earth?"

Cruelty: "I have caused the hearts of the Humans to become cruel, in order that they might harm one another."

Human Justice: "Throw down your mask, accursed infernal spirit."

Cruelty, all trembling, caused her mask to fall down, and went to take her place at the left side of *Pride*.

Human Justice, again turning towards another one of those persons just brought in, said to her: "What is your name?"

The latter answered: "*Misery, alias Wretchedness.*"

Human Justice: "What have you been doing on the face of the earth?"

Misery: "I have comforted the great majority of the members of the Human Society by urging them to have patience in their lives of poverty and want."

Human Justice: "Throw down your mask, accursed infernal spirit. The earth is so rich that the whole Human Society can live in the greatest abundance upon it."

Misery, all trembling, had her mask fall from her face, and went to take her position at the left side of *Cruelty*.

Human Justice, once more turning towards one of the infernal spirits arrested and just brought in, asked her: "What is your name?"

And the latter answered: "*Immorality.*"

Human Justice: "Tell me what have you done upon the face of the earth?"

Immorality: "By my immoral actions, I have caused the Human Society to retrogress and go back to uncivilization or barbarism."

Human Justice: "Tear down that mask from over your face. It made you pass for a Human being, while you were nothing else than an accursed infernal spirit."

Immorality, trembling all over, made her mask fall from her face, and went to place herself on the left side of *Misery*.

Human Justice, calling to the fifth one of the persons that had been arrested and brought in, said: "What is your name?"

This one answered: "*Prostitution*."

Human Justice: "Tell me what have you been doing on the face of the earth?"

Prostitution: "I have dishonored the whole Human Society."

Human Justice: "Oh! You accursed infernal spirit, you are much worse than the cruel *Inhuman Justice*. Down with your mask, which made you pass for Human."

Prostitution, trembling like all the others, cast down her mask and went to take her place on the left side of *Immorality*.

Human Justice, looking now towards these infernal spirits, noticed that two yet were wanting, and she went to present herself before *Humanity*, and said to her: "Mother, two of the most terrible infernal spirits are still wanting, namely: *Tyranny* and *Falsehood*."

Humanity: "Take care, my daughter, *Tyranny* has always hidden and concealed herself among your brothers, the rulers of the earth; while *Falsehood* is always near your brother Pius the Ninth, and all the ministers of all religions."

Human Justice, stepping a few paces forward, and turning towards the rulers, said to them: "Brothers, remember that you are Human, and the accursed infernal spirit *Tyranny* is concealed among you, if now you are masters and owners of your Human intelligence, it is your duty as Humans to arrest her yourselves."

And turning towards Pius the Ninth, and all the ministers of all the religions that had assembled there, she said to them: "And you, arrest *Falsehood* and bring her here in my presence. For if the

Humans do not free themselves of all the accursed infernal spirits, we cannot reach to the highest Human Civilization."

The rulers broke their ranks and commenced to seek among themselves till they found a woman hidden among them and they arrested her and dragged her rather than led her before *Human Justice*.

Human Justice (on seeing the woman before her, wearing a most beautiful dress of various colors), asked her: "What is your name?"

And she answered: "*Tyranny*."

Human Justice: "Throw down your mask, you accursed infernal spirit."

Tyranny, all quaking and shaking, threw off her mask.

Human Justice: "Tell me what have you been doing on the face of the earth?"

Tyranny: "I have caused the hearts of the rulers of the earth to change from Human to infernal tyrants; and instead of attending to the welfare of the members of the Human Society, I have caused them to study how to harm them and to make them massacre themselves and one another."

Human Justice: "Away from here, accursed infernal spirit."

Tyranny went and placed herself on the left side of *Prostitution*.

While *Human Justice* was speaking with *Tyranny*, Pius the Ninth and the cardinals had arrested *Falsehood*, and had led her near the place where *Human Justice* was.

When *Human Justice* was through speaking with *Tyranny*, she raised her left hand with which she was holding the Human Scales, and turning towards the woman whom Pius the Ninth and the ministers of all the religions had arrested, she asked her: "What is your name?"

The latter answered: "*Falsehood.*"

Humanity, on hearing her utter that name, exclaimed in a very loud voice: "Oh! Traitress, you have fought against me more than any other of all the infernal spirits."

Human Justice, turning towards *Falsehood*, and shouting, said: "Down with your mask, accursed infernal spirit."

Falsehood, all trembling, had her mask fall off from her face.

Human Justice: "Tell me, diabolical spirit, what you have done on the face of the earth?"

Falsehood: "My infernal spirit has been in the mouth of the educators of Humans, and instead of educating the members of the Human Society towards the acquisition of the highest degree of civilization, they have educated them towards the accomplishment of your entire destruction."

Human Justice: "Get away from before me, you accursed lying spirit."

Falsehood went and took her place on the left side of *Tyranny*.

When *Human Justice* ceased to speak with *Falsehood*, the rulers and Pius the Ninth, with all the ministers went back to the places they first were occupying.

When the rulers and Pius the Ninth and the ministers had taken back their positions, there arrived a young man carrying in his hand a very small box of black color and presenting it to *Human Justice*, he said: "Sister, *Human Justice*, herein are the ashes of *Inhuman Justice*."

The infernal spirits on hearing that that little box contained the ashes of *Inhuman Justice*, fell on their knees, beating the ground with their hands, and shouting, they cried out: "Oh! Accursed *Reptile-Serpent*, god of the infernal spirits, you have led us to our ruin."

Human Justice, raising the Human Scales, came near the infernal spirits, and shouted: "Silence! Infernal race, you have soiled and maculated our Human banner with the very blood of the Humans!"

While *Human Justice* was thus shouting, there arrived another young man dressed in white, and carrying a little marble vase which he presented to her.

Human Justice on seeing the young man, quickly took with her right hand the marble vase which he was holding up to her, and raising it on high, and stepping a few paces forward she said: "I am Human, and although I have caused *Inhuman Justice* to be burned, I have saved the blood of our innocent brothers and sisters. So, then, let us now shout:

'Long live the Humans!'

And let us take to the abyss all the infernal spirits."

They all commenced to shout, and I, myself, shouted along with them, and in thus shouting, I awoke, and the vision disappeared from before my eyes.

END OF THE SECOND VISION.

THIRD VISION OF HUMANITY.

The clock was striking one a. m., and I fell asleep again, and once more the vision presented itself to me. I saw *Human Justice*, who was holding a little marble vase in her right hand. That vase contained the blood which was left with *Inhuman Justice*, after she had written her declaration or deposition. *Humanity* was holding her right hand above it.

On their right there was Pius the Ninth with the cardinals and on the left all the rulers of all the nations of the earth.

On the background on the left of the cardinals there was a group of laborers and workmen in their working clothes, and in front of these on the right of the rulers a group of members of the aristocratic class, who were dressed in very rich clothes.

Humanity, in an exclamatory tone, said: "Oh! Traitors to the Human race, if you had me still tied to the infamous column, you would be able yet to accomplish your infernal project of destroying the entire Human Society, before having peopled the face of the earth with its members.

"But, no! oh, no! I am here, my banner is unfurled and waves; I am the mistress of my own Human intelligence. And you, *Brutal Evil*, neither now, nor ever, shall you see among the Humans, the social destructive and destroying revolution; but I shall see among them Brotherhood, Order and the Pure Civilization established forever."

Humanity stepped a few paces backward, and at the same time there came a young man dressed in white, and he placed himself at a few paces equally distant from and between *Humanity* and *Human Justice*.

Humanity, turning towards *Human Justice*, and pointing with her right hand to the little marble vase which contained what was left of the blood of the Humans killed by *Inhuman Justice*, she said: "My daughter, have erected a Universal tomb, and there shall be consecrated the blood of all your brothers and sisters innocently killed by the accursed *Inhuman Justice*, with the help of all the infernal spirits."

Human Justice, on hearing these words, gave immediately the vase to the young man and she fell on her knees extending her hands towards the banner of *Humanity*, which *Humanity* was holding in her left hand, and she said in an exclamatory tone of voice: "Oh! Symbol of peace, you are our Human banner, you alone, are the symbol of *Humanity*, of love, and of brotherhood. On account of the impious *Brutal Evil*, other banners have been raised upon the face of the earth, and left unfurled, and waving here and there and everywhere, and leading millions of our brothers and sisters to slaughter.

"Oh! brothers you who have had your chests pierced by the accursed lead in the flower and bloom of your youth, and lost your lives for the sake of having worshipped the banner under which had been decreed your death, the banner which had compelled you to live in wretchedness and misery. That banner protected only all the accursed infernal spirits. Here is our banner, the Human banner, which as soon as it is raised, causes the cannon to stop booming and thundering, and makes the trumpets sound for peace, and our brothers to turn towards it, and thinking weepingly, of their and our other unfortunate brothers who have inundated the earth with Human blood.

"Wave, yes wave, O wave till the end of the world."



Humanity looking sorrowfully at the Human blood which impious and cruel Inhuman Justice caused to be shed upon the face of the earth.

She arose, tired after her oration to the banner of *Humanity*, and turning towards all those present, she said: "Well then, if we are Human, let us go to work and erect a Universal monument, and therein we shall preserve the blood of our brothers and sisters innocently killed by *Inhuman Justice*, the accursed daughter of the accursed *Brutal Evil*."

There came out some persons from all parts, and they commenced to work with hammers and all manner of tools, and in a very short time the Universal Tomb was erected.

The Universal Tomb seemed to me to be entirely of marble, and on top of it there was a globe, representing the earth, on which the banners of all the nations were waving at the will of the winds.

As soon as the Universal Tomb was finished, Human Justice approached to the right of it, and raising the Human Scales with her left hand, all returned to their first positions, and then she said: "I am your eldest sister, and you are my brothers and sisters. I am the one whom from the very beginning you have chosen as your protectress. You called me *Human Justice*, because you saw that I was acting without any partiality. I recommend you to remember that we are Human brothers and sisters, children of *Humanity*, and among us there should not, there must not exist any superiority.

"Behold what terrible scenes are presented before our eyes. Our hearts must break with sorrow on looking at the Universal Tomb which contains the blood of our innocent brothers. They were marching and following banners that had their origin in the deepest recesses of the abyss, and which *Brutal Evil* consigned to his cruel daughter, *Inhuman Justice*, in order to succeed in accomplishing the total destruction of our entire Human Society.

"So, then, it matters not whether you are emperors, kings, rulers, princes or counts, soldiers or

commanders, governors or presidents, capitalists or beggars, all of you, shout:

“We want the white banner!”

When *Human Justice* stopped speaking, *Humanity*, carrying the Human banner, advanced with a slow step and approached the Universal Tomb, and having reached at the right side of it, she fell on her knees and weeping, she exclaimed: “Oh! My children, on account of not having acknowledged our banner, you have killed, butchered, slaughtered and massacred one another!”

As *Humanity* had uttered this last word, there entered the ladies dressed in white carrying guilt trumpets and they commenced to play a funeral dirge.

When the ladies dressed in white ceased playing the funeral march, they went and placed themselves on the right of *Human Justice*; and *Humanity* arose and turning towards all the rulers of the earth there assembled, she said: “My sons, now that you are masters and owners of your own Human intelligence, you must acknowledge the truth. Why has the earth been maculated and soaked with Human blood? Because the accursed infernal banners have been unfurled and waving upon it. Those infernal banners cannot give to our Human Society the Universal peace they so much crave, but they announce to us our total destruction.

“So, then, away with those accursed banners and I will plant in their stead our Human banner, and Order and Pure Civilization soon shall be established, and reign supreme over us.”

All the rulers approached the Universal Tomb, and each one of them took out from the globe which represented the earth, the banner which represented their respective nations, and they went and placed themselves in a line, on the opposite side, with their

faces fronting the fire which was still burning, at the place where *Inhuman Justice* had been executed by fire; and all together raising their right hands in which they held each one of them his own banner, they threw it into the fire and in a very loud voice, they said: "Accursed infernal banners, be burned, for through you we have held our brothers and sisters in a state of slavery, while we ourselves, were even greater slaves than they, for we did not dare show ourselves outside of our dwellings without being surrounded and guarded by an armed host.

When all the rulers of the earth had thrown their infernal banners into the fire, *Humanity* went to plant upon the globe which represented the earth, the Human banner, and then she went and took her position at the right side of *Human Justice*."

All the rulers of the earth turned about face, and when they saw the banner of *Humanity* planted upon the globe, they raised their right hand and shouted, all together:

"Long live the Modern Human Civilization!"

"Long live Universal peace!"

"Long live Order and Pure Civilization!"

Human Justice stepped forward, and said: "The banner of *Humanity* heralds to us Universal peace, Abundance for the entire Human Society, and the highest civilization possible to the Humans.

"But in order to arrive at and reach all this, it is necessary that the members of our Human Society should re-establish Human brotherhood on earth. Because the accursed infernal spirits, with their diabolical genius, have excited, urged and induced the members of our Human Society to be at enmity the ones with the others. Go ahead, brothers and sisters of all classes, without any distinction of race, go ahead and give each other and one another the hand of fraternity and brotherhood."



Humanity at the foot of the Universal Tomb.

Now from all parts there advanced groups who were extending their hands to each other; all did so, except the workingmen and laborers who remained still at their posts.

Human Justice shouting to the laborers said to them: "Why, my dear laboring brothers and sisters, why do you not come forward and stretch out the hand of brotherhood? You are members of the Human Society, and have the same Human rights on the earth and all its artificial wealth."

The laborers did not, or feigned not to understand what *Human Justice* was saying to them, and they remained standing where they were.

Human Justice came near *Humanity*, and said to her: "Mother, why is it that my brothers, the workers and laborers, do not wish to come forward and re-establish the brotherhood of man or Human Fraternity?"

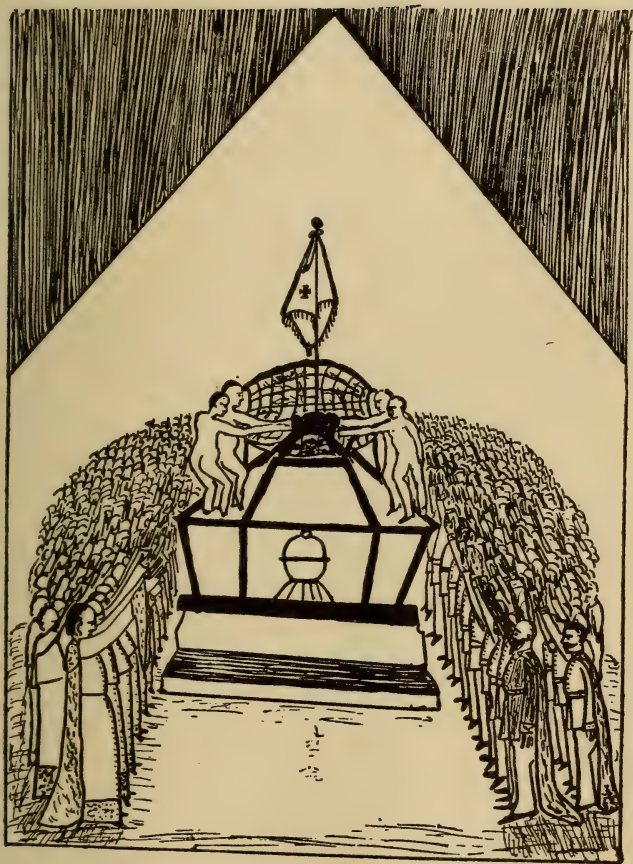
Humanity: "Ask it of your brother, Pius the Ninth. He will tell you."

Human Justice addressed herself to Pius the Ninth and asked him.

Pius the Ninth answered: "Our laboring brothers are not coming forward to re-establish the brotherhood of man because there exists among them an accursed aerial spirit, called *Ignorance*."

Human Justice, shouting to Pius the Ninth and the cardinals, said: "What, you know that there exists among our laboring brothers this accursed *Ignorance* and you have not the courage to stop to arrest her? Go, and if in the past you have not done so, do now arrest her, for it is the time to re-establish the Human brotherhood of man among the members of our Human Society."

Pius the Ninth and the cardinals went among the laboring members there assembled, and looking and seeking everywhere, they at last found a woman,



Humanity's Great Victory.

with her hair all disheveled, wearing a yellow dress and laughing like a crazy person.

Two of the cardinals took her by the arms, and one of them shouted: "Here is that accursed *Ignorance*. And they led her before *Human Justice*, and then they all returned to their places.

Human Justice noticed that *Ignorance* was not wearing any mask on her face, and raising the Human Scales she asked her: "What is your name?"

Ignorance, instead of answering, commenced to laugh more than ever.

Human Justice asked her a second time, but *Ignorance* still continued to laugh.

Human Justice shouting at the top of her voice, said: "You are the worst of all the infernal spirits, and you must disappear from the face of the earth!"

Human Justice turning towards all the rulers of the earth, said to them: "And you, dear brothers, rulers of all the nations of the earth, here it is that you must show if really you are making use of your Human intelligence. Are you capable to cause this *Ignorance* to disappear from the face of the earth, without clubbing and scourging, without killing her or burning her at the stake or on the funeral pyre?"

The rulers casting down their eyes did not answer.

Human Justice raised the Human Scales and looking at all the rulers of the earth, she said to them in a reproving tone of voice: "We civilized Humans being no longer in need of your accursed plans and projects of war, neither of your infernal science. We Humans, we must be lead by Human Science, because it alone can solve the greatest Human problem."

Seeing that the rulers were not able to cause *Ignorance* to disappear from the face of the earth, she turned towards Pius the Ninth and said to him:



**Inhuman Ignorance standing before Humanity
and Human Justice.**

“And you, dear brother, are you able to cause *Ignorance* to disappear from among the Humans?”

Pius the Ninth: “I cannot do it, because I have promised that she is to remain forever on the face of the earth among our brothers of the laboring class.”

Human Justice: “You have made a very great mistake and I tell you that without your aid and that of all your followers, or without the help of our brothers, the rulers, this accursed *Ignorance* must and shall disappear from the face of the earth, and Order and Pure Civilization only are to govern our Human Society.”

And turning towards the members of the laboring class, she said to them: “Come forward, brothers of the laboring class, and go to our Illustrious brother, Santo of the Aereal World, and tell him to bring here his steamer, Aereale.”

The laborers departed and after a moment they returned. Ahead of them Santo, of the Aereal World, was walking slowly and following him some of the workmen carrying the Aereal Steamer.

As Santo of the Aereal World was arriving near the assembly, he commenced to sing, and the others who were carrying the aereal steamer, were joining him in the chorus:

“O *Human Justice*, I am ready,
With my grand steamer, Aereal;
Ignorance is going already,
Now we'll have peace Universal.

Human Justice accompanied by the ladies dressed in white, as a response, in their turn sang the following lines:

“Thanks, Oh thanks, Human brother, we say,
To praise you more we wish we could;
When Inhuman *Ignorance* is away,
We re-establish Human brotherhood.”

The aerial steamer was ready and *Human Justice*, turning towards *Ignorance*, said to her: "Oh! accursed *Ignorance*, the members of the Human Society, who are inhabiting the earth are civilized, prepare yourself for your departure."

Ignorance, still laughing, said: "I am prepared, because on account of my ignorance, I do not own anything in the world."

Human Justice: "And therefore, you are always hidden among the poor laboring people, who have had themselves yoked like beasts by their own brothers. Get you gone from here."

Ignorance set on walking towards the aerial steamer, followed by *Human Justice*.

When *Ignorance* had arrived near the aerial steamer, with the help of those who were near it, she ascended into it.

Human Justice, turning towards Santo of the Aerial World, said to him: "Quickly, brother, set everything ready!"

Ignorance ceased laughing and turning towards *Human Justice*, she said to her, shouting: "*Human Justice*, you send me away from the face of the earth, but wait a while, I wish to speak to your brother, Pius the Ninth."

Human Justice, turning towards those who were near, said to them: "Have my brother, Pius the Ninth, come here."

And turning towards *Ignorance*, she said to her: "All of you, accursed spirits, you have had business with him."

Ignorance: "If it had not been for him, the members of the Human Society would have sent me away long ago."

At the same moment, Pius the Ninth arrived, and *Ignorance*, turning towards him, said: "Was it not you who promised me that I was to stay forever

upon the face of the earth in the midst of the laboring class?"

Pius the Ninth: "Yes, but I thought *Human Justice* was dead."

Ignorance: "Tell me where am I to go, now?"

Pius the Ninth: "Go to the planet Mars, it may be that the inhabitants of it may have need of you."

Ignorance: "I cannot go there, because the Humans who inhabit there have been civilized a long time since."

Pius the Ninth: "Well, go to some other planet, until you find some Humans who may need you."

Ignorance, shouting: "All the inhabitants of the other planets are civilized. It is upon the earth only that I have been able to find a refuge!"

Human Justice, on hearing those words, turned towards Santo of the Aerial World, and shouting, said to him: "Quickly, brother, send her away."

The ladies dressed in white then commenced to sing as follows:

"Away, away, then with you!

Accursed spirit aerial,

We wish no more to see you

Among us, *Ignorance* fatal!

"Far from earth, then go quickly,

To a very great distance, go!

Your departure make briskly,

From among us, *Ignorance*, go!

"Yes, civilized now we are,

The truth also, yes now we know;

You, we wish now from us far,

Culture pure, Order, these we trow."

As soon as they were through singing, Santo of the Aerial World, set in movement the motor power of the Aerial Steamer.



Inhuman Ignorance disappearing from the face
of the earth.

All of them, on hearing the noise of the motor power, commenced to clap their hands and to shout: "Get away from the face of the earth, you accursed *Ignorance!*"

As the Aerial Steamer commenced to ascend, *Ignorance* made signs with a white handkerchief, and shouted repeatedly:

"Farewell, civilized people; farewell, I hope that you have no longer any need of me!"

All the members of the Human Society clapped their hands very joyfully and shouted, while keeping on looking at the Aerial Steamer.

I also shouted, but while shouting, I awoke, and the vision disappeared from before my eyes.

I was thinking that that vision might be a grand solace and relief to the Human race but not being very sure of it, I cogitated over it until the morning, when I arose and penned down the most important and interesting parts and then went back to bed to rest a while.

END OF THE THIRD VISION.

FOURTH VISION OF HUMANITY.

I thought it was getting late, and I could not fall asleep again. After a while, the clock struck half past two a. m., and I was hoping to see once more the vision that had vanished from my sight. This seemed to be impossible, and at last I fell asleep again. While thus sleeping, behold the vision presented itself again to my mind's eye; but entirely different from what it had been before. All the characters or personages taking part in it were the same, but they were all dressed in an orderly costume.

When I looked around, as it were, I saw His Holiness, the cardinals, all the rulers of the earth, as also all the members of the aristocratic class, and even all those belonging to the laboring class, all dressed in the black costume of Human citizens, and all wearing the Human emblem or badge.

Humanity and *Human Justice* and all the other women were dressed in white and on their heads they wore a crown of white roses.

Humanity, turning towards *Human Justice*, said to her: "*Human Justice*, is everything ready for the re-establishment of the Human brotherhood?"

Human Justice: "Mother, you very well know that this is the greatest event that may come to pass in favor of our Human Society, and consequently it is necessary that I should prepare well everything that shall be needed to give strength and stability to this great change, to this great bloodless revolution from misery and wretchedness to abundance and wealth for all; from pride to modest behavior; from cruelty to brotherhood; from falsehood to truth; from tyranny to humility; from inhuman to human

justice; from inhuman disorder to human order; from barbarity to the purest civilization.”

And turning towards all present, she said: “Brothers, go and search everywhere until you find our most illustrious brother, Pietro Mascanti, that he may go and find in the deepest recesses of the Musical Arcanum of *Humanity*, the sweetest, most harmonious and melodious strains of music to celebrate the re-establishment of our Human brotherhood and fraternity.”

From all ranks then, there went out persons to go in search of the most illustrious Maestro, and member of the Human Society.

Everybody was expecting the arrival of Maestro Pietro Mascanti, and *Human Justice* specially was looking impatiently towards the side and in the direction from which he was expected to come.

After a few moments of very impatient and anxious expectation, *Human Justice* noticed that Maestro Pietro Mascanti was arriving, accompanied by those who had gone in search of him, and with a quick step she went to meet him and shake hands with him and wishing him a welcome, singing in the following manner:

“Illustrious brother, with a joyful heart,
We welcome you, on this great occasion;
From Music’s Arcanum, your inspired art,
Shall please chose strains for this celebra-
tion.”

Maestro Pietro Mascanti answered her, also singing:

“Sister, *Human Justice*, I am thankful;
I appreciate, indeed, the great honor,
To serve the Humans, I am most joyful,
And will select music in tones major.”

When Maestro Pietro Mascanti ceased singing, all present commenced to clap their hands and applaud loudly, and he, inclining his head, thanked them very heartily; then he went towards the Musical Arcanum.

The Musical Arcanum was placed at a short distance on the right side of *Human Justice* and consisted in a platform on which there was standing an old man, with long white hair, a smiling or rather laughing countenance, and who had his left hand leaning upon a harp, while in his right hand he carried a roll of music paper.

When Maestro Pietro Mascanti had arrived near the Musical Arcanum, he bent low in a sign of respect, and the old man asked him: "What do you wish?"

Mascanti: "I want to get the music to celebrate the re-establishment of the brotherhood among the members of our Human Society."

The Musical Arcanum of *Humanity*: "What, have you members of the Human Society been civilized? Up to this day no one has ever had the courage to call here for that music."

Pietro Mascanti: "I have been invited by *Human Justice*. She expects to re-establish Human brotherhood."

The Human Musical Arcanum took a sheet of music paper and gave it to Mascanti.

While Mascanti was talking with the Human Musical Arcanum, everybody was looking at them, and as soon as *Human Justice* saw that the Human Musical Arcanum was giving the music paper to Mascanti to re-establish Human brotherhood, she shouted: "Quickly, dear brothers, go and call our very illustrious brother, Guglielmo Marconte, and tell him to bring here, his great wireless electrical telegraphic apparatus. As soon as the re-establish-

ment of Human brotherhood shall have been accomplished, it shall be made public to all the members of our Human Society."

From all parts there went out persons to go and call that illustrious member of the Human Society.

Maestro Pietro Mascanti had placed the music-stand in the center and had laid on it the sheet of music paper containing the strains of music to be performed on the occasion and at the very moment of the re-establishment of Human brotherhood.

Human Justice noticed that the illustrious Marconte was coming. He was walking ahead and behind him walked all those who had gone to call him. They were carrying the wireless electrical telegraph apparatus. *Human Justice* went quickly to meet him, and bidding him welcome, she commenced to sing in the following manner:

"Dear brother, a thousand welcomes to-day!
We have need of your great invention.
But specially on this auspicious day,
Of Human brotherhood's convention."

Marconte answered, also singing, in the following way:

"My heart, certainly, is always Human,
And so is my famous invention,
From afar we shall get, and give to man,
Knowledge of this high civilization."

Those who were carrying the wireless electrical telegraph apparatus placed it in front in the center and went back to take their former places.

In the back ground there was a little stair, or ladder with four steps, and there was a small board or tablet on top of it on which there were some letters, which read:



Great preparations for the re-establishment of
the Human Brotherhood.

“Step-ladder of *Humanity*.”

Human Justice presented herself before *Humanity*, and said to her: “Mother, everything is prepared and ready for the re-establishment of the Human brotherhood.”

Humanity, on hearing that everything was ready, very quickly went to the step-ladder in order to ascend it, and when she had arrived at the last and highest step or degree, she knelt down, and raising her arms on high and looking towards heaven, she exclaimed, saying: “Oh! Creator of the Universe, come and look down upon the re-establishment of the brotherhood of man! We Humans have at last gained the victory over all the accursed infernal spirits, and we have succeeded in destroying all the weapons and arms and all infernal engines of destruction. We thank Thee that we are now ready to establish Thy Kingdom.”

When *Humanity* was through praying, she arose and turning around, she faced all the members of the Human Society.

When Maestro Pietro Mascanti noticed that *Humanity* had arisen, he gave the sign and they all commenced to sing.

“We’re brothers and sisters, all Human,
Children of *Humanity*, one nation;
Establishing the brotherhood of man,
With Order and Pure Civilization.”

While they all were singing, the women who had the gilt trumpets, were accompanying the song.

As this first part of the re-establishment of Human brotherhood had been sung, everything became suddenly silent and every one was holding his breath. Marconte commenced to beat upon the electrical telegraph apparatus with a little hammer, and after a

moment he took a sheet of paper and a pencil and cried out as follows:

“Rome, Italy.
Paris, France.
Berlin, Germany.
Vienna, Austria-Hungary.
Brussels, Belgium.
London, England.
Athens, Greece.
Lisbon, Portugal.
St. Petersburg, Russia.”

They announce that all over Europe they have re-established the Human brotherhood.

As soon as Marconte had finished giving the news, they all commenced to sing again as follows:

“Pure Civilization, how fair!
Daughter of Human Science;
United to Order, that pair,
Make man reach to abundance.”

Marconte was again ready, and as they ceased singing the second part, again with his little hammer he commenced to beat upon the apparatus of the wireless electric telegraph, and now for the second time shouting, he announced:

“Washington, United States.”

They announce that in Central, North and South America, in the whole Western Hemisphere, they have re-established the Human brotherhood.

They commenced again to sing all together, as follows:

“The Mother of Order is Abundance,
Truth is his sister, she, the surest,
He is the spouse, with all perseverance,
Of Civilization, the purest!”

When they ceased singing this third part of the re-establishment of the Human brotherhood, Marconte for the third time commenced to beat on the apparatus of the wireless electric telegraph, and immediately shouting once more, he announced:

“Canton, Asia.

Cairo, Africa.

Manila, Oceanica.”

They announce that in all parts and everywhere, they have re-established the Human brotherhood.

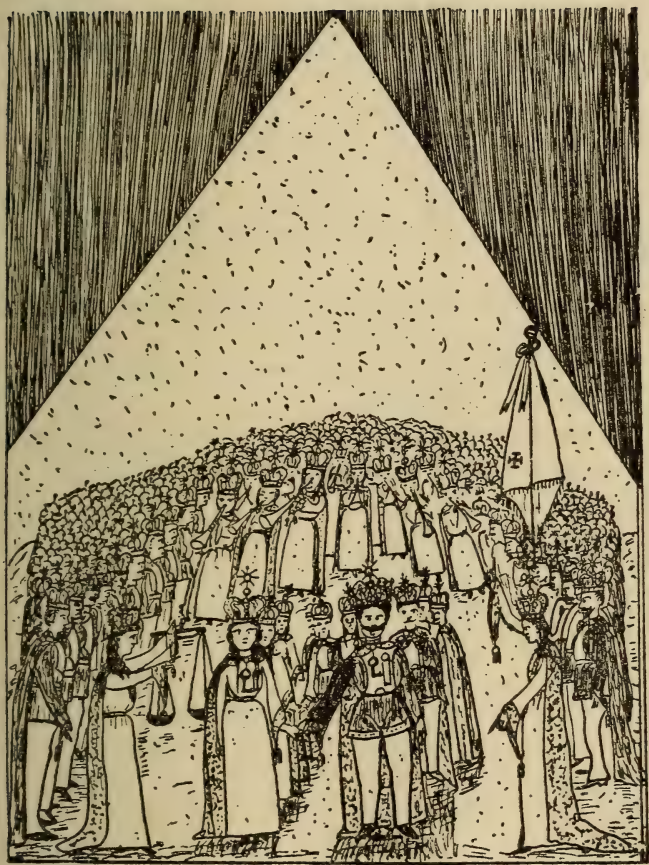
As soon as Marconte finished announcing the re-establishment of Human brotherhood, they all set to shake hands all together and after this all the women went to place themselves on the right and the men on the left.

Humanity was looking on, and when she saw that Human brotherhood had been re-established, indeed, she turned to the right side, and stretching out her right arm, she commenced to cry out: “Come, oh come, Order and Pure Civilization. My children have re-established the Human brotherhood.”

Human Justice had placed herself on the right in front of the women, and she held the Human Scale raised on high.

Humanity, after having called on Order and Pure Civilization, came down and went to place herself on the left in front of the men and facing *Human Justice*, and pointing with her right hand she shouted to her: “Consider, *Human Justice*, my daughter, that in order that the Humans may call themselves civilized, Human Society shall have to be governed by Order and the Purest Civilization.”

When *Humanity* ceased speaking, I heard the trumpets’ sound, and after a while there came two persons; one, a very beautiful youth, dressed like all the others present, and wearing also upon his



Re-establishment of the Human Brotherhood.

breast the emblem or badge of *Humanity*, he was giving his arm to a young girl of extreme beauty, also dressed like all the other women present. As they arrived they made a bow and saluted everybody.

Human Justice came near them and the trumpets having stopped playing, she asked the young man: "What is your name?"

The youth answered: "My name is *Human Order*; I am the son of *Benevolence* and *Human Abundance*."

Human Justice: "And where have you been?"

Human Order: "In the Ark of *Human Science of Truth*."

Human Justice: "Have you no brother or sister?"

Human Order: "I have only one sister, who is called *Human Truth*."

Human Justice, turning towards the young girl, asked her: "And you, what is your name?"

The young girl answered: "Purest *Human Civilization*, daughter of the great *Human Phenomenon*, and my mother is *Human Science*; my parents have educated me so as to know how to lead the *Human Society* to the most high degree of *Civilization*."

Human Justice, on hearing these words, stepped a few paces to the right and pointing with her right hand at *Order* and *Purest Civilization*, she shouted to the assembly, saying: "These alone have the right to govern forever our *Human Society*."

Humanity: "Yes, dear *Human Justice*, as God has the right to govern the whole *Divine Society* in *Heaven*, so *Order* and *Purest Civilization* have alone the right on earth to govern the entire *Human Society*."

When *Humanity* was through uttering these words, there started falling from on high roses and other flowers in profusion, over the whole assembly

and all present set to singing repeatedly the following lines:

“Hurrah for Fraternity,
Order, truth, and Unity;
Welfare, Weal, Satisfaction,
Purest Civilization.”

THE END.

APPENDIX
TO
THE FOUR VISIONS
of
HUMANITY.

HUMAN HYMN,
DEDICATED TO
THE ENTIRE HUMANITY.

“Oh great and powerful Humanity!
Why not use your Human Intelligence?
Why bear a system of Barbarity,
To all the Humans causing Harm immense.

Do see that all doctrines are infernal;
A most terrible curse, your perdition;
By them you're kept in discords eternal,
That will lead you to total destruction.

Our own true Doctrine is truly Human,
The base of highest Civilization.
Against all arms, infernal, inhuman,
She fights for *Humanity's* salvation.

'Gainst ev'ry inhuman association,
And destructive Rev'lution call'd Social;
She is against ev'ry false religion,
And wishes Human peace Universal.

Against Usurpation of any kind,
Recognizing Human Equality;
Against Falsehood and Imposture you'll find,
Her fight for TRIUMPH OF HUMANITY.

'Gainst Inhuman Justice and Tyranny,
And accursed Inhuman Wretchedness;
'Gainst Prostitution and all Villainy,
Human Society, she loves with fondness.

So, then, let us shout, Humans, at her call:
Long live our Human Doctrine on the Earth!
Down! Yes, down with false doctrines, one and all,
Long live Human Society, through new birth!

Yes, we wish forever ourselves to free,
From this infernal system we do bear;
We hate the odious arms we 'round us see,
The cruel chain, Humanity has had to wear.

All we Humans up, let us cry and shout,
Down with tyrannic, cruel, odious arms!
To the great Human Vict'ry, we're about
Freeing Humanity from all its harms.

The Human Ideal let us understand,
To Humanity it will give new birth.
Do not with Social Revolution stand,
It will sweep Humanity from the earth.

This is the prophetic declaration,
Made by Human Opinion, first and last,
That to inavoidable destruction,
All Human Society is marching fast.

In all parts, great armies are preparing,
Dynamite and bombs, hellish inventions;
Cannon, grape-shot, no expenses sparing,
To destroy the Humans in all nations.

Oh! Wretched Humanity, do be wise!
Turn back to your Human intelligence,

It will tell you, with a loud voice: Arise!
Embrace the Human Doctrine! Use some sense!

Listen to its advice, it will be right;
Forsake all false doctrines, get a new birth!
Embrace your own Human, with all your might;
Leave off all thorns and brambles of the earth.

It will tell you the only solution
Is Human Doctrine for Humanity;
To avoid the Social Revolution
Which will destroy all with insanity.

It appeals to Humans of all classes,
Without partiality of creed or race;
It counsels soundly the Human masses,
To Order and Culture leads them apace.

A new era is dawning on nations;
The joy of the Humans will be boundless.
No more wars, struggles, nor revolutions,
Earth is a harmonious Heaven of bliss.

To abolish inhuman inventions,
Unproductive labor, it tells you, cease;
Work at the useful; its propositions:
Absence of Misery, Universal peace.

It will cause Ignorance to disappear.
And Human progress shall evermore rise;
Education, learning, abundance, cheer;
A great civilized people, that is wise.

Therefore the Human Doctrine calls you all
To take the Human Oath, and none other.
And not take up arms any more at all,
Against a Human Being, your Brother."

THE HUMAN IDEAL.

By means of the Human Ideal which is based upon the natural Human Science, which signifies truth, we find that the elevated class, the upper class, living in abundance and luxury is not the one that will have to come down to establish Human Order and the highest Human Civilization; but, that, on the contrary, the class of people below them, living in misery and wretchedness, will have to ascend to the level of the first. The same Human reason demonstrates to us very clearly, that the aristocratic class, which has been developed from among the members of our Human Society, is nothing else than the model to be imitated; and the eyes of the oppressed class have been turned towards it, and this has been and is yet the principal cause of the development of the struggle of the classes.

The struggle of the classes can certainly give no other results than the self-destruction of the same.

Some members of the aristocratic or capitalistic class (whichever name you may be pleased to give it), insist on saying that the times are not yet mature for the establishment of the Modern Human Civilization (or Universal Peace); and they attribute this fact to this other one that the class below them (the laboring class) has not yet reached such a degree of education necessary for it. They consequently handle severely, and with all manner of inhuman means, against such members of the oppressed class that have their intelligence developed. By acting thus, they have given, and are giving, an incentive to the development of inhuman hatred on the part of the oppressed class towards their more fortunate brethren, which will eventually result in

the breaking out of the destructive Social Revolution.

No one can now give a precise date for the bursting out of such an inhuman hatred of classes; but the more the persecutions and wretchedness of the oppressed classes increase, the sooner will the time come when the spark shall start the conflagration.

To avoid this catastrophe the Human Ideal appeals to Human Intelligence.

HUMAN INTELLIGENCE.

In order to know the extent of the Human Intelligence, it may be demonstrated to the Humans in a thousand different manners. For example: If a member of our Human Society were given the task to cut the trunk of a very large tree, the first thing he would naturally do, would be to observe to what side that tree bends, and he would, consequently set to work on the opposite side, and when the greater part of the trunk would have been cut, that big and magnificent tree would fall down, showing itself thus conquered and thrown down by the force of Human Intelligence. In this case it is evident that the Human has made use of Human Intelligence.

But, on the other hand, if the Human, having thus to cut a tree, comes to it, and goes to work at the trunk, without first observing to what side the tree bends, he acts like an animal, not caring for consequences, and when he shall have cut the largest part of the trunk, and by thinking that he has attained his end and won the victory over the tree, this same big tree will fall on top of him and kill him instantly, and not only he himself, but the tree also, shall have reached the end of their existence.

The tree represents the present Infernal Sys-

tem, which is harming the whole Human Society, which wishes to cut it down.

Nature has endowed us with Human Intelligence; all the members of the Human race possess it to a greater or less extent. It is given us in order that we may have the supremacy and lordship over any and every other created thing to be found on this planet Earth. Then, why should we not use our Human Intelligence?

The members of the whole Human Society just go blindly ahead and forward without making any use whatsoever of their Human Intelligence, and they do not at all reach the conclusion that the struggle of classes announces nothing more nor less than the total destruction, sooner or later, of Mankind in general.

In such a destructive Human crisis the God of Heaven does not come down to save Humanity from the terrible catastrophe, for He must attend to the business of the very large administration of Divine Society. But the great Human Phenomenon, protector of Humanity is crying to us, saying:

“O, you Humans, destroy the arms, or the arms shall destroy you!”

The Human Doctrine on which the Human Movement is based, is the party opposed to the present infernal system; and if Humanity does not wish to work towards its own destruction, then Human Intelligence must be used and the Humans must fill the ranks of the party of the Human Doctrine.

HUMAN CONCLUSION.

Although in the Four Visions of Humanity and their development, there have been given all the necessary illustrations to prove that the Human Movement is not meant or intended to harm any class or race of people whatsoever, but on the contrary, is intended to save and humanly lead the whole Humanity to be governed by Order and Purest Civilization. All the members of the Human Society that have a human heart and their Human Intelligence developed, after having understood that the salvation of Humanity rests in the Human Propaganda, will seek by all possible means to commence the Human Movement.

HUMAN PROPAGANDISTS.

The Human Propagandists, in order to be able to answer well and intelligently to all the questions that may be asked them during the Human propaganda, ought to learn by memory the Human Debate, so as to answer and explain how the Human Movement does not harm any class or race of people, but raises up and elevates the entire Humanity to the very highest Human Civilization.

BUGLE SOUNDS FOR THE HUMAN PROPAGANDA.

Oh! Members of the Human Society, all,
Listen to the Human Propaganda's call;
It means for all the Humans in general
Universal Peace and Joy Universal!

The same author is putting the last touches to and is preparing to publish shortly:

“The Development of Order and the Very Highest Human Civilization.”

H 106 89 .





HECKMAN
DRIERY INC.



1989

N. MANCHESTER,
INDIANA 46962



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 027 293 298 0